

LA

2.2.2

86 LAUD (Abp.) A Relation of the Conference between William Lawd, and Mr. Fisher, the Jesuite, by command of King James of ever Blessed Memorie, folio, *old green morocco, gilt leaves*, LARGE PAPER COPY (11 in. by 7½ in.), RARE. 1639.
Contains the Dedication to King Charles. 11 leaves. Has Autograph of "Jo. Price, Oxon, 1680, pr.—8s.—6d., *second-hand*": Evidently the Royalist; see Dictionary of National Biography Volume 46, p. 331.

W. H. H. H.

Jo: Price Octon 1680

Pr — ⁵08 — ²06.
second Hand.

Price

Octon Price 1680
second Hand.

John
Novemb^r 1639
A
RELATION

Novemb^r 1639
OF *Novemb^r 1639*
The Conference

BETWEENE
WILLIAM LAWD,

Then, Lrd. Bishop of S^t. DAVIDS;

NOW,

Lord Arch-Bishop of CANTERBURY:

And Mr. Fisher the Jesuite, by the Command of
KING JAMES of ever
Blessed Memorie.

With an Answer to such Exceptions as
A. C. takes against it.

By the sayd Most Reverend Father in GOD,

WILLIAM,

Lord Arch-Bishop of CANTERBURY.



LONDON,

Printed by *Richard Badger*, Printer to the PRINCE
HIS HIGHNES.
MDCXXXIX.

J.S.

BX

5/36

138

1639

~~1639~~

JESUITICA

12342482
OCLC 2463388

5/2/2005

27280

17E

123n

Anno. Mowd 16



TO HIS MOST

Sacred Majesty,

CHARLES,

BY THE GRACE OF

God, King of Great Britaine, France and
Ireland, Defender of the Faith &c.

DREAD SOVERAIGNE:



HIS Tract will neede
Patronage, as great
as may bee had, that's
Yours. Yet, when I
first printed part of it,
I presumed not to aske
any, but thrust it out at
the end of anothers La-
bours, that it might
seem, at least, to have the same Patron, your Royall
Father of Blessed Memorie, as the other Worke, on
which this attended, had. But now I humbly beg for
it Your Majesties Patronage; And leave withall,
that I may declare to Your most Excellent Ma-
jestie the Cause why this Tract was then written:

A 2

Why

Why it shay'd so long, 'till it looked upon the light :
 Why it was not then thought fit to go abroad, but rather
 be led abroad by the former Worke : it comes
 now forth both with Alteration, and Addition :
 And why this Edition made not more haste to the
 Presse, then it had done.

The Cause why this Discourse was written, was
 this : I was, at the time of these Conferences with
 Master Fisher, Bishop of S. David. And not
 only directed, but Commanded by my Blessed
 Master King James to this Conference with
 him. Hee, when we met, began with a great Pro-
 testation of seeking the Truth only, and that for it
 selfe. And certainly, Truth, especially in Religi-
 on is so to be sought, or not to be found. He that seeks
 it with a Roman * Bias, or any * Other, will runne
 Counter, when he comes neare it, and not finde it,
 though he come within kenning of it. And therefore
 I did most heartily wish, I could have found he Je-
 suite upon that faire way he protested to goe. After
 the Conference ended, I went, whither my Duty
 called mee, to my Diocesse ; not suspecting any thing
 should be made Publike, that was both Command-
 ed, and acted in private. For VV. I. the Publi-
 sher of the Relation of the first Conference with D.
 VVhite (the late Reverend and learned Bishop of
 Elv) ^b confesses plainly, That Master Fisher
 was straightly charged upon his Allegiance,
 from his Majesty that then was, not to set out,

or

* One of these
 Biasses is an A-
 version from all
 such Truth as
 fittes not our
 Ends, and Avera-
 sus & Veritatis
 luce, ob hoc luci
 veritatis adver-
 sus (fit) &c.
 S. Aug. l. 2. cont.
 Adversariū Le-
 gis & Prophetarū.
 And 'tis an easie
 Transition, for
 a man that is
 Averse from
 Truth, to become
 Adverse to the
 Truth.

^b In his Epistle
 to the Reader.

or Publish what passed in some of these Conferences, till He gave Licence, and untill Mr. Fisher and they might meete, and agree, and Confirme under their hands, what was said on both sides. *He says farther, that M. Fisher went to D. White's house, to know what he would say about the Relation, which he had set out. So then, belike M. Fisher had set out the Relation of that Conference, before he went to D. VVhite, to speak about it. And this notwithstanding the Kings restraint upon him, upon his Allegiance. Yet, to D. VVhite 'tis sayd he went, but to what other End, then to put a Scorene upon him, I cannot see. For he went to his house to know, what he would say about that Relation of the Conference, w^{ch} he had set out before. In my absence from London, M. Fisher used me as well. For with the same Care of his Allegiance, and no more* ^b hee spread abroad Papers of this Conferēce, full enough of partialitie

• Ibid.

^b These words were in my former Epistle, And A. C. checks at them, in defence of the Jesuite, and sayes : *That the Jesuite did not at all so much as in Speech, and much lesse in Papers publish this, or either of the other two Conferences with Dr. White, till he was forc'd unto it by false reports given out to his private disgrace, and the prejaunce of the Catholike Cause. Nor then did he spread Papers abroad, but onely delivered a very few Copies to speciall friends, and this not with an intent to Calumniate the Bishop, &c. A. C. in his Preface before his Relation of this Conference. Truly, I knew of no Reports then given out to the prejudice of the Jesuite's either Person, or Cause. I was in a Corner of the Kingdome, where I heard little. But howsoever, here's a most plaine Confession by A. C. of that which he struggles to deny. He says he did not spread Papers. What then ? What ? Why he did but deliver Copies. Why but doth not he that delivers Copies (for Instance, of a Libell) spread it ? Yea, but he delivered but a very few Copies. Be it so : I doe not say, How many he spread. He confesses the Jesuite delivered some, though very few ; And he that delivers any, spreads it abroad. For what can he tell, when the Copies are once out of his power, how many may Copie them out, and spread them farther ? Yea, but he delivered them to speciall friends. Be it so too : The more speciall friends they were to him, the lesse indifferent would they be to me, perhaps my more speciall Enemies. Yea, but all this was without an intent to Calumniate me. Well. Be that so too. But if I be Calumniated thereby, his Intention will not helpe it. And whether the Copies, which he delivered, have not in them Calumny against me, I leave to the indifferent Reader of this Discourse to Iudge.*

to his Cause, and more full of Calumny against mee. Hereupon I was in a manner forced to give M. Fishers Relation of the Conference an Answer, and to publish it. Though for some Reasons, and those then approved by Authority, it was thought fit I should set it out in my Chaplain's Name, R. B. and not in my owne. To which I readily submitted.

There was a Cause also, why at the first, the Discourse upon this Conference stayed so long, before it could endure to be pressed. For the Conference was in May, 1622. And M. Fisher's Paper was scattered and made common, so common, that a Copy was brought to mee (being none of his speciall friends) before Michaelmas. And yet this Discourse was not printed till Aprill. 1624. Now that you may know how this happened, I shall say for my selfe, It was not my Idlenesse, nor my Unwillingnesse to right both my selfe, and the Cause, against the Jesuite, and the Paper, which he had spread, that occasion'd this delay. For I had then Most Honourable VVitnessees, and have some yet living, That this Discourse (such as it was, when A. C. nibled at it) was finished long before I could perswade my selfe to let it come into Publike View. And this was caused partly by my owne Backwardnesse to deale with these men, whom I have ever observed to be great Pretenders for Truth, and Vnity, but yet such as will admit neither,

neither, unlesse They and their Faction may prevaile in all; As if no Reformation had beene necessary. And partly because there were about the same time three Conferences held with Fisher. Of these this was the Third; And could not therefore conveniently come abroad into the world, till the two former were ready to leade the way, which till that time, they were not.

And this is in part the Reason also, why this Tract crept into the end of a larger Worke. For since that Worke contained in a manner the substance of all that passed in the two former Conferences: And that this Third in divers points concurred with them, and depended on them, I could not thinke it Substantive enough, to stand alone. But besides this Affinity betweene the Conferences, I was willing to have it passe as silently as it might, at the end of another Worke, and so perhaps little to be looked after, because I could not hold it worthy, nor can I yet, of that Great Duty, and Service, which I owe to my Deare Mother, the Church of England.

There is a cause also, why it lookes now abroad againe with Alteration and Addition. And 'tis fit I should give your Majesty an Account of that too. This Tract was first printed in the year 1624. And in the year 1626. another Jesuite, or the same, under the name of A. C. printed a Relation of this Conference, and therein tooke Exceptions to some Particulars;

Particulars, and endeavoured to Confute some Things deliver'd therein by me. Now being in yeares, and unwilling to dye in the Jesuites debt, I have in this Second Edition done as much for him, and somewhat more. For he did not pick up and downe, and labour to pick a hole, here, and there, where he thought he might fasten, and where it was too hard for him, let it alone. But I have gone thorough with him; And I hope, given him a full Confutation: or at least such a Bone to gnaw, as may shake his teeth, if he looke not to it. And of my Addition to this Discourse, this is the Cause; But of my Alteration of some things in it, this. A. C. his Curiosity to winnow me, made me in a more curious manner fall to sifting of my selfe, and that which had formerly past my Penne. And though (I blesse God for it) I found no cause to alter any thing that belonged either to the Substance, or Course of the Conference: Yet somewhat I did finde, which needed better, and cleerer expression; And that I have altered, well knowing I must expect Curious Observers on all hands.

Now, Why this Additionall Answer to the Relation of A. C. came no sooner forth, bath a Cause too, and I shall truly represent it. A. C. his Relation of the Conference, was set out. 1626. I knew not of it in some yeares after. For it was printed among divers other things of like nature, either by M. Fisher himselfe, or his friend A. C.
When

*When I saw it, I read it over carefully, and found
 myselfe not a little wrong'd in it, but the Church
 of England, and indeed the Cause of Religion
 much more. I was before this time by Your
 Majesties Great Grace, and undeservea favour
 made Deane of Your Majesties Chappell
 Royall, and a Counsellor of State, and hereby,
 as the Occasions of those times were, made too much
 a Stranger to my Bookes. Yet for all my Busie
 Imployments, it was still in my thoughts to give
 A. C. an Answer. But then I fell into a most
 dangerous Feaver; And though it pleased God
 beyond all hope to restore mee to health, yet long I
 was before I recover'd such strength as might ena-
 ble mee to undertake such a Service. And since that
 time, how I have beene detained, and in a manner
 forced upon other many, various, and Great Oc-
 casions, your Majesty knowes best. And how
 of late I have beene used by the Scandalous and
 Scurrilous Pennes of some bitter men (whom I
 heartily beseech God to forgive) the world knowes;
 Little Leasure, and lesse Encouragement given me
 to Answer a Iesuite, or set upon other Services,
 while I am under the Prophets affliction. Psal. 50. 19, 20
 50. betweene the Mouth that speakes wicked-
 nesse, and the tongue that sets forth deceite,
 and slander mee as thicke, as if I were not
 their owne Mothers Sonne. In the midst of
 these Libellous out-cries against me, some Divines
 S of*

* *S. Aug. Sermon.*
 63. *De Diversis*, c. 10. Hee
 speaks of
 Christ disput-
 ing in the Tem-
 ple with the
 Elders of the
Jewes. And they
 heard Christ
 the Essentiall
 Word of the
 Father with
 admiration to
 astonishment,
 yet beleevd him
 not: *S. Luk.* 2.
 47. And the
 Word then
 spake to them
 by a meanes
 they thought
 not of, namely
per Filium Dei
in pueris, by the
 Sonne of God
 himselfe under
 the Vaile of our
 humane natur

of great Note, and Worth in the Church came
 to mee, One by One, and no One knowing of the
 Others Comming (as to mee they protested) and per-
 suaded with me to Reprint this Conference, in
 my owne Name. This they thought would vindi-
 cate my Reputation, were it generally knowne to be
 mine. I Confesse I looked round about these Men,
 and their Motion; And at last, my Thoughts
 working much upon themselves, I began to perswade
 my selfe, that I had beene too long diverted from
 this necessary Worke. And that perhaps there might
 be *In voce hominum, Tuba Dei*, in the still voice
 of men, the Loud Trumpet of God, which sounds
 many wayes, sometimes to the eares, and sometimes
 to the hearts of men, and by meanes which they thinke
 not of. And as * *S. Augustine* speaks, *A Word*
of God there is, Quod nunquam tacet, sed non
semper auditur: which though it be never silent,
 yet is not alwayes heard. That it is never silent, is
 his great Mercy; and that it is not alwayes heard,
 is not the least of our Misery. Upon this Motion I
 tooke time to deliberate: And had scarce time for
 that, much lesse for the Worke. Yet at last to every
 of these men I gavethis Answer. That *M. Fisher*,
 or *A. C.* for him, had beene busie with my former
 Discourse, and that I would never reprint that, un-
 lesse I might gaine time enough to Answer that,
 which *A. C.* had charged a fresh both upon mee,
 the Cause. While my Thoughts were thus at
 worke,

worke, Your Majesty fell upon the same Thing, and was graciously pleased not to Command, but to VVish me to reprint this Conference, and in mine own Name; And this openly at the Councel-Table in Michaelmas-Terne. 1637. I did not hold it fit to deny, having in all the Course of my service obeyed your Majesties Honourable, and Just Motions, as Commands: But Craved leave to shew what little leasure I had to doe it, and what Inconveniencies might attend upon it. When this did not serve to excuse mee, I humbly submitted to that, which I hope was Gods Motion in Your Majesties. And having thus layd all that Concernes this Discourse before your Gracious and most Sacred Majesty, I most humbly present you with the Booke it selfe, which as I heartily pray You to protect, so doe I wholly submit it to the Church of England, with my Prayers for Her Prosperity, and my Wishes that I were able to doe Her better Service.

I have thus acquainted Your Majesty with all Occasions, which both formerly, and now againe have led this Tract into the light. In all which I am a faithfull Relater of all Passages, but am not very well satisfied, who is now my Adversary. M. Fisher was at the Conference. Since that, I finde A. C. as the print. And whether These be two, or but One Jesaite, I know not; since scarce One amongst them, goes under One Name. But

for my owne part (and the Error is not great, if I mistake) I thinke they are One, and that One, M. Fisher. That which induces me to thinke so, is First, the Great forwardnesse of A. C. with M. Fisher, which is so great, as may well be thought to neighbour upon Identity. Secondly, the Stile of A. C. is so like M. Fishers, that I doubt it was but one and the same hand that moov'd the penne. Thirdly, A. C. sayes expressly That the Jesuite himselfe made the Relation of the first Conference with D. VVhite: And in the Title Page of the Worke, That Relation as well as This, is said to be made by A. C. and published by VV. I. Therefore A. C. and the Jesuite are one and the same person, or els one of these places hath no Truth in it.

A. C. p. 67.

* Preface to the
Relation of
this Conference
by A. C.

Now if it be M. Fisher himselfe, under the Name of A. C. then what needs these * words: The Jesuite could be content to let passe the Chaplaines Censure, as one of his Ordinary persecutions for the Catholicke Faith, but A. C. thought it necessary for the Common Cause to defend the sincerity and Truth of his Relation, and the Truth of some of the Chiefe Heads contained in it. In which Speech give me leave to observe to your Sacred Majesty, how grievously you suffer him, and his Fellowes to be persecuted for the Catholicke Faith, when your poore Subject and Servant, cannot set out a true Copie of a Conference held

held with the Jesuite, jussu Superiorum, but by
 and by the man is persecuted. God forbid I should
 ever offer to perswade a Persecution in any kind;
 or practise it in the least. For to my remembrance,
 I have not given him, or his, so much as course
 Language. But on the other side, God forbid too,
 That your Majesty should let both Lawes and
 Discipline sleepe for feare of the Name of Perse-
 cution, and in the meane time let M. Fisher and
 his Fellowes Angle in all parts of your Domini-
 ons for your Subjects. If in your Grace and Good-
 nesse you will spare their Persons: Yet I humbly
 beseech You see to it, That they be not suffer'd to lay
 either their Weeles, or baite their Hookes, or cast
 their Nets in every streame, lest that Tentation
 grow both too generall, and too strong. I know they
 have many Devices to worke their Ends; But if
 they will needs be fishing, let them use none, but
 * Lawfull Netts. Let's have no dissolving of
 Oathes of Allegiance: No deposing, no killing
 of Kings: No blowing up of States to settle Quod
 Volumus, that which faine they would have in the
 Church: with many other Nets, as dangerous as
 these. For if their Profession of Religion were as
 good, as they pretend it is, if they cannot Compassse
 it by Good Meanes, I am sure they ought not to
 attempt it by Bad. For if they will doe evil,
 that good may come thereof, the Apostle tells
 me, Their Damnation's just, Rom. 3.

* And S. Aug.
 is very full a-
 gainst the use
 of *Mala retia*,
 unlawfull Nets.
 And saith the
 Fishermen the-
 selves have
 greatest cause
 to take heed of
 them. S. Aug.
*L. de Fide &
 Oper. c. 17.*

Rom. 3. 8.

Now as I would humbly Beseech Your Majesty to keepe a serious Watch upon these Fisher-men, which pretend S. Peter, but fish not with His Net: So would I not have You neglect another sort of Anglers in a Shallower Water. For they have some ill Nets too. And if they may spread them, when, and where they will, God knowes what may become of it. These have not so strong a Backe abroad, as the Romanists have, but that's no Argument to suffer them to encrease. They may grow to equall Strength with Number. And Factionous People at home, of what Sect, or fond Opinion soever they be, are not to be neglected. Partly, because they are so Neare. And 'tis ever a dangerous Fire, that begins in the Bed-straw. And partly because all those Domesticke Evills, which threaten a Rent in Church, or State are with far more safety prevented by VVisdome, then punished by Justice. And would men consider it right, they are far more beholding to that man, that keepes them from falling, then to him that takes them up, though it be to set the Arme or the Leg that's broken in the Fall.

In this Discourse I have no aime to displease any, nor any hope to please all. If I can helpe on to Truth in the Church, and the Peace of the Church together, I shall be glad, be it in any measure. Nor shall I spare to speake Necessary Truth, out of too much Love of Peace. Nor thrust on Vnnecessary Truth to the Breach of that Peace,
which

which once broken is not so easily soder'd againe. And if for Necessary Truths sake onely, any man will be offended, nay take, nay snatch at that offence, which is not given, I know no fence for that. 'Tis Truth, and I must tell it. 'Tis the Gospell, and I must preach it. 1 Cor. 9. And far safer it is in this Case to beare Anger from men, then a VVoe from God. And where the Foundations of Faith are shaken, be it by Superstition or Prophanenesse, he that puts not to his hand, as firmly as he Can to support them, is too wary, and hath more Care of himselfe, then of the Cause of Christ. And 'tis a VVarinnesse that brings more danger in the end, then it shunnes. For the Angell of the Lord issued out a Curse against the Inhabitants of Meroz, because they came not to helpe the Lord, to helpe the Lord against the mighty. Judg. 5. I know 'tis a Great ease to let every Thing be as it will, and every man beleewe, and doe as he list. But whether Governors in State or Church doe their duty therewhile, is easily seene, since this is an effect of no King in Israel. Judg. 17.

1 Cor. 9. 16.

Judg. 5. 23.

Judg. 17. 6.

The Church of Christ upon Earth may bee compared to a Hive of Bees, and that can bee no where so steddily placed in this world, but it will bee in some danger. And men that care neither for the Hive, nor the Bees, have yet a great minde to the Honey. And having once tasted the sweet of the Churches Maintenance swallow that for Honey

Honey, which one day will be more bitter then Gall in their Bowells. Now the King and the Priest, more then any other, are bound to looke to the Integrity of the Church in Doctrine and Manners, and that in the first place. For that's by farre the Best Honey in the Hive. But in the second place, They must be Carefull of the Churches Maintenance too, els the Bees shall make Honey for others, and have none left for their owne necessary sustenance, and then all's lost. For we see it in daily and common use, that the Honey is not taken from the Bees, but they are destroyed first. Now in this great and Busie Worke, the King and the Priest must not feare to put their hands to the Hive, though they be sure to be stung. And stung by the Bees, whose Hive and House they preserve. It was King Davids Case (God grant it be never Yours.) They came about mee (saith the Psal. 118.) *like Bees, This was hard usage enough, yet some profit, some Honey might thus be gotten in the End. And that's the Kings Case. But when it comes to the Priest, the Case is alter'd, They come about him like VVaspes, or like Hornets rather, all stinging, and no Honey there. And all this many times for no offence, nay sometimes for Service done them, would they see it. But you know who said: Behold I come shortly, and my reward is with mee, to give to every man according as his VVorkes shall bee. Revel. 22. And he himsele is so
 *exceeding

Psal. 118. 12.
 * Apum Similitudine ardentem notat vesperum; Non est enim in illis multum roboris sed mira Ex-candescencia: Calv: in Psal. 118.

Revel. 22. 12.

*exceeding great a Reward, as that the manifold stings which are in the World, howsoever they smart here, are nothing when they are pressed out with that exceeding weight of Glory, which shall be revealed: Rom. 8.

* Gen 27

Rom. 8. 17.

Now one Thing more let me be bold to Observe to Your Majesty in particular, concerning Your Great Charge, the Church of England. 'Tis in an hard Condition. Shee professes the Ancient Catholike Faith; And yet the Romanist condemnes Her of Novelty in her Doctrine. Shee practises Church Government, as it hath beene in use in all Ages, and all Places, where the Church of Christ hath taken any Rooting, both in, and ever since the Apostles Times; And yet the Separatist condemnes Her for Antichristianisme in her Discipline. The plaine truth is, She is between these two Façtions, as betweene two Millstones, and unlesse Your Majesty looke to it, to VVhose Trust She is committed, Shee'll be grownd to powder, to an irreparable both Dishonour, and losse to this Kingdome. And 'tis very Remarkeable, that while both these presse hard upon the Church of England, both of them Crye out upon Persecution, like froward Children, which scratch, and kicke, and bite, and yet crye out all the while, as if themselves were killed. Now to the Romanist I shall say this; The Errors of the Church of Rome are growne now (many of them) very Old. And when Errors are growne by Age, and

*

Continuance

*Continuance to strength, they which speake for the Truth, though it be farre Older, are ordinarily challenged for the Bringers in of New Opinions. And there is no Greater Absurdity stirring this day in Christendome, then that the Reformation of an Old Corrupted Church, will we, nill wee, must be taken for the Building of a New. And were not this so, we should never be troubled with that idle and impertinent Question of theirs: VVhere was your Church before Luther? For it was just there, where their's is now. * One, and the same Church still, no doubt of that. One in Substance, but not one in Condition of state and purity; Their part of the same Church remaining in Corruption: and Our part of the same Church under Reformation. The same Naaman, and he a Syrian still, but Leprous with them, and Cleansed with us; The same man still. And for the Seperatist, and him that layes his Grounds for Separation or Change of Discipline, though all bee sayes, or can say, be in Truth of Divinity, and among Learned Men little better then ridiculous: yet since these fond Opinions have gain'd some ground among your people; to such among them as are wilfully set to follow their blinde Guides, thorough thicke and thin, till * they fall into the Ditch together, I shall say nothing. But for so many of them, as meane well, and are onely misled by Artifice and Cunning; Concerning them, I shall say thus much only. They are Bells of passing good*

* There is no other difference betweene Vs & Rome, then betwixt a Church miserably Corrupted, and happily purged. &c. *Ios. Hall. B. of Exon.* In his Apologetically Advertisment to the Reader. p. 192. Approved by *Tbo. Morton. B.* then of *Cov. & Lich.* now of *Duresme.* in the Letters printed by the *B. of Exeter.* in his Treatise called, The Reconciler. p. 68 And *D. Fiela.* in his Appen. to the third part. c. 2. where he cites *Calv.* to the same purpose *L. 4. Inst. c. 2. §. 11.* * *S. Matth. 15. 14*

good mettle and tuneable enough of themselves, and in their owne disposition ; and a world of pity it is, that they are Rung so miserably out of Tune, as they are, by them which have gotten power in and over their Consciences. And for this there is yet Remedy enough ; but how long there will bee, I know not.

Much talking there is (Bragging, Your Majesty may call it) on oth sides. And when they are in their ruffe, the, both exceed all Moderation, and Truth too ; So farre till both Lips and Penns open for all the World like a Purse without moneey ; Nothing comes out of this, and that which is worth nothing out of them. And yet this nothing is made so great, as if the Salvation of Soules, that Great worke of the Redeemer of the World, the Sonne of God, could not be effected without it. And while the one faction cryes up the Church above the Scripture: and the other the Scripture to the neglect and Contempt of the Church, which the Scripture it selfe teaches men both to honour, and obey : They have so farre endangered the Beliefe of the One, and the Authority of the Other, as that neither bath its Due from a great part of Men. Whereas according to Christs Institution, The Scripture, where 'tis plaine, should guide the Church : And the Church, where there's Doubt or Difficulty, should expound the Scripture ; Yet so, as neither the Scripture should be forced, nor the Church so bound up, as that upon Just and farther Evidence,

Shew may not revise that which in any Case hath slip't by Her. What Successe this Great Distemper, caused by the Collision of two such Factions, may have, I know not, I cannot Prophecie. This I know, That the use which Wise men should make of other mens falles, is not to fall with them; And the use, which Pious and Religious men should make of these great Flawes in Christianity, is not to Joyne with them that make them, nor to helpe to dislocate those maine Bones in the Body, which being once put out of Ioynt, will not easily be set againe. And though I cannot Prophecie, yet I feare That Atheisme, and Irreligion gather strength, while the Truth is thus weakned by an Vnworthy way of Contending for it. And while they thus Contend, neither part Consider, that they are in a way, to induce upon themselves, and others, that Contrary Extreame, which they seeme most both to feare, and oppose.

Besides: This I have ever Observed, That many Rigid Professors have turn'd Roman Catholikes, and in that Turne have beene more lesuited then any other: And such Romanists as have chang'd from them, have for the most part quite leaped over the Meane, and beene as Rigid the other way, as Extremity it selfe. And this, if there be not both Grace, and VVisdome to governe it, is a very Naturall Motion. For a Man is apt to thinke he can never runne farre enough from that, which he once begins to hate; And doth not
Consider

*Consider therewhile, That where Religion Cor-
 rupted is the thing he hates, a Fal-
 lacy may easily
 be put upon him. For he ought to hate the Cor-
 ruption which depraves Religion, and to runne
 from it : but from no part of Religion it selfe,
 which he ought to Love, and Reverence, ought hee
 to depart. And this I have Observed farther :
 That no One thing hath made Conscientious
 men more wavering in their owne mindes, or more
 apt, and easie to be drawne aside from the sincerity
 of Religion professed in the Church of En-
 gland, then the Want of Uniforme and Decent
 Order in too many Churches of the Kingdome.
 And the Romanists have beene apt to say, The
 Houses of God could not be suffer'd to lye so Na-
 stily (as in some places they have done) were the
 True worship of God observed in them : Or did
 the People thinke that such it were. 'Tis true, the
 Inward VVorship of the Heart, is the Great
 Service of God, and no Service acceptable with-
 out it : But the Externall worship of God in his
 Church is the Great VVitnesse to the World,
 that Our heart stands right in that Service of
 God. Take this away, or bring it into Contempt,
 and what Light is there left to shine before men,
 that they may see our Devotion, and glorifie
 our Father which is in Heaven ? And to deale
 clearely with Your Majesty, These Thoughts
 are they, and no other, which have made me labour
 so much, as I have done, for Decency and an
 Orderly*

Orderly settlement of the Externall Worship of God in the Church. For of that which is Inward there can be no Witnesse among men, nor no Example for men. Now no Externall Action in the world can be Uniforme without some Ceremonies. And these in Religion, the Ancienter they bee, the better, so they may fit Time and Place. Too many Over-burden the Service of God; And too few leave it naked. And scarce any Thing hath hurt Religion more in these broken Times, then an Opinion in too many men, That because Rome had thrust some Vnnecessary, and many Superstitious Ceremonies upon the Church, therefore the Reformation must have none at all; Not considering therewhile, That Ceremonies are the Hedge that fence the Substance of Religion from all the Indignities, which Prophanenesse and Sacriledge too Commonly put upon it. And a Great Weaknesse it is, not to see the strength which Ceremonies (Things weake enough in themselves, God knowes) adde even to Religion it selfe; But a farre greater to see it, and yet to Cry Them downe, all, and without Choyce, by which their most hated Adversaries climb'd up, and could not crie up themselves, and their cause, as they doe, but by them. And Divines of all the rest might learne, and teach this VVilde me if they would, since they see all other Professions, which helpe to beare downe their Ceremonies, keepe up their owne therewhile, and that to the highest.

I have beene too bold to detain Your Majesty so long; But my Griefe to see Christendome bleeding in Dissention, and which is worse, triumphing in her owne Blood, and most angry with them, that would study her Peace, hath thus transported me. For truly it Cannot but grieve any man, that hath Bowells, to see All men seeking, but as S. Paul foretold, Phil. 2.

Phil. 2. 25.

*Their owne things, and not the things which are Jesus Christs. Sua, Their owne surely. For the Gospell of Christ hath nothing to doe with them: And to see Religion so much, so Zealously pretended, and called upon, made but the Stalking-Horse, to shoote at other Fowle, upon which their Ayme is set; In the meane time, as if all were Truth and Holinesse it selfe, no Salvation must be possible, did it lye at their Mercy, but in the Communion of the One, and in the Conventicles of the Other. As if either of these now were, as the Donatists of old reputed themselves, the only men, in whom Christ at his comming to Judgement, should finde Faith. No (saith * S. Augustine: and so say I with him) Da veniam, non Credimus.*

** S. Aug.
Epist. 48.*

Pardon us, I pray, we cannot beleeeve it. The Catholike Church of Christ is neither Rome, nor a Conventicle. Out of that there's no Salvation, I easily Confesse it. But out of Rome there is, and out of a Conventicle too; Salvation is not shut up into such a narrow Conclave. In this ensuing Discourse therefore I have endeavour'd to lay open those wider-Gates of the Catholike Church, confined to no Age, Time, or Place; Nor knowing any Bounds, but
That

S. Iud. 3.

* 1 S. Pet. 3.
15.

That Faith, which was once (*and but once for all*) deliver'd to the Saints. S. Jude 3. *And in my pursuite of this way, I have searched after, and deliver'd with a single heart, that Truth which I professe. In the publishing whereof, I have obeyed Your Majesty, discharg'd my Duty, to my power, to the Church of England, * Given account of the Hope that is in me; And so testified to the world that Faith in which I have lived, and by God's blessing and favour purpose to dye; But till Death shall most unfainely remaine*

Your Majesties most faithfull

SUBJECT, and most

Humble, and Obliged

SERVANT,

W. CANT.



A
RELATION

Of the Conference betvveene
VVILLIAM LAVVD,
Then L. Bishop of *S. Davids*; now Lord
Arch-Bishop of CANTERBURY;

AND

M. *Fisher* the *Jesuite*, by the command of
KING *JAMES*
Of ever Blessed Memorie:

With an Answer to such Exceptions as
A. C. takes against it.

F The Occasion of this Conference was.

B



He Occasion of this *Third*
Conference you should know
sufficiently. You were an
Astor in it, as well as in
two other. Whether you
have related the two for-
mer truly, appears by
D. *White* the late Reverend

S. I.

L. Bishop of *Ely* his Relation, or Exposition of them.
I was present at none, but this *Third*; of which I
here give the Church an *Account*. But of this *Third*;
whether that were the Cause which you alledge, I
cannot tell. You say,

B

It

F. It was observed, That in the second Conference all the Speech was about particular matters; little or none about a continuall, infallible, visible Church, which was the chiefe and onely Point, in which a certaine Lady required satisfaction; as having formerly settled in her minde, That it was not for her, or any other unlearned Persons, to take upon them to judge of Particulars, without depending upon the Iudgement of the true Church.

§. 2.

B. The Opinion of that Honourable Person in this, was never opened to mee. And it is very fit the people should looke to the Iudgement of the Church, before they bee too busie with Particulars. But yet

^a 1 Cor. 10. 15. neither ^a Scripture, nor any good Authority denies them some moderate use of

^b *Quis non sine ullo Magistro, aut interprete ex se facili cognoscit & c. Novat. de Trin. c. 23. Et loquitur de Myſterio Paſſionis Chriſti. Dijudicare eſt Meſurare & c. Unde & Mens dicitur a Metiendo. Tho. p. 1. q. 79. A. 9. ad 4. To what end then is a minde, and an understanding given a Man, if he may not apply it to meaſure Truth? Et διακρίναι τὸ τὸ διακρίν. i. ab eo quod conſiderat, & diſcernit. Quia diſcernit inter verum & falſum. Damasc. l. 2. Fid. Orth. c. 22.*

And A. C. himſelfe, p. 41. denies not all Iudgement to private men; but ſayes they are not ſo to relye abſolutely upon their private Iudgement, as to adventure ſalvation upon it alone, or chiefly, which no man will deny.

their owne understanding, and Iudgement, eſpecially in things familiar and evident; which even ^b ordinary Capacities may

as eaſily underſtand, as read. And therefore ſome Particulars a Chriſtian may judge without depending.

F. This Lady therefore having heard it granted in the firſt Conference, That there muſt bee a continuall visible Company ever ſince Chriſt, teaching unchanged Doctrine in all Fundamental Points; that is, Points neceſſary to ſalvation, deſired to heare it confirmed, and profe

proofe brought, which was that continuall, infallible, visible Church, in which one may, and out of which one cannot attaine salvation. And therefore having appointed a time of Meeting betweene a B. and me, and thereupon having met for the B. and me, before the B. came, the Lady and a friend of hers came first to the roome where I was, and debated before me the aforesaid Question, and not doubting of the first part, to wit, That there must be a continuall visible Church, as they had heard granted by D. White, and L. K. &c.

B. What D. White, and L. K. granted, I heard not. But I thinke, both granted a continuall, and a visible Church; neither of them an infallible, at least in your sense. And your selfe in this Relation speake distractedly: For in these few lines from the beginning hither, twice you adde *infallible* betweene *continuall* and *visible*, and twice you leave it out. But this concernes D. W. and he hath answered it.

§ 3.
NUM. 1.

Here A. C. steps in, and sayes, *The Iesuite did not speake distractedly, but most advisedly. For (saith he) where he relates, what D. White, or L. K. granted, hee leaves out the word Infallible, because they granted it not; But where he speakes of the Lady, there he addes it, because the Iesuite knew, it was an infallible Church, which she sought to rely upon. How farre the Catholike Militant Church of Christ is infallible, is no Dispute for this Place, though you shall finde it after. But sure the Iesuite did not speake most advisedly, nor A. C. neither, nor the Lady her selfe, if she said the desired to relie upon an Infallible Church. For an Infallible Church denotes a Particular Church, in that it is set in opposition to some other Particular*

NUM. 2.
A. C. p. 42.

Church, that is not infallible. Now I for my part, do not know what that *Lady* desired to rely upon. This I know, if she desired such a *Particular Church*, neither this *Iesuite*, nor any other is able to shew it her : No not *Bellarmino* himselfe, though of very great ability to make good any Truth, which he

† *Veritas vincat necesse est, five Negentem, five consuetudinem &c. S. Aug. Epist. 174. Occultari potest ad tempus veritas, vinci non potest. S. Aug. in Psal. 61.*

Lib. 4. De Rom. Pont. Cap. 4. §. 1. Romana particularis Ecclesia non potest errare in Fide.

undertakes for the Church of *Rome*.

† But no strength can uphold an Error against *Truth*, where *Truth* hath an able Defendant. Now where *Bellarmino* sets himselfe purposely to make this good, That ^athe *Particular Church* of *Rome* cannot erre in matter of Faith;

Out of which it followes, That there may be found a *Particular infallible Church*, you shall see what he is able to performe.

NUM. 3.

1. First then, after he hath Distinguished, to expresse his meaning, in what sense the *Particular Church of Rome* cannot erre in things which are *de Fide* of the Faith; he tells us, this *Firmitude* is, because the *Sea Apostolike* is fixed there. And this he saith is most true. * And for prooffe of it, he brings three Fathers to justifie it.

* *Ibid. §. 2.*

^a *Navigare audent ad Petri Ca- shedram, & Ecclesiam princi- palem &c. Nec cogitare eos esse Romanos, ad quos Persidia habere non potest accessum. Cypr. L. 1. Ep. 3.*

1. The first *S. Cyprian*, ^a whose words are, That the *Romanes* are such, as to whom *Persidia* cannot have access. Now *Persidia* can hardly stand for Error in *Faith*, or for *Misbelieve* : But it properly signifies malicious Falsehood in matter of *Trust*, and *Action* : not error in *faith*, but in *fact* against the Discipline, and Government of the *Church*. And why may it not here have this meaning in *S. Cyprian*?

NUM. 4.

^b *Bin. Concil. To. 1. p. 152. Edit. Paris. 1636. Baron. Annal. an. 253. 254. 255.*

For the Story there it is this. ^b In the Yeare 255. there was a Councell in Car-

Carthage in the cause of two Schismaticks *Felicissimus*, and *Novatian*, about restoring of *them* to the Communion of the Church, which had lapsed in time of danger from *Christianity* to *Idolatry*. *Felicissimus* would admit all even without *penance*; and *Novatian* would admit none, no not after *penance*. The *Fathers forty two* in number went, as the *Truth* led them, between both Extreames. To this Councell came *Privatus* a knowne Heretick, but was not admitted, because he was formerly *Excommunicated*, and often condemned. Hereupon he gathers his Complicies together, and chooseth one *Fortunatus* (who was formerly condemned as well as himselfe) *Bishop of Carthage*, and set him up against *S. Cyprian*. This done, *Felicissimus* and his Fellowes haste to *Rome* with *Letters Testimoniall* from their owne party, and pretend that *Twenty five Bishops* concurred with them: and their desire was to be received into the Communion of the *Romane Church*, and to have their new Bishop acknowledged. *Cornelius* then *Pope*, though their hast had now prevented *S. Cyprian's Letters*, having formerly heard from him, both of them, and their Schisme in *Africke*, would neither heare them, nor receive *their Letters*. They grew insolent and furious (the ordinary way that *Schismatics* take.) Vpon this *Cornelius* writes to *S. Cyprian*; and *S. Cyprian* in this Epistle gives *Cornelius* thanks, for refusing these *African fugitives*, declares their Schisme and wickednesse at large, and encourages him, and all *Bishops* to maintaine the *Ecclesiasticall Discipline*, and Censures against any the boldest threatnings of wicked *Schismatics*. This is the Story, and in this is the Passage here urged by *Bel-larmine*. Now I wou'd faine know why *Perfidia* (all Circumstances considered) may not stand here in

its proper sense for *cunning* and *perfidious dealing*, which these men, having practised at *Carthage*, thought now to obtrude upon the *Bishop of Rome* also, but that he was warie enough not to be over-reach'd by *Busie Schismatics*?

NUM. 5.

2. Secondly, let it be granted that *Perfidia* doth signifie here *Error in faith and doctrine*. For I will not denie, but that among the *African Writers* (and especially *S. Cyprian*) it is sometimes so us'd; and therefore here perhaps. But then this Priviledge of not erring dangerously in the Faith, was not made over absolutely to the *Romanes*, that are such by birth, and dwelling onely; but to the *Romanes*, *qua tales*, as they were such as those first were, whose faith was famous through the world, and as long as they continued such; which at that time it seemes they did. And so *S. Cyprian's* words seeme to import, *eos esse Romanos*, that the *Romanes* then under Pope *Cornelius*, were such as the *Apostle* spake of, and therefore to whom at that time (or any time, they still remaining such) *perfidious Misbelieve* could not be welcome, Or rather indeed *perfidious Misbelievers* or *Schismatics* could not be welcome. For this very phrase *Perfidia non potest habere accessum*, directs us to understand the word in a *Concrete sense*. *Perfidiousnesse* could not get access, that is, such *perfidious persons*, *Excommunicated out of other Churches*, were not likely to get access at *Rome*:

Ego tibi istam scelestam, Scelus, linguam abscondam: Plaut. Amphit. Ex hac enim parte pudor pugnat, illinc petulantia &c. Cic. — Latuit plebeio relictus amictu Omnis Honos, Nullos comitata est purpure falces. Lucan. l. 2.

Or to finde Admittance into their *Communion*. It is but a *Metonymie of speech*, the *Adjunct* for the *Subject*, A thing very usuall even in *elegant Authors*, and much more in later times, as in *S. Cyprian's*, when the *Latine Language* was growne rougher, Now if it be thus understood

understood (I say in the Concrete) then it is plaine, that S. Cyprian did not intend by these words to exempt the Romanes from possibility of Errour, but to brand his Adversaries with a Title due to their Merit, calling them *perfidious*, that is, such as had *betrayed*, or *perverted the Faith*. Neither can wee loose by this Construction, as will appeare at after.

3. But *thirdly*, when all is done, what if it bee no more than a Rhetoricall Excesse of speech? *Perfidius non potest*, for *non facile potest*, It cannot, that is, it cannot easily; Or what if S. Cyprian doe but *Laudando præcipere*, by commending † them to be such, instruct them, that such indeed they ought to bee, to whom *Perfidiosus*esse should not get accessse. Men are very bountifull of their Complements sometimes.

† *Nec cogitare eos esse Romanos, quorum fides Apostolo prædicante, &c.*

* Synesius writing to Theophilus of Alexandria, begins thus. *ἔγω καὶ Βελόρυς, καὶ ἀνέχον μοι τῆς αἰῆς, &c.* I both will, and a Divine Necessity lies upon mee, to esteeme it a Law, whatsoever that Throne (meaning his of Alexandria) shall Determine. Nay the Word is *ῥεωσέτω* and that signifies to determine like an Oracle, or as in Gods stead. Now, I hope you will say, This is not to be taken *Dogmatically*, it is but the Epistolers *Courtesie* onely. And why not the like here? For the haste which these *Schismaticks* made to Rome, prevented Saint Cyprians Letters: yet Cornelius very carefull of both the Truth and Peace of the Church, would neither heare them, nor receive their Letters,

* *Epist. 67.*

till^b hee had written to S. Cyprian. Now this Epistle is S. Cyprian's answer to Cornelius, in which he informs him of the whole truth, and withall gives him thanks for refusing to heare these *African Fugitives*. In which faire way of returning his thanks, if hee make an honourable mention of the

^b Eor so S. Cyprian begins his Epistle to Cornelius. *Legi literas tuas frater, &c.*
And after: *Sed enim lecta aliâ Epistolâ tuâ frater, &c.* S. Cyprian. L. 1. *Epist. 3.*

Romanes

Romanes and their Faith, with a little dash of Rhetorick, even to a *Non potest*, for a *Non facile potest*, 'tis no great wonder.

NUM. 7.

But take which Answer you will of the three; This is plaine, that S. Cyprian had no meaning to assert the unerring Infallibility of either Pope, or Church of Rome. For this is more then manifest, by the Contestation, which after happened betweene S. Cyprian, and Pope Stephen, about the Rebaptization of those, that were Baptized by Hereticks, For hee

† *Stephanus Frater noster Hereticorum causam contra Christianos, & contra Ecclesiam Dei assertere conatur. Cypr. ad Pompeium contra Epist. Stephani Edit. per Erasmus Basil. p. 327.*

* *Stephani fratris nostri obstinatio dura: Ibid. p. 329.* And it would be marked by the Iesuite and his A. C. that still it is *Stephani fratris nostri*, and not *Capitis*, or *summi Pastoris nostri*.

† saith expressely, that Pope Stephen did then not onely maintaine an error, but the very Cause of Hereticks, and that against Christians, and the very Church of God.

* And after this he chargeth him with Obstinacy and Presumption. I hope this is plaine enough to shew, that S. Cyprian had no great Opinion of the Roman Infallibility. Or if he had it, when he writ to Cornelius; certainly hee had chang'd it, when he wrote against Stephen. But I think it was no change, and that when he wrote to Cornelius, it was Rhetoricke, and no more.

NUM. 8.

Now if any man shall say, that in this Poynt of Rebaptization, S. Cyprian himselfe was in the wrong Opinion, and Pope Stephen in the right, I easily grant that; But yet that Error of his takes not off his judgement, what he thought of the Papall or Roman Infallibility in those times. For though afterwards ^a S. Cyprian's Opinion was condemned in a Councell at Rome under Cornelius, and after that by Pope Stephen; and after both in the first ^b Councell of Carthage: yet no one word is there in that Councell, which mentions this as an Error, That hee thought Pope Stephen might erre in the faith, while hee proclaimed

^a *Caranza in Concil. Carthag. sub Cornel. sine.*

^b *Can. 1.*

claimed he did so. In which, though the particular Censure, which he passed on Pope *Stephen*, was erroneous (for *Stephen* erred not in that) yet the *Generall* which results from it (namely, That for all his being in the Popedome, he might erre) is most true.

2. The second Father which *Bellarmino* cites, is NUM. 9.

S. Ierome:^a His words are: *The Romane Faith commended by the Apostle, admits not such prestigia's, deceits, and delusions into it, though an Angell should preach it otherwise, than it was preach'd at first (and) being armed and fenced by S. Paul's authority, cannot be changed.* Where first, I will not doubt, but that *S. Ierome* speakes here of the *Faith*; For the *Præstigiæ* here mentioned, are afterwards more plainly expressed. For he tel

a That the Bishop of Rome had sent Letters into the East, and charged Heresie upon Rufinus: And farther, that Origen's Books *αὐτῶν* were translated by him, and delivered to the simple people of the Church of Rome, that by his meanes they might loose the verity of the Faith, which they had learned from the Apostle. There-

fore the *Præstige* before mentioned were the Cunning Illusions of *Ruffinus*, putting *Origen's* Book under the *Martyr Pamphilus* his name, that so he might bring in *Hereſie* the more cunningly under a name of Credit, and the more eaſily pervert the Peoples Faith. So, of the *Faith* he ſpeakes. And ſecondly, I ſhall as eaſily confeſſe that *S. Ierome's* ſpeech is moſt true, but I cannot admit the *Cardinal's* ſenſe of it. For he impoſes upon the word *Fides*. For by *Romana Fides*,

*d Attamen scito Romanam fidem
Apostolica voce laudatam ejus-
modi praeſigis non recipere, eti-
amſi Angelus aliter annunciet,
quàm ſemel predicatum eſt, Pauli
authoritate munitam non poſſe
mutari. S. Hieron. L. 3. Apoſt.
contra Rufinum. Tom. 2. Edit.
Pariſ. 1534. fol. 84. K. Perad-
venture it is here to be read (&
jamſ) Forſo the place is more
plaine, and more ſtrong; but the
Antwer is the ſame.*

a Deinde ut Epistolos contra te
ad Orientem mitteret, & cauteri-
um tibi Hareses inureret. Dim-
ceretq; libros Origenis ^{αὐτῶν} ἀπὸ
αὐτοῦ transmissos, & simplici Eccle-
sia Romana plebi traditos, ut si-
dei veritatem quam ab Apostolo
didicerant, per te perderent. S.
Hieron. *ibid.* fol. 85. K.

the *Romane Faith*, he will understand the *Particular Church of Rome*. Which is as much as to say, *Romanos Fideles*, the Faithfull of that Church: And that no wilie Delusions, or Cousenage in matter of Faith can be imposed upon them. Now hereupon I returne to that of *S. Cyprian*: If *Fides Romana* must signifie *Fideles Romanos*, why may not *Perfidia* before signifie *Perfidos*? Especially since these two words are commonly used by these *Writers*, as

^a *Qui cum Fidei dux esse non potuit, perfidia existat. S. Cyprian. L. 1. Epist. 7.*

Fidem perfidis &c. Ibid.

Facti sunt ex Ovibus Vulpes, ex fidelibus perfidi. Optatus. L. 7.

Quomodo iis profit quum baptizantur Parentum Fides, quorum iis non potest obesse perfidia. S. Aug. Epist. 23. Quanto potius Fides aliena potest consulere parvulo, cui sua perfidia, &c. S. Aug. L. 3. de lib. Arbit. c. 23.

Termes ^a *Opposite*. And therefore by the *Law of Opposition* may interpret each other proportionably. So with these great Masters, with whom 'tis almost growne to be; *Quod volumus, rectum est*, what we please, shall be the Authours meaning: *Perfidia* must signifie absolutely *Error in Faith*, or *Misbeliefe*: But *Fides* must relate to the *Persons*, and signifie the *Faithfull of the Romane Church*.

And now I conceive my Answer will proceed with a great deale of Reason. For *Romana Fides*, the *Romane Faith*, as it was commended by the *Apostle* (of which *S. Ierome* speakes) is one thing, and the *Particular Romane Church*, of which the *Cardinall* speakes, is another. The *Faith* indeed admits not *Præstigias*, wilie delusions into it; if it did, it could not be the *Whole and Undeified Faith of Christ*, which they learned from the *Apostle*. And which is so fenced by *Apostolicall Authority*, as that it cannot be changed, though an *Angell* should preach the contrary. But the *Particular Church of Rome* hath admitted *Præstigias*, diverse crafty Conveyances into the *Faith*, and is not fenced, as the *Faith it selfe* is. And therefore though an *Angell* cannot contrary
that

that, yet the *bad Angell* hath sowed tares in this. By which meanes *Romana Fides*, though it be now the same it was for the words of the *Creed*; yet it is not the same for the sense of it: Nor for the *super* and *præter-structures* built upon it, or joyned unto it. So the *Romane Faith*, that is, the *Faith* which *S. Paul* taught the *Romanes*, and after commended in them, was all one with the *Catholike Faith of Christ*. For *S. Paul* taught no other than that *One*. And this one can never be changed in, or from it selfe by *Angell* or *Devell*. But in mens hearts it may receive a change; And in particular Churches it may receive a change; And in the particular Church of *Rome* it hath received a change. And yee see *S. Hierome* himselve confesses, that the *Pope* himselve was afraid ^b ne perderent, least by this Art of *Ruffinus*, the People might loose the verity of the *Faith*. Now that which can be lost, can be changed For usually Habits begin to alter, before they be quite lost. And that which may be lost among the People, may be lost among the *Bishops*, and the rest of the *Clergie* too, if they looke not to it, as it seemes they after did not at *Rome*, though then they did. Nay at this time the whole *Romane Church* was in danger enough to swallow *Origen's Booke*, and all the Errors in it coming under the Name of *Pamphilus*; and so *S. Jerome* himselve expressly, and close upon the Place cited by *Bellarmino*. For he desires ^a *Ruffinus* to change the Title of the Booke (that Error may not be spread under the specious Name of *Pamphilus*) and so to free from danger the *Romane simplicity*. Where, by the way, *Romane unerring Power* now challenged, and *Romane simplicity* then feared, agree not very well together.

^b Ne fides veritatem quam ab Apostolo didicerant, per te perderent, ut *suprà*.

^a Muta titulum, & Romanam simplicitatem tanto periculo libera. *ibid.* fol. 84. K.

NUM. 10.

3. The third Father alledged by Bellarmine is^a S. Gregory Nazianzen.

^a *Vetus Roma ab antiquis temporibus habet rectam Fidem, & semper eam retinet, sicut decet Urbem, qua toti Orbi præsudet, semper de Deo integram fidem habere.* Greg. Naz. in Carmine de vita sua. *ite medium.* p. 9. Edit. Paris. 1609

And his words are, that Ancient Rome from of old hath the right Faith, and alwayes holds it, as becomes the City, which is Governesse over the whole World to have an entire faith in, and concerning God.

Now certainly it became that City very well, to keepe the Faith sound, and entire. And having the Government of a great part of the World then in her power, it became her so much the more, as her Example thereby was the greater. And in S. Gregory Nazianzen's time, Rome did certainly hold both *rectam & integram fidem*, the right, and the whole entire Faith of Christ. But there is nor *Promise*, nor *Prophecy* in S. Gregory, that Rome shall ever so doe.

For his words are plaine *semper decet*, it alwayes becomes that great City to have, and to hold too *integram Fidem* the entire Faith. But at the other *semper, 'tis retinet*, that City from of old holds the right faith yet; but he faith not *retinebit semper*, that the

City of Rome shall retaine it ever, no more then it shall ever retaine the Empire of the World. Now it must be assur'd, that it shall ever hold the entire faith of Christ, before we can be assured, That that Particular Church can never *erre*, or be *Infallible*.

NUM. 11.

^a *Petram opinor per agnominationem nihil aliud, quam inconcussam & firmissimam Discipuli fidem vocavit. In qua, Ecclesia Christi ita fundata & firmata esset, ut non laberetur, & esset inexpugnabilis inferorum portis, in perpetuum manens.* S. Cyril. Alex. *Dial. de Trin.* l. 4. p. 278. Parisiis, An. 1604.

Besides these, the Cardinall names *Cyillus*, and *Ruffinus*, but he neither tells us where, nor cites their words. Yet I thinke I have found the most pregnant place in S* *Cyri*, and that makes clearly against him. For I finde expressly these

^b The words in the Greeke, are ἡ μὲν ὁν ἐκ παλαιωτος, & νυν ἐκ τῆς αὐτῆς πόλεως. *Hec quidem fuit diu, & nunc adhuc est recta grada. & n, Est*; So S. Gregory sayes, but of an *esse* or a *retinebit*, he sayes nothing.

thesethreethings. First, that the Church is Inexpugnable, and that the *Gates of Hell* shall never prevaile against it, but that it shall *in perpetuum manere* remaine for ever. And this all Protestants grant. But this, *That it shall not fall away*, doth not secure it from all kinds of error. Secondly, Bellarmine quotes S. Cyril for the *Particular Romane Church*; and S. Cyril speaks not of the *Romane* at all, but of the *Church of Christ*, that is, the *Catholike Church*. Thirdly, that the *Foundation* and firmenesse, which the *Church of Christ* hath, is placed not *in*, or upon the **Person*, much lesse the *Succeffor of S. Peter*; but upon the **faith*, which by Gods Spirit in him he so firmly professed: which is the Common received Opinion both of the *Ancient Fathers*, and the *Protestants*. Vpon this *Rocke*, that is, upon this *faith* will I build my Church. *S. Matth. 16.* So here's all the Good he hath gotten *S. Matth. 16. 18.* by S. Cyril, unlesse he can cite some other place of S. Cyril, which I believe he cannot.

And for *Ruffinus*, the Place which Bellarmine aimes at, is in his Exposition upon the *Creed*: and is quoted in part the Chapter before. But when all his words shall be laid together, they will make no more for Bellarmine and his Cause, then the former Places have done. *Ruffinus* his words then runne thus: *Before I come to the*

* Et ego dico tibi) i. tue Confessioni, quā mihi dixisti, Tu es Christus &c. Dion. Carthus. in S. Mat. 16. 18. Et super hanc Petram) i. Fidei hujus firmitatem & fundamentum. Vel super hanc Petram quam confessus es, i. super Alapsum Lapidem Angularē &c. Ibid.

NUM. 12.

^b Bellar. L. 4. de Rom. Pont. Cap. 3. §. penult.

^c Illud non importune commonendam puto, quod in diversis Ecclesiis aliqua in his verbis inveniuntur adjecta. In Ecclesia tamen Urbis Romae hoc non deprehenditur factum. Pro eo arbitror, quod neque Haeresis ulla illic sumpsit exordium, & mos ibi servatur antiquus, eos qui gratiam Baptismi susceperunt sunt, publicè, id est, Fidelium populo audiente, Symbolum reddere: Et utique adjectionem minus saltem sermonis, eorum qui praecesserunt in Fide, non admittit auditus. In ceteris autem Locis, quantum intelligi datur, propter nonnullos Haereticos addita quadam videntur, per quae novellae Doctrinae sensus crederetur excludi. &c. Ruffin. in Expofit. Symbol. (ut habetur inter Opera S. Cyprianii) Praefat. Expof.

Words of the Creed, this I thinke fit to warne you of. That in divers Churches some things are found added to the words (of the Creed.) But in the Church of the City of Rome, this is not found done. And as I thinke, it is, for that no Hæresie did take its rise or beginning there : And for that the old Custome is there observed, Namely, that they which are to receive the grace of Baptisme, doe publickly repeate the Creed in the hearing of the People, who would not admit such Additions. But in other places (as farre as I can understand) by reason of some Hereticks, some things were added, but such as were to exclude the sense of their Novell Doctrine. Now these words make little for Bellarmine who cites them, and much against Ruffinus that uttered them. They make little for Bellarmine. First, because suppose Ruffinus his speech to be true, yet this will never follow : In Ruffinus his time no Hæresie had taken its beginning at Rome : therefore no Hæresie hath had rooting there so many hundred yeares since. Secondly, Bellarmine takes upon him there to proove That the particular Church of Rome cannot erre. Now neither can this be concluded out of Ruffinus his words. First, because (as I said before) to argue from *Non sumpsit* to *Ergo sumere non potest* : No Hæresie hath yet begun there ; therefore none can begin there, or spring thence, is an Argument drawne *Ab actu ad Potentiam negativè*, from the Act to the Power of Being, which every Novice in Learning can tell proceeds not *Negatively*. And Common Reason telles every man, 'tis no Consequence to say, Such a thing is not, or hath not beene, Therefore it cannot be. Secondly, because though it were true, that no Hæresie at all did ever take its beginning at Rome, yet that can never proove that the particular Church of Rome can never erre (which is the thing in Question.) For suppose that no Hæresie

refe did ever beginne there, yet if any, that began elfewhere, were admitted into that Church, it is as full a prooffe, *That that Church can erre*, as if the *Hærefe* had beene hatched in that Nefte. For that Church erres, which *admits an Hærefe into it*, as well as that which *broaches it*. Now *Ruffinus* fayer no more of the *Romane Church*, then *non fumpfit exordium* no *Hærefe* tooke its beginning there ; but that denyes not, but that fome *Hæreticall* taint might get in there. And 'tis more then manifest, that the moft famous *Hærefies* in their feverall Times made their aboade even at *Rome*. And 'tis observable too, that *Bellarmino* cites nomore of *Ruffinus* his words then thefe (*In Ecclefiâ urbis Romæ neque Hærefis ulla fumpfit exordium, & mos ibi fervatur antiquus*) as if this were an entire fpeech, whereas it comes in but as a Reason given of the fpeech precedent, and as if *Ruffinus* made the Church of *Rome* the great obferver of the Cuftomes of the Church, whereas he fpeaks but of one Particular Cuftome of *Reciting the Creed before Baptifme*. But after all this, I pray did no *Hærefe* ever begin at *Rome*? where did *Novatianifme* begin? At *Rome* fure. For ^a *Baronius*, ^b *Pamelius*, and ^c *Petavius* doe all difpute the Point, whether that *feet* was denominated from *Novatianus* the *Romane* *Priest*, or *Novatus* the *African* *Bifhop*; And they Conclude for *Novatian*. He then that gave that Name, is in all right the *Founder*, and *Rome* the neft of that *Hærefe*. And there it Continued with a fucceffion^d of *Bifhops* from *Cornelius* to *Cæleftine*, which is neare upon two hundred yeares. Nay could *Ruffinus* himfelfe be ignorant that fome *Hærefe* began at *Rome*? No fure. For in this I muft challenge him either for his *weake memory*, or his *wilfull error*. For *Ruffinus* had not only read *Eufebius* his *History*, but had beene at the paines

to

^a *Baron, To. 2.**An. 254. Num.*

62.

^b *Pamel, in Cy-**prian. Epiſt. 41.**& 73.*^c *Petavius in**Epiphani, Hæres**59.*^d *Onuph, in Notis**ad Plat. in**vita Cornélii.*

* Heretici alii in morem venenatorum serpentum in Asiam, & Phrygiam irrepserunt, & ἐν τῇ ρώμῃ, quorum Dux Florinus. Euseb. L. 5. cap. 14. And in Ruffinus his Translation, c. 15. And then afterwards c. 19. & 20. ἐξεναντίας δὲ τῶν ἐν τῷ αἵματι τῶν ὑπὸ τῆς ἐκκλησίας θείων ἀρχαρχόντων. &c. Now these ~~Ruffinus~~ taught that God was the Author of sin.

to translate him. Now * Eusebius sayes plainly, that some Hereticks spread their venome in Asia, some in Phrygia, and others grew at Rome, and Florinus was the Ring-leader of them. And more clearely after. Irenæus (saith he) directed diverse Epistles against this Florinus, and his fellow Blaſtus, and condemnes them of

such Heresies, as threw them and their Followers into great Impiety, &c. Those at Rome corrupting the sound Doctrine of the Church. Therefore most manifest it is, that some Heresie had its rise and beginning at Rome. But to leave this slip of Ruffinus, most evident it is, that Ruffinus neither did, nor could account the Particular Church of Rome infallible. For if he had esteemed so of it, he would not have dissented from it in so maine a Point, as is the Canon of the Scripture, as he plainly doth. ^a For reckoning up the Canonickall Bookes, he most manifestly dissents from the Roman Church. Therefore either Ruffinus did not think the Church of Rome was infallible, or els the Church of Rome at this day reckons up more Bookes within the Canon, than heretofore she did. If she do, then she is changed in a maine Point of Faith, the Canon of Scripture, and is absolutely convinced not to be infallible; For if she were right in her reckoning then, she is wrong now; And if she be right now, she was wrong then; And if she do not reckon more now than she did, when Ruffinus lived, then he reckons fewer than she, and so dissents from her; which

doubtlesse he durst not have done, had he thought her judgement infallible. Yea, and he sets this marke upon his Dissent besides, ^b That he reckons up the Bookes of the Canon just so, and no other-wise,

* Ruff. in Exposit. Symb. p. 188. In which reckoning he plainly agrees with the Church of England. Art. 6.

^a Novi, & Veteris Testamenti Volumina &c. sicut ex Patrum Monumentis accepimus. Ruff. in Symb. p. 188. Et hæc sunt quæ Patres intra Canonem concluderunt. Et ex quibus Fidei nostræ Assertionem constare voluerunt. Ib. p. 189.

wife, than as he received them out of the Monuments of the Forefathers; And out of which the Assertions of our Faith are to be taken. Last of all, had this place of Ruffinus any strength for the Infallibility of the Church of Rome, yet there is very little reason, that the Pope, and his Clergie should take any Benefit by it.

For S.^c Jerome tels us, That when Ruffinus was angry with him for an Epistle which he writ not, he plainly sent him to the Bishop of Rome, and bid him expostulate with him for the Contumely put upon him, in that he received not his exposition of the Faith, which, said He, all Italy approved: and in that he branded him also, dum nesciret (behind his back) with Heresie.

Now if the Pope which then was, rejected this Exposition of the Creed made by Ruffinus, and branded him besides with Heresie; his sentence against Ruffinus was Iust, or Vnjust. If Vnjust, then the Pope erred about a matter of Faith, and so neither He, nor the Church of Rome, infallible. If Iust, then the Church of Rome labours to defend herself by his pen, which is judged Hereticall by her self. So whether it were Iust, or Vnjust, the Church of Rome is driven to a hard strait, when she must beg help of him, whom she branded with Heresie, and out of that Tract, which she her self rejected; And so uphold her Infallibility by the Iudgement of a man, who in her Iudgement had erred so foully: Nor may she by any † Law take benefit of a Testimony, which her self hath defamed, and protested against.

With these Bellarmine is pleased to name Sixe NUM. 13. Popes, which, he saith, are all of this Opinion. But he^a adds, That these Testimonies will be contemned by the

D

Hereticks.

^c Si Episcopi Romani est, stultè facis ab eo Exemplar Epistola petere, cui missa non est, &c. Vade potius Romam, & presens apud eum expostula, cur tibi & absenti & innocenti fecerit injuriã. Primum, ut non reciperes Expositionem Fidei tuã, quam omnis (ut scribis) Italia comprobavit, &c. Deinde, ut Caeterum tibi Heresios, dum nescis, inureret. S. Hieron. Apol. 3. advers. Ruffin. fol. 85. K.

† Quum quis se velle personas testium post publicationem repellere fuerit protestatus. Si quid pro ipso dixerint, eis non creditur. Extra. Tex. & ibi Gloss. c. Praesentium 31. de Testibus.

^a Bellar. L. 4. de Rõ. Pont. c. 4. §. Addo etiam, Quæ etsi ab Hereticis contemnantur, &c.

Hæreticks. Good words I pray. I know whom the Cardinall meanes by *Hæreticks* very well. But the best is, His Call cannot make them so. Nor shall I easily contemne Sixe ancient *hops* of Rome con-

^b *Nemini in sua causa credendum, nisi conformiter ad Legem Divinam, Naturalem & Canonicam loquatur.* So Io. Gerson, & the Doctors of Paris cited in *Lib. Anon. de Ecclesiastica & Politica Potestate.* c. 16. Ed. Paris. 1612. Now these Popes doe not speak here conformably to these Lawes.

^b *L. 4. de Rom. Pont. c. 3.*

curring in Opinion, if apparent verity in the thing it selfe do not force me to dissent. And in that Case I shall do it without Contempt too. This onely I will say, ^b That Sixe Popes concurring in opinion shall have lesse waight with me in their own Cause, than any other more *Ancient Fathers*. Indeed could I swallow ^b Bellarmines Opinion, That the Popes Iudgement is *Infallible*, I would then submit without any more adoe. But that will never downe with me, unlesse I live till I doate, which I hope in God I shall not.

NUM. 14.

Other Proofes than these Bellarmine brings not to prove, that the *Particular Church of Rome* cannot erre in, or from the Faith. And of what force these are to sway any Iudgement, I submit to all indifferent Readers. And having thus examined Bellarmines Proofes, That the *Particular Church of Rome* cannot erre in Faith; I now returne to *A. C.* and the Iesuite, and tell them, that no Iesuite, or any other, is ever able to prove any *Particular Church* *Infallible*.

A. C. p. 42.

NUM. 15.

But for the *Particular Church of Rome*, and the Pope with it, erred it hath. And therefore may erre. Erred I say it hath, in the Worship of Images, and in altering Christs Institution in the blessed Sacrament, by taking away the Cup from the People, and diverse other particulars, as shall appeare at [†] after. And as for the Ground, which is presumed to secure this Church from Errour, 'tis very remarkable

[†] §. 33. *Confid.*
7. Num. 5. & 12

remarkable How the ^c Learned Cardinall speakes in this Case. For he tells us, that this Proposition [*So long as S. Peter's Chaire is at Rome, that Particular Church cannot erre in the Faith*] is *verissima*, most true; and yet in the very next words, 'tis *Fortasse tam vera*, peradventure as true as the former (that is) *That the Pope when he teaches the whole Church in those things which belong to the faith, cannot erre in any case*, What? is that Proposition most true? And yet is it but at a *peradventure* 'tis as true as this? Is it possible any thing should be *absolute'y* most true; and yet under a *Peradventure* that it is but as true as another truth? But here without all *Peradventure* neither Proposition is true. And then indeed *Bellarmino* may say without a *Fortasse*, That this proposition: *The Particular Church of Rome cannot erre, so long as the Sea Apostolike is there*, is as true as this: *The Pope cannot erre, while he teaches the whole Church in those things which belong to the Faith*. For neither of them is true. But he cannot say that either of them is *verissima*, most true, when neither of them hath Truth.

2. Secondly, if the *Particular Church of Rome* NUM. 16.
be *Infallible*, and can neither erre in the Faith, nor fall from it, then it is because the *Sea Apostolike* cannot be *transferred from Rome*, but must ever to the consummation of the World, remaine there, and keepe that *Particular Church* from erring. Now to this what sayes *Bellarmino*? what? why he tells us,
^a That it is a pious, and most probable Opinion to thinke so. And he reckons foure Probabilities, that it shall never be remov'd from *Rome*. And I will not deny, but some of them are

^c *Romana Ecclesia Particularis non potest errare, persistente Roma Apostolica sede. Propositio hac est verissima, & fortasse tam vera quam illa prima de Pontifice, L. 4. de Rom. Pont. c. 4. §. 2. And that first proposition is this: Summus Pontifex cum totam Ecclesiam docet, in his quæ ad fidem pertinent nullo casu errare potest, Ibid. c. 3. §. 1.*

^a *Pia & probabilissima Sententia est, Cathedram Petri non posse separari à Româ, & proinde Romanam Ecclesiam absolute non posse errare, vel deficere. L. 4. de Rom. Pont. c. 4. §. Quod nihilominus.*

faire Probabilities; But yet they are but Probabilities, and so unable to convince any man. Why but then, what if a man cannot thinke as *Bellarmino* doth, but that enforced by the light of his understanding, he must thinke the quite contrary to this, which *Bellarmino* thinks pious, and so probable?

^b *Contraria sententia nec est Hæretica, nec manifestè erronea. L. 4. de Rom. Pont. c. 4. S. At secundum.*

What then? Why, then ^b*Bellarmino* himselfe tells you, that the quite contrary Proposition to this, namely, That *S. Peter's Chayre may be severed from Rome, and that then that Particular Church may erre, is neither Hæreticall, nor manifestly erroneous.* So then, by *Bellarmines* owne Confession, I am no Hæreticke, nor in any manifest error, if I say (as indeed I doe, and thinke it too) that 'tis possible for *S. Peter's Chaire* to be carried from *Rome*, and that then at least, by his owne argument, that Church may erre.

NUM. 17.
A.C.p. 42.

Now then upon the whole matter, and to returne to *A. C.* If that Lady desired to rely upon a particular infallible Church, 'tis not to be found on earth. *Rome* hath not that gift, nor her *Bishop* neither. And *Bellarmino* (who I thinke was as able as any Champion that Church hath) dares not say, tis either *Hæresie*, or a manifest error, to say, That the *Apostolike See* may be removed thence, and That Church not only erre in Faith, but also fall quite away from it. Now I for my part have not ignorance enough in me to believe, That that Church which may *apostatize* at some one time, may not erre at another. Especially since both her erring, and failing may arise from other Causes, besides that, which is mention'd by the *Cardinall*. And if it may erre, 'tis not Infallible.

F. The Question was, Which was that Church? A friend of the Ladies would needs defend, That not only the *Romane*; but also the *Greek Church* was right.

B. When

B. When that *Honourable Personage* answered, I was not by to heare. But I presume, He was so farre from granting, that *only the Romane Church* was right, as that He did not grant it right: And that He tooke on him no other Defence of the poore *Greeke Church*, then was according to truth.

§. 4.

F. I told him, That the *Greeke Church* had plainly changed, and taught false in a Poynt of Doctrine concerning the *Holy Ghost*; and That I had heard say, that even His Majesty should say, That the *Greeke Church* having erred against the *Holy Ghost*, had lost the *Holy Ghost*.

B. You are very bold with His Majesty, to relate Him upon Heare-say. My Intelligence serves me not to tell you what His Majesty said: But if he said it not, you have beene too credulous to believe, and too suddaine to report it. Princes deserve, and were wont to have, more respect than so. If His Majesty did say it, there is Truth in the speech; The error is yours only, by mistaking what is meant by *Loosing the Holy Ghost*. For a *Particular Church* may be said to loose the *Holy Ghost* two wayes, or in two Degrees. 1. The one, when it looses such speciall assistance of that Blessed Spirit, as preserves it from all dangerous Errors, and sinnes, and the temporall punishment, which is due unto them: And in this sense the *Greeke Church* did perhaps loose the *Holy Ghost*: for they erred against Him, they sinned against God, And for this, or other sinnes, they were delivered into another *Babylonish Captivity* under the *Turke*, in which they yet are; and from which, God in his mercy deliver them. But this is rather to be called an Error *circa Spiritum Sanctum*, about the Doctrine

§ 5.

D 3 concerning

concerning the Holy Ghost, then an error against the Holy Ghost, 2. The other is, when it looses not only this assistance, but all assistance *ad hoc*, to this, that they may remaine any longer a *true Church*; and so, *Corinth* and *Ephesus*, and divers other Churches have *lost the Holy Ghost*. But in this sense the whole *Greeke Church* lost not the *Holy Ghost*. For they continue a *true Church* in the maine substance, to and at this day, though erroneous in this Poynt, which you mention, and perhaps in some other too.

F. *The Ladies friend, not knowing what to answer, called in the Bishop, who sitting downe first, excused himselfe as one unprovided, and not much studied in Controversies; and desiring that in Case he should faile; yet the Protestant Cause might not be thought ill of.*

§. 6.

B. This is most true. For I did indeed excuse my selfe, and I had great reason so to doe. And my Reason being grounded upon *Modestie* for the most part, there I leave it. Yet this it may be fit, others should know, that I had no information where the other Conferences brake off; no instruction at all what should be the ground of this third Conference; nor the full time of foure and twenty houres to bethinke my selfe. And this I take upon my Credit is most true: whereas you make the sitting of these, and the like *Questions* to the *very Branne* your daily work, and came thoroughly furnished to the businesse, and might so leade on the Controversie to what your selfe pleased, and I was to follow as I could. * *S. Augustine* said once, *Scio me invalidum esse*, I know I am weake, and yet he made good his Cause. And so perhaps may I against you.

And

* *De util. Cre-*
den di c. 2.

And in that I prefer'd the Cause before my particular credit, that which I did, was with *modesty*, and according to *Reason*. For there is no *Reason* the waight of this whole Cause should rest upon any one particular man. And great *Reason*, that the personall Defects of any man should presse himselfe, but not the Cause. Neither did I enter upon this Service, out of any forwardnesse of my owne, but commanded to it by *Supreame Authority*.

F. *It having an hundred better Schollers to maintaine it than he. To which I said, there were a thousand better Schollers than I to maintaine the Catholike Cause.*

B. In this I had never so poore a Conceit of the *Protestants Cause*, as to thinke, that they had but an hundred better than my selfe to maintaine it. That which hath an hundred, may have as many more, as it pleases God to give, and more than you. And I shall ever bee glad, that the *Church of England* (which, at this time, if my memory reflect not amisse, I named) may have farre more able Defendants, than my selfe. I shall never envie them, but rejoyce for Her. And I make no Question, but that if I had named a *thousand*, you would have multiplied yours into *ten Thousand*, for the *Catholike Cause* (as you call it.) And this Confidence of yours hath ever beene fuller of noyse than Prooffe. But you proceed.

§. 7.

F. *Then the Question about the Greeke Church being proposed, I said as before, That it had erred.*

B. Then

§. 8.

B. Then I thinke the *Question* about the *Greeke Church* was propofed. But after you had with confidence enough not fpared to fay, That what I would not acknowledge in this *Caufe*, you would vring, and extort from me; then indeed you faid as before; that it had erred: And this no man denied. But every *Error* denies not *Chrift*, the *Foundation*; or makes *Chrift* denie it, or thruft it from the *Foundation*.

F. *The Bishop faid, That the Error was not in Point Fundamentall.*

§. 9.
NUM. 1.

B. I was not fo peremptory. My fpeech was, That diuerfe Learned men, and fome of your owne, were of opinion, That (*as the Greeks expreffed themfelves*) it was a *Question* not fimplly *Fundamentall*. I know, and acknowledge that *Error* of denying the *Proceffion* of the *Holy Ghoft* from the *Sonne*, to be a grievous error in *Divinity*. And fure, it would have grated the *Foundation*, if they had fo denied the *Proceffion* of the *Holy Ghoft* from the *Sonne*, as that they had made an inequality betweene the *Persons*. But fince their forme of fpeech is, *That the Holy Ghoft proceeds from the Father by the Sonne, and is the Spirit of the Sonne*, without making any difference in the *Consubftantiality* of the *Persons*; I dare not denie them to bee a true Church for this; though I confefle them an *Erroneous* Church in this Particular.

* Non ex Filio,
fed Spiritum Fi-
lii effe dicimus.
Damafcen. L. I.
Fid. Orth. c. II.
Et Patris per
filium. Ibid.

NUM. 2.

Now that diuerfe learned men were of Opin-
ion, That à Filio, & per Filium, in the fense of the
Greeke Church, was but a *Question in modo loquendi*,
in

in manner of speech, ^b and therefore not Fundamentall, is evident. ^c The Master, and his Schollers agree upon it. The Greeks (saith he) confesse the Holy Ghost to bee the Spirit of the Son, with the Apostle, Galath. 4. and the Spirit of truth, S. Iohn 16. And since, Non est aliud, it is not another thing to say; The Holy Ghost is the Spirit of

the Father, and the Sonne, then that He is, or proceeds from the Father, and the Sonne, in this They seeme to agree with us in eandem Fidei sententiam, upon the same Sentence of Faith, though they differ in words. Now in this cause, where the words differ, but the Sentence of Faith is the same, ^d penitus eadem, even altogether the same, Can the Point be fundamentall? You may make them no Church (as ^e Bellarmine doth) and so deny them salvation; which cannot be had out of the true Church; but I for my part dare not so do. And Rome in this Particular should be more moderate, if it be but because this Article (Filiòq;) was added to the Creed, by her selfe. And 'tis hard to adde, and Anathematize too.

E

It

^b Pluralitas in Voce, salvatâ unitate in re, non repugnat unitati Fidei, Durand. Lib. 3. d. 25. q. 2.

^c Magist. 1. Sent. d. 11. D. Sane sciendum est, quod licet in presenti Articulo a nobis Græci verbo discordent, tamen sensu non differunt, &c. Bandinus L. 1. de Trin. d. 11. & Bonavent. in 1. Sent. d. 11. A. 1. q. 1. §. 12. Licet Græcis insensissimus, quum dixit Græcos obicere curiositatem Romanis, addendo (Filiòq;) Quia sine huius Articuli professione salus erat; non Respondet negando salutem esse, sed dicit tantum opportunam fuisse Determinationem propter periculum. Et p. stea, §. 15. Sunt qui volunt sustinere opinionem Græcorum, & Latinorum, distinguendo duplicem modum Procedendi.

Sed fortè si duo sapientes, unus Græcus, alter Latinus, uterque verus amator Veritatis, & non propriæ dictionis &c. de hac viâ contrarietate disquirerent, pateret utique tandem ipsam Contrarietatem non esse veraciter realem, sicut est Vocalis. Scotus in 1. Sent. d. 11. q. 1. Antiquorum Græcorum à Latinis discrepantia in voce potius est, & modo explicandi Emanationem Sp. S. quàm in ipsâ re. &c. Iodocus Clitoveus in Damasc. L. 1. Fid. Orth. c. 11. Et quidam ex Græcis concedunt, quod sit à Filio, vel ab eo profluat. Thom. p. 1. q. 36. A. 2. C. Et Thomas ipse dicit, Sp. S. procedere mediâtè à Filio. ib. A. 3. ad 1. saltem ratione Personarum Spirantium.

Respondeo cum Bessarione, & Gemadio, Damascenum non negâsse Sp. S. procedere ex Filio, quod ad rem attinet, quum dixerit Spiritum esse Imaginem Filii, & per Filium, sed existimâsse tuius dici per Filium, quàm ex Filio, quantum ad modum loquendi, &c. Bellarm. L. 2. de Christo c. 27. §. Respondeo igitur. Et Toller. in S. Iohn 15. Ar. 25. & Lutheran. Resp. ad Resp. 2. Ieremie Patriarchæ.

^d Eadem penitus Sententia, ubi supra à Clitov.

^e Bellarm. 4. de Notis Eccl. cap. 8. §. Quod autem apud Græcos.

NUM. 3.

It ought to be no easie thing, to condemne a man of *Heresie*, in *foundation of faith*; much lesse, a Church; least of all, so ample and large a Church as the Greeke, especially so, as to make them *no Church*. *Heaven Gates* were not so easily shut against multitudes, when *S. Peter* wore the *Keyes* at his owne girdle. And it is good counsell, which ^a *Alphonſus à Castro*, one of your owne, gives; *Let them consider that* pronounce easily of *Heresie*, how easie it is for themselves to erre. Or if you will pronounce, consider what it is that separates from the Church simply, and not in part only. I must needs professe, that I wish heartily, (as well as ^b others,) that those distressed men, whose *Crosse* is heavie already, had beene more plainly, and moderately dealt withall, though they thinke a diverse thing from us, then they have beene by the *Church of Rome*. But hereupon you say you were forc'd,

^a Lib. 3. cont.*Hares. fol. 93. A.**Vt videant hi, qui**facile de heresi**pronuntiant, quā**facile etiam ipsi**errent: Et intel-**ligant, non esse**tam leviter de**heresi censendū.**&c. In verbo**(Beatitudo.)*^b Iunius, *Anim-**ad in Bellar. cont.*

2. L. 3. c. 23.

F. *Whereupon I was forced to repeate what I had formerly brought against D. White, concerning Points Fundamentall.*

§. 10.

NUM. I.

B. Hereupon it is true, that you read a large Discourse out of a Booke printed, which, you said, was yours, The Particulars (all of them at the least) I do not now remember, nor did I then approve. But

* F. First righting the Sentence of *S. Austine*: *Perendus est Disputator errans. &c.* Here *A. C.* p. 44. tells us very learnedly, that my corrupt Copy hath *righting* instead of *reading* the Sentence of *S. Austine*. Whereas I here use the word *righting*, not as it is opposed to *reading* (as any man may discern *A. C.* palpably mistakes) but for *doing right* to *S. Austine*. And if I had meant it for *writing*, I should not have spelled it so.

if they be such, as were formerly brought against Doctor *White*, they are by him formerly answered. The first thing you did, was the * *righting* of *S. Augustine*: which Sentence I doe not at all remember was so much

much as named in the Conference, much lesse was it stood upon, and then righted by you. Another place of *S. Augustine* indeed was (which you omit ;) But it comes after, about *Tradition*, to which I remit it. But now you tell us of a great Prooffe made out of this † Place : For these words of yours containe two Propositions : One, *That all Poynts defined by the Church are Fundamentall* ; The other, *That this is proved out of this Place of S. Augustine.*

† By which is proved, That all poynts Defined by the Church are Fundamentall.

1. For the first, *That all Poynts defined by the Church are fundamentall* : It was not the least meanes, by which *Rome* grew to her Greatnesse, to blast every Opposer she had with the name of *Heretike*, or *Schismaticke*; for this served to shrivel the credit of the Persons. And the Persons once brought into contempt, and ignominie, all the good they desired in the Church, fell to dust, for want of creditable Persons to backe, and support it. To make this Proceeding good in these later yeares, this Course (it seemes) was taken. The Schoole, that must maintaine (and so they doe) *That all Points Defined by the Church, are thereby* ^a *Fundamentall* ^b *necessary to be believed*, ^c *of the substance of the Faith*, and that, though it be determined quite ^d *Extra Scripturam*. And then ^e leave the wise, and active Heads to take order, that there be strength enough ready to determine what is fittest for them.

NUM. 2.

^a Your owne word.

^b *Inconcessa fide ab omnibus.* Thom. 2. 2^a. q. 1.^a Art. 10. C.

^c *Scolus 1. Sent. d. 11. q. 1.*

^d *Ecclesie Voces etiam extra Scripturam.* Stap. Relict. Con. 4. q. 1. Ar. 3. *Qua maturo iudicio definivit &c. Solum est, & etiamsi nullo Scripturarum, aut evidenti, aut probabili testimonio confirmaretur, ibid.*

^e *Et penes Cercopes Victoria sit.* Greg. Naz. de Differen. vitæ. Cercopes. 1. *Astutos, & veteratoria improbitatis Episcopos, qui artibus suis ac dolis omnia Concilia perturbabant.* Schol. ib.

But since these men distinguish not, nor you, betwene the *Church in generall*, and a *Generall Councell*, which is but her *Representation*, for Determinations

NUM. 3.

of the Faith, though I be very slow in sifting, or opposing what is concluded by Lawfull, Generall, and consenting Authority, though I give as much as can justly be given to the Definitions of Councils truly Generall: nay, suppose I should grant (which I doe not) *That Generall Councils cannot erre*; yet this cannot downe with me, *That all Poynts even so defined are Fundamentall*. For *Deductions* are not prime, and native *Principles*; nor are *Superstructures*, *Foundations*. That which is a *Foundation for all*, cannot be one, and another, to different Christians in regard of it selfe; for then it could be no common *Rule* for any, nor could the soules of men rest upon a *shaking foundation*. No: If it be a true *Foundation*, it must be *common to all*, and *firme under all*; in which sense the *Articles of Christian Faith are Fundamentall*. And ^e *Irenaeus* layes this for a ground, That the whole Church (howsoever dispersed in place) speaks this with one mouth. *He, which among the Guides of the Church is best able to speak, utters no more then this; and lesse then this, the most simple doth not utter*. Therefore the Creed (of which he speaks) is a *common, is a constant Foundation*. And an *Explicite faith* must be of this, in them which have the use of Reason; for both Guides and simple people, All the Church utter this.

^e *Quum enim una & eadem fides sit, neq; is qui multum de ipsa dicere potest, plusquam oportet, dicit; neque qui parum, ipsam imminuit. Iren. L. 1. advers. haeres. c. 3.*

NUM. 4.

Now many things are defined by the Church, which are but *Deductions* out of this: which, (suppose them deduced right) *move far from the Foundation*; without which *Deductions* explicitly believed, many millions of Christians go to Heaven; and cannot therefore be *Fundamentall in the faith*. True *Deductions* from the *Article* may require necessary believe, in them which are able, and do go along with them from the Principle to the Conclusion. But I do not see, either that the *Learned* do make them necessary to *all*, or any reason, why

why they should. Therefore they cannot be *Fundamentall*, & yet to some mens Salvation they are necessary.

Besides, that which is *Fundamentall* in the Faith of Christ, is a *Rocke immoveable*, and can never be varied. Never^a. Therefore, if it be

NUM. 5.

Fundamentall after the Church hath defined it, it was *Fundamentall* before the Definition; els it is *mooveable*; and then no Christian hath where to rest. And if it be *immooveable*, as^b indeed it is, no Decree of a Councell, be it never so Generall, can alter *immooveable Verities*, no more than it can change *immooveable Natures*.

Therefore if the Church in a Councell define any thing, the thing defined is not *Fundamentall*, because the Church hath defined it; nor can be made so by the Definition of the Church, if it be not so in it selfe. For if the Church had this power, she might make a New Article of the Faith, *which the Learned among your selves deny*: For the *Articles of the Faith* cannot increase in *substance*, but onely in *Explication*^c. And for this, I'll be

judg'd by Bellarmine, ^e who disputing against Amb. Catharinus about the certainty of Faith, tels us, *That Divine Faith hath not its certainty, because 'tis Catholike, .i. common to the whole Church; but because it builds on the Authority of God, who is Truth it self, and can neither deceive, nor be deceived. And he addes, That the Probation of the Church can make it known to all, that the Object of Divine Faith is revealed from God, and therefore certaine, and not to be doubted; but the Church can adde no certainty, no firmenesse to the word of God revealing it.*

^a Resolutio Occami est, quoddam nec tota Ecclesia, nec Concilium Generale, nec summus Pontifex potest facere Articulum, quod non fuit Articulus. Sed in dubiis propositionibus potest Ecclesia determinare, an sint Catholicae, &c. Tamen sic determinando non facit quod sint Catholicae, quum prius essent ante Ecclesiae Determinationem, &c. Almain. in 3. D. 25. Q. 1.

^b Regula Fidei una omnino est, scilicet laicis immobilis, & irreformabilis. Tertul. de Virg. vel. cap. 1. In hac fide, &c. Nihil transmutare, &c. Athan. Epist. ad Iovin. de fide.

^c Occam. Almain. in 3. Sent. D. 25 q. 1.
^d Thom. 2. 2. q. 1. Ar. 7. C.

^e Fides Divina non ideo habet certitudinem, quia toti Ecclesiae communis est: sed quia nititur Autoritate Dei, qui nec falli, nec fallere potest, quum sit ipsa Veritas. L. 3. de Iustif. c. 3. S. Quod verò Concilium, Probatio Ecclesiae facit ut omnibus immutetur Objectum (Fidei Divina) esse revelatum à Deo, & propter hoc certum & indubitatum; non autem tribuit firmitatem verbo Dei aliquid revelantis. Ibid. S. At inquit,

Nor

NUM. 6.

^a Scotus in I.
Sent. D. II. q. I.

Nor is this hard to be farther proved out of your owne Schoole; For ^a Scotus professeth it in this very particular of the Greeke Church: If there be (saith he) a true reall difference betweene the Greekes and the Latines, about the Point of the Procession of the Holy Ghost, then either they, or we be verely and indeed Hereticks. And he speakes this of the old Greekes, long before any Decision of the Church in this Controversie: For his instance is in S. Basil, and Greg. Nazianz. on the one side, and S. Jerome, Augustine, and Ambrose, on the other. And who dares call any of these Hereticks? is his challenge. I deny not, but that Scotus adds there, That howsoever this was before, yet *ex quo*, from the time that the Catholike Church declared it, it is to be held, as of the substance of Faith. But this cannot stand with his former Principle, if he intend by it, That whatsoever the Church defines, shall be *ipso facto*, and for that Determination's sake Fundamentall. For if before the Determination (supposing the Difference reall) some of those Worthies were truly Hereticks, (as he confesses) then somewhat made them so. And that could not be the Decree of the Church, which then was not: Therefore it must be somewhat really false, that made them so; and fundamentally false, if it made them He-

^b Bellarm. L. 2. de Conc. Auth. c. 12. Concilia cum definiunt, non faciunt aliquid esse infallibilis veritatis sed declarant, Explicare, Bonavent. in 1. d. II. A. I. q. I. ad finem. Explanare, declarare, Tho. 1. q. 36. A. 2. ad 2. & 2. 2. q. 1. A. 10. ad 1. Quid unquam aliud (Ecclesia) Conciliorum Decretis enisa est, nisi ut quod antea simpliciter credebatur, hoc idem postea diligentius crederetur. Vin. Lyr. cont. har. c. 32.

reticks against the Foundation. But Scotus was wiser, than to intend this. It may be, he saw the streame too strong for him to swim against, therefore he went on with the doctrine of the Time, That the Churches Sentence is of the substance of Faith; But meant not to betray the truth: For he goes no further than Ecclesia declaravit, since the Church hath declared it, which is the word that is used by diverse^b.

Now

Now the ^a Master teaches, and the ^b Schollers too, That every thing which belongs to the Exposition or Declaration of another, *intus est*, is not another contrary thing, but is contained within the Bowels, and nature of that which is interpreted: from which, if the *Declaration* depart, it is faulty and erroneous, because instead of Declaring, it gives another, and contrary ^c sense. Therefore, when the Church declares any thing in a Councell, either that which she declares, was *intus*, or *extrâ*, in the *Nature* and *verity* of the thing, or out of it. If it were *extrâ*, without the nature of the thing declared, then the Declaration of the thing is false, and so, farre from being *Fundamentall* in the *Faith*^d. If it were *intus*, within the *Compassse* and nature of the thing, though not open and apparent to every eye, then the *Declaration* is true, but not otherwise *Fundamentall*, than the thing is, which is declared: for that which is *intus*, cannot be larger or deeper than that in which it is; if it were, it could not be *intus*. Therefore nothing is simply *Fundamentall*, because the Church declares it, but because it is so in the nature of the thing, which the Church declares.

And it is a slight, and poore Evasion that is commonly used, that the *Declaration* of the Church makes it *Fundamentall*, *quoad nos*, in respect of us; for it doth not that neither: For no respect to us can varie the *Foundation*. The Churches Declaration can binde us to peace, and externall Obedience, where there is not expresse Letter of *Scripture*, and sense agreed on; but it cannot make any thing *Fundamentall* to us, that is not so in its owne nature.

NUM. 7.

^a Sent. 1. D. 11.^b Alb. Mag. in

1. Sent. D. 11

Art. 7.

^c Hoc semper, nec

quicquam præce-

rea, Vin. Lyr.

c. 32.

^d In novâ Hæresi Veritas prius erat de Fide, etsi non ita declarata. Scotus in 1. D. 11. q. 1. in fine. Hæretici multa quæ erant implicita fidei nostræ, compulerunt explicare. Bonavent. in 1. D. 11. A. 1. Q. 1. ad finem. Tho. 1. q. 36. A. 2. ad 2. Quamvis Apostolica Sedes, aut Generale Concilium de Hæresi censere possit, non tamen ideo Assertio aliqua erit Hæresis, quia Ecclesia definitur, sed quia Fidei Catholica repugnat. Ecclesia siquidem sua definitione non facit talem Assertionem esse Hæresin, quin etiam ipsa non definitur, esset Hæresis, sed id efficit ut patet, &c. Alphons. à Castro L. 1. Advers. Hæres. c. 8. fol. 21. D.

NUM. 8.

nature. For if the Church can so adde, that it can by a Declaration *make a thing* to be *Fundamentall* in the faith, that was not, then it can *take a thing* away from the *Foundation*, and make it by Declaring, not to be *Fundamentall*; which all men grant, no power of the Church can doe. ^c For the power of adding any thing contrary, and of detracting any thing necessary, are alike forbidden, ^{*} and alike denied. Now nothing is more apparent, then this, to the eye of all men, That the *Church of Rome* hath determined, or declared, or defined (call it what you will) very many things, that are not in their owne nature *Fundamentall*; and therefore neither are, nor can be made so by her adjudging them. Now to all this Discourse, That the Church hath not power to make any thing *Fundamentall* in the Faith, that *intrinsically*, and in its owne nature is not such, A. C. is content to say nothing.

NUM. 9.

2. For the second, That it is proved by this place of S. Augustine, That all Poynts defined by the Church are *Fundamentall*. You might have given me that Place cited in the Margin, and eased my paines to seeke it; but it may be there was somewhat in concealing it. For you doe so extraordinarily right this Place, that you were loth (I thinke) any body should see, how you wrong it. The place of S. Augustine is this, against the *Pelagians*, about Remission of Ori-

ginall sinne in Infants: ^{*} This is a thing founded; An erring Disputer is to be borne with in other Questions not diligently digested, not yet made firme by full Authority of the Church, there error is to be borne with: but it ought not to goe so farre, that it should labour to shake the Foundation it selfe of the Church. This is

^c August. Serm. 14. de verb. Apost. c. 12. Fundata res est. In aliis Questionibus non diligenter digestis, nondum plena Ecclesia Autoritate firmatis ferendus est Disputator errans: ibi ferendus est error; non tantum progredi debet, ut etiam Fundamentum ipsum Ecclesia quate-re moliatur.

^c Ecclesia non amputat necessaria, non apponit superflua. Vin. Lit. c. 32.
^f Deut. 4. 2.
^{*} Thom. Supp. q. 6. A. 6. C.

is the Place : but it can never follow out of this Place (I thinke) *That every thing defined by the Church is Fundamental.*

For first, he speaks of a *Foundation of Doctrine* NUM. 10. in *Scripture*, not a *Church definition*. This appears: for, few lines before, he tels us, ^b *There was a Question moved to S. Cyprian, Whether Baptisme was concluded to the eight Day, as well as Circumcision? And no doubt was made then of the beginning of sin, and that a out of this thing, about which no Question was mooved, that Question that was made, was Answered. And againe, That S. Cyprian tooke that which he gave in answer from the Foundation of the Church, to confirme a stone that was shaking.* Now S. Cyprian in all the Answer that he gives, hath not one word of any Definition of the Church : therefore *ea res*, That thing by which he answered, was a *Foundation of prime, and settled Scripture Doctrine*, not any *Definition of the Church* : Therefore, that which he tooke out of the *Foundation of the Church*, to fasten the stone that shooke, was not a *Definition of the Church*, but the *Foundation of the Church it selfe, the Scripture*, upon which it is builded : as appeareth in the ^f *Milevitane Councell* ; where the *Rule*, by which *Pelagius* was condemned, is the *Rule of Scripture* ; Therefore *Saint Augustine* goes on in the same sense, That the *Disputer* is not to be borne any longer, that shall ^h endeavour to shake the *Foundation it selfe*, upon which the whole Church is grounded.

^c *Origine Peccati.*

^d *Ex cā re, unde nulla erat Quaestio soluta est exorta Quaestio.*

^e *Hoc de Fundamento Ecclesie sumpsit ad confirmandum Latidem nutantem.*

^f *Concil. Milevit. c. 2.*

^g *Rom. 5. 15.*

^h *Vt Fundamentum ipsum Ecclesie quaterne molitur.*

Secondly, if *S. Augustine* did meane by *Founded*, and *Foundation*, the *definition of the Church*, because of these words, *This thing is Founded, this is made firm by full Authority of the Church*; and the words following these, *to shake the foundation of the Church* ; yet it can never follow out of any, or all these *Circumstances* (and these

NUM. 11.

^c 1 Tim. 3. 15.

^d Mos fundamē-
firmus. S. Aug.
Ep. 28.

^e Staple. Rebell.
cont. 4. q. 3. A. 1.

^f *Quæ quidem, si tam manifesta monstratur, ut in dubium venire non possit, preponenda est omnibus illis rebus, quibus in Catholica teneor. Ita si aliquid apertissimum in Evangelio. S. Aug. contra Fund. c. 4.*

are all) *That all Poynts defined by the Church, are Fundamentall in the faith.* For first, no man denies, but the Church is a ^c *Foundation* ; That things defined by it, are founded upon it : And yet hence it cannot follow, That the thing, that is so founded, is Fundamentall in the Faith : For things may be ^d *founded upon Humane Authority*, and be very certaine, yet not Fundamentall in the Faith Nor yet can it follow, *This thing is founded, therefore every thing determined by the Church, is founded.* Again that which followes, That those things are not to be opposed, which are made firme by full Authority of the Church, cannot conclude, they are therefore Fundamentall in the Faith. For full Church Authority (alwayes the time that included the *Holy Apostles* being past by, and not comprehended in it) is but *Church Authority*; and *Church Authority*, when it is at full sea is not simply ^e *Divine*, therefore the Sentence of it not *fundamentall* in the Faith. And yet no erring Disputer may be endured to shake the *foundation*, which the Church in Councell layes. But *plaine Scripture* with *evident sense*, or a full *Demonstrative Argument* must have Roome, where a wrangling and erring Disputer may not be allowed it. And ther's ⁱ neither of these, but may Convince the Definition of the Councell, if it be ill founded. And the *Articles*

of the faith may easily proove it is not Fundamentall, if indeed, and verily it be not so.

NUM. 12.

And I have read some body that sayes (is it not you?) *That things are fundamentall in the Faith two wayes* : One, in *their Matter*, such as are all things which be so in themselves; The other, in *the Manner*, such as are all things, that the Church hath Defined, and determined to be of *Faith* : And that so, some things

things that are *de modo*, of the manner of being, are of Faith. But in plaine truth, this is no more, then if you should say, some things are *Fundamentall* in the faith, and some are not. For wrangle while you will, you shall never be able to proove, that any thing, which is but *de modo*, a consideration of the manner of being only, can possibly be *Fundamentall* in the faith.

And since you make such a *Foundation* of this Place, I will a little view the Mortar, with which it is laid by you. It is a venture, but I shall finde it ^a *un-*

tempered. Your Assertion is: *All poynts defined by the Church, are Fundamentall*. Your prooff, this Place: *Be-*

cause that is not to be shaken, which is settled by ^b *full Authority of the Church*. Then (it seemes) your mean-

ing is, that this poynt there spoken of, *The remission of Originall sinne in Baptisme of Infants*, was defined, when S. Augustine wrote this, by a full Sentence of a

Generall Council. First if you say it was; ^c *Bellarmino* will tell you, it is false; and that the *Pelagian Heresie* was never condemned in an *Oecumenicall Council*,

but only in *Nationalls*. But *Bellarmino* is deceived: For while the *Pelagians* stood out impudently against *Nationall Councils*, some of them defended

Nestorius, which gave occasion to the first ^d *Ephesine Council* to Excommunicate, and depose them. And yet this will not serve your turne for this Place. For

S. Augustine was then dead; and therefore could not meane the Sentence of that Council in this place. Secondly, if you say, it was not then Defined in

an *Oecumenicall Synode*, *Plena auctoritas Ecclesie*, the full Authority of the Church there mentioned, doth not

stand properly for the Decree of an *Oecumenicall Council*; but for some *Nationall*; as this was condemned in a ^e *Nationall Council*: And then the full

Authority of the Church here, is no more then the full

NUM. 13.

^a Ezek. 13. 11.

^b *Plena Ecclesie Auctoritate.*

^c *L. 2. de Auctor. Concil. c. 5. S. A. solis particularibus.*

^d *Can. 1. & 4.*

^e *Concil. Milev. Can. 2.*

† Nay, if your
owne *Capellus*
be true, *De Ap.*
pell, Eccl, Afric.
c. 2. n. 5. It was
not a Provinci-
all of *Numidia*,
not a Plenary of
Africk.

Authority of this Church of † *Africk*. And I hope that Authority doth not make all Points defined by it to be *Fundamentall*. You will say, yes : if that Councell be confirmed by the Pope. And then I must ever wonder, why *S. Augustine* should say *The full Authority of the Church*, and not bestow one word upon the Pope, by whose Authority only that Councell, as all other, have their fulnesse of Authority in your Iudgement. An inexpiable Omision ; if this Doctrine concerning the Pope were true.

NUM. 14.
A.C. p. 45.

But here *A. C.* steps in againe to helpe the *Le-suite*, and he tells us, over and over againe, *That all points made firme by full Authority of the Church, are Fundamentall*, so, firme he will have them, and therefore *fundamentall*. But I must tell him : That first, 'tis one thing in Nature, and Religion too, to be firme ; and another thing to be *fundamentall*. These two are not Convertible : 'Tis true, that every thing that is *fundamentall*, is firme : But it doth not follow, that every thing that is firme, is *fundamentall*. For many a *Superstructure* is exceeding firme, being fast, and close joyned to a sure foundation, which, yet no man will grant, is *fundamentall*. Besides, what soever is *fundamentall* in the faith, is *fundamentall* to the Church, which is one by the unity^a of faith. Therefore if every thing Defined by the Church be *fundamentall* in the faith ; then the Churches Definition is the Churches Foundation. And so, upon the matter, the Church can lay her owne foundation, and then, the Church must be in absolute and perfect Being, before so much as her Foundation is laide. Now this is so absurd for any man of learning to say, that by and by after, *A. C.* is content to affirm, not only, that the *prima Credibilia*, the Articles of Faith

^a *Almain. in 3.*
Sent. Dis. 25. q.
1. A Fide enim
una Ecclesia di-
citur una.

but

but all which so pertaines to Supernaturall, Divine, and Infallible Christian Faith, as that thereby Christ doth dwell in our hearts, &c. is the Foundation of the Church under Christ the Prime Foundation. And here he's out againe.

For first, all which pertaines to Supernaturall, Divine, and Infallible Christian Faith, is not by and by ^b Fundamentall in the Faith to all men. And secondly, the whole Discourse here is concerning Faith, as it is taken Objectivè, for the Object of Faith, and thing to be Beleeved; but that Faith by which Christ is said to dwell in our hearts, is taken Subjectivè, for the Habit and Act of Faith. Now to confound both these in one period of speech, can have no other ayme, than to confound the Reader.

But to come closer both to the Jesuite, and his Defender A. C. If all Poynts made firme by full Authority of the Church be Fundamentall, then they must grant, that every thing determined by the Councell of Trent, is Fundamentall in the Faith. For with them 'tis firme and Catholike, which that Councell Decrees. Now that Councell decrees,

^b That Orders collated by the Bishop are not void, though they be given without the Consent or calling of the People, or of any secular Power. And yet they can

produce no Authour that ever acknowledged this Definition of the Councell Fundamentall in the Faith. 'Tis true, I do not grant, that the Decrees of this Councell are made by full Authority of the Church: but they do both grant and maintaine it; And therefore 'tis *Argumentum ad hominem*, a good Argument against them, that a thing so defined may

^b *Aliquid pertinet ad Fidem dupliciter. Uno modo directè, sicut ea quæ nobis sunt principalitèr divinitus tradita, ut Deum esse Trinum, &c. Et circa hæc opinari falsum hoc ipso inducit Hæresin, &c. Alio modo indirectè. Ex quibus consequitur aliquid contrarium Fidei, &c. Et in his aliquis potest falsum opinari absque periculo Hæresis, donec Sequela illa ei immutetur, &c. Tho. p. 1. q. 32. A. 4. C. There are things Necessary to the Faith: and things which are but Accessory, &c. Hooker L. 3. Eccles. Pol. §. 3.*

^b *Si quis dixerit Ordines ab Episcopis collatos sine populi vel potestatis secularis consensu aut vocatione irritos esse, Anathema sit. Con. Trid. Sess. 23. Can. 7.*

be firme, for so this is; and yet not *Fundamentall*, for so this is not.

NUM. 15.
A.C. p.45.

But A.C. tells us further, That if one may deny, or doubtfully dispute against any one Determination of the Church, then he may against another, and another, and so against all; since all are made firme to us by one and the same Divine Revelation, sufficiently applied by one and the same full Authority of the Church; which being weakened in any one, cannot be firme in any other. First A.C. might have acknowledged that he borrowed the former part of this out of ^a *Vin. Lir.*

^a *Cont. Her. c. 31. Abdicatâ enim qualibet parte Catholici Dogmatis, alia quoq; atque item alia, &c. Quid aliud ad extremum sequitur, nisi ut totum pariter repudietur?*

And as that Learned Father uses it, I subscribe to it, but not as A.C. applies it. For *Vincentius* speaks there de *Catholico Dogmate*, of Catholike Maximes:

S. 33. N. 21.

mination of the Church. Now Catholike Maximes, which are properly *Fundamentall*, are certaine Prime Truths deposited with the Church, and not so much determined by the Church, as published and manifested, and so made firme by her to us.

^b *Ecclesia Depositorum apud se Dogmatum Custos, &c. Deniq; quid unquam Conciliorum Decretis enisa est, nisi, ut quod antea simpliciter credebatur, hoc idem postea diligentius crederetur, &c. Vin. Lir. cont. Hares. c. 32.*

For so ^b *Vincentius* expressly. Where, all that the Church doth, is but, *ut hoc idem quod antea*, that the same thing may be believed, which was before Believed, but with more light, and cleerenesse, and (in that sense) with more firme-

nesse, than before. Now in this sense, give way to a *Disputator errans*, every cavilling Disputer to deny, or quarrell at the Maximes of Christian Religion, any one, or any part of any one of them; and why may he not then take liberty to do the like of any other, till he have shaken all? But this hinders not the Church her selfe, nor any appointed by the Church to examine her owne *D rees*, and to

see

see that she keepe *Dogmata deposita*, the Principles of Faith unblemished, and uncorrupted. For if she do not so, but that ^c *Novitia veteribus*, new Doctrines bee added to the old; the Church, which is *Sacrarium Veritatis*, the *Repository* of Verity, may be changed in *lupanar errorum*, I am loth to English it. By the Church then this may, nay it ought to be done, however, every wrangling Disputer may neither deny, nor doubtfully dispute, much lesse obstinately oppose the Determinations of the Church, no nor where they are not *Dogmata Depositata*, these deposited Principles. But if he will be so bold to deny or dispute the Determinations of the Church; yet that may be done without shaking the *Foundation*, where the *Determinations* themselves belong but to the *Fabricke*, and not to the *Foundation*. For a whole *Frame* of *Building* may be shaken, and yet the *Foundation*, where it is well lay'd, remaine firme. And therefore after all, *A. C.* dares not say, *the Foundation is shaken*, *but onely in a sort*. And then 'tis as true, that *in a sort* it is not shaken.

2. For the second part of his Argument, *A. C.* must pardon me, if I dissent from him. For first, all *Determinations of the Church* are not made firme to us by one and the same *Divine Revelation*. For some *Determinations* of the Church are made firme to us, per ^a *chirographum Scripturae*, by the Hand-writing of the Scripture, and that's Authentick indeed. Some other Decisions, yea and of the Church too, are made, or may be (if ^b *Stapleton* informe us right) without an evident, nay without so much as a probable Testimony of Holy-Writ.

^c Vin. Lit. cont. l. 1. c. 31. *Impiorum & turpium Errorum Lupanar: ubi erat ante castre & incorrupte Sacrarium Veritatis.*

A. C. p. 46.

NUM. 16.

^a Vin. Lit. cont. *Her. c. 32.*

^b *Relect. cont. 4. q. 1. Art. 3. Eiamsi nullo Scripturarum, aut evidenti, aut probabili Testimonio, &c.*

But

Non potest aliquid certum esse certitudine fidei, nisi aut immediate continetur in Verbo Dei, aut ex Verbo Dei per evidentem consequentiam deducatur. Bellar. L. 3. de Justifica: c. 8. §. 2.

But ' Bellarmine fals quite off in this, and confesses in expresse termes, *That nothing can be certaine by Certainty of Faith, unlesse it be contained immediately in the Word of God: Or be deduced out of the Word of God by evident Consequence.* And if nothing can be so certaine, then certainly no Determination of the Church it selfe, if that Determination be not grounded upon one of these: either expresse Word of God, or evident Consequence out of it. So here's little Agreement in this great Point betweene Stapleton and Bellarmine. Nor can this be shifted off, as if Stapleton spake of the *Word of God written*, and Bellarmine of the *Word of God unwritten* (as he calls Tradition.) For Bellarmine treats there of the knowledge which a man hath of the Certainty of his owne Salvation. And I hope *A. C.* will not tell us, There's any Tradition extant unwritten, by which particular men may have assurance of their severall Salvations. Therefore Bellarmine's whole Disputation there is quite beside the matter: Or els he must speake of the *Written Word*, and so lie crosse to Stapleton, as is mention'd. But to returne. If *A. C.* will, he may, but I cannot believe, That a Definition of the Church, which is made by the expresse Word of God, and another which is made without so much, as a *probable Testimony* of it, or a *cleare Deduction* from it, are made firme to us, by one and the same Divine Revelation. Nay I must say in this case, that the one Determination is firme by Divine Revelation, but the other hath no Divine Revelation at all, but the Churches Authority onely.

2. Secondly, I cannot believe neither, *That all Determinations of the Church are sufficiently applied by one and the same full Authority of the Church.* For the Authority

Authority of the Church, though it be of the same fulnesse in regard of it self, and of the Power, which it commits to *Generall Councils* lawfully called: yet it is not alwayes of the same fulnesse of knowledge, and sufficiency: nor of the same fulnesse of Conscience, and integrity to apply *Dogmata Fidei*, that which is Dogmaticall in the Faith. For instance, I thinke you dare not deny but the *Councell of Trent* was lawfully called, and yet I am of opinion, that few, even of your selves, believe that the *Councell of Trent* hath the same fulnesse with the *Councell of Nice*, in all the fore-named kinds, or degrees of fulnesse. Thirdly, suppose That all Determinations of the Church are made firme to us by one and the same Divine Revelation, and sufficiently applied by one and the same full Authority; yet it will not follow, that they are all alike *Fundamentall in the Faith*. For I hope *A. C.* himselfe will not say, that the Definitions of the Church are in better condition, than the Propositions of *Canonicall Scripture*. Now all Propositions of *Canonicall Scripture* are alike firme, because they all alike proceed from *Divine Revelation*: but they are not all alike *Fundamentall in the Faith*. For this Proposition of Christ to *S. Peter*, and *S. Andrew*, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men^a, is as firme a Truth, as that which he delivered to his Disciples, That he must die, and rise againe the third day^b. For both proceed from the same *Divine Revelation*, out of the mouth of our Saviour, and both are sufficiently applied by one and the same full Authority of the Church, which receives the whole Gospell of *S. Matthew* to be *Canonicall and infalible Scripture*. And yet both these Propositions of Christ are not alike *Fundamentall in the Faith*. For I dare say, No man shall be saved (in the ordinary way of salvation) that believes

^a S. Matth. 4.19^b S. Matth. 16.21

not the *Death* and the *Resurrection of Christ*. And I believe *A. C.* dares not say, that No man shall be saved, into whose Capacity it never came, that *Christ* made *S. Peter* and *Andrew* *fishers of men*. And yet should he say it, may should he shew it *sub amulo Piscatoris*, no man will believe it, that hath not made shipwrack of his *Common Notion*. Now if it be thus betweene Proposition and Proposition issuing out of *Christ's* own Mouth; I hope it may well be so also betweene even *Iust* and *True* Determinations of the Church, that supposing them alike *true* and *firme*; yet they shall not be alike *Fundamentall* to all mens believe.

F. Secondly, I required to know, what Points the Bishop would account *Fundamentall*. He said, all the Points of the Creed were such.

§. II.
NUM. I.

^a Tertull. *Apol. contra Gentes*, c. 47. *de veland. virg.* c. 1. *S. August. Serm. 15. de Temp. cap. 2.* *Rufin. in Symb. apud Cyprian.* p. 357.
^b Alb. Mag. in 1. *Sent. D. 11. A. 7.*

^c Concil. Trident. Sess. 3.

^d Bonavent. *ibid.* Dub. 2. §. 3. *in literam.*

^e Thom. 2. 2e. q. 1. Art. 7. c.

^f Bellar. *L. 4. de Verb. Dei non Script.* c. 11. §. Pri^{us} est.

B. Against this I hope you except not. For since the^a *Fathers* make the Creed the Rule of Faith; ^b since the agreeing sense of Scripture with those Articles are the two Regular Precepts, by which a Divine is governed about the Faith; since your owne Councell of^c *Trent* decrees, That it is that Principle of Faith, in which all that professe Christ, doe necessarily agree, & *Fundamentum firmum & unicum*, not the *firme* alone, but the onely Foundation, since it is Excommunication ^d *ipso jure*, for any man to contradict the Articles contained in that Creed; since the whole Body of the Faith is so contained in the Creed, as that the^e substance of it was believ'd even before the comming of Christ, though not so expressly as since in the number of the Articles, since^f *Bellarmino* confesses, That all things simply necessary for all mens salvation are in the Creed, and the Decalogue; what reason

reason can you have to except? And yet for all this, *everything* *Fundamentall* is not of a like nearenesse to the *Foundation*, nor of equall *Primenesse* in the Faith. And my granting the *Creed* to be *Fundamentall*, doth not deny, but that there are ^s *quedam prima* ^{Tho. 2. 2. q. 1.} *Credibilia*, certaine prime Principles of Faith, in the ^{A. 7. C.} bosome whereof all other *Articles* lay wrapped and folded up: One of which *since Christ*, is that of ^b *S. Iohn*. Every spirit that confesseth Iesus Christ come in the flesh, is of God. And one, both before the comming of Christ, and *since*, is that of *S. Paul*: ⁱ *He that comes* ^{Heb. 11. 6.} to God, must believe that God is, and that he is a rewarder of them that seeke him.

Here *A. C.* tells you, That either I must meane that ^{NUM. 2.} those Points are onely *Fundamentall*, which are expressed ^{A. C. p. 46.} in the *Creed*; or those also which are infolded. If I say, those onely which are expressed, then (saith he) to believe the *Scriptures* is not *Fundamentall*, because 'tis not expressed. If I say, those which are infolded in the *Articles*, then some *unwritten Church Traditions* may be accounted *Fundamentall*. The truth is, I said, and say still, that all the Points of the *Apostles Creed*, as they are there expressed, are *Fundamentall*. And therein I say no more, than some of your best Learned have said before me. But I never either said, or meant, That they onely are *Fundamentall*; That they are ^a *Fundamentum* ^{Conc. Trident. Sess. 3.} *unicum*, the only Foundation, is the Councell of *Trent's*; 'tis not mine. Mine is, That the Beliefe of *Scripture* to be the Word of God, and infallible, is an equall, or rather ^b a preceding Prime Principle of Faith, with, or to the whole Body of the *Creed*. And this agrees (as before I told the *Jesuite*) with one of your owne great Masters, *Albertus Magnus* ^b, who is not farre from that Proposition in *terminis*. So here the very *Foundation* of *A. C's* Dilemma fals off. For I say not, ^{G 2} That

^b In I. Sent. D.
II. A. 7. Regu-
la Fidei: est con-
cors Scriptura-
rum sensus cum
Articulis Fidei:
Quia illis du-
bus regularibus
Præceptis regi-
tur Theologus.

That *only* the Points of the *Creed* are *Fundamentall*, whether *expressed*, or *not expressed*. That all of them are, *that I say*. And yet though the *Foundation* of his *Dilemma* be fallen away, I will take the boldnesse to tell *A. C.* That if I had said, That those *Articles only* which are expressed in the *Creed*, are *Fundamentall*, it would have beene hard to have excluded the *Scripture*, upon which the *Creed* it selfe in every Point is grounded. For nothing is supposed to shut out its owne *Foundation*. And if I should now say, that some *Articles* are *Fundamentall* which are infolded in the *Creed*, it would not follow, that therefore some *unwritten Traditions* were *Fundamentall*. Some *Traditions* I deny not true and firme, and of great, both *Authority*, and *Use* in the Church, as being *Apostolicall*, but yet not *Fundamentall* in the *Faith*. And it would be a mighty large fold, which should lap up *Traditions* within the *Creed*. As for *that Tradition*, That the *Bookes of holy Scriptures* are *Divine*, and *Infallible* in every part, I will handle that when I come to the proper place* for it.

¶ 16. N. 1.

F. *I asked how then it happened (as M. Rogers saith) that the English Church is not yet resolved, what is the right sense of the Article of Christs Descending into Hell.*

§. 12.
NUM. I.

¶ Art. 3.

B. The *English Church* never made doubt (that I know) what was the sense of *that Article*. The words are so plaine, they beare their meaning before them. Shee was content to put that ² *Article* among those, to which she requires *Subscription*, not as doubting of the sense, but to prevent the Cavils of some, who had beene too busie in *Crucifying that Article*, and in making it all one with
the

the *Article* of the *Crosse*, or but an *Exposition* of it.

And surely for my part, I think the Church NUM. 2.
of *England* is better resolved of the right sense of this
Article, then the *Church* of *Rome*, especially if shee
must be tryed by her Writers, as you try the *Church*
of *England* by *M. Rogers*. For, you cannot agree,
whether this *Article* be a meere *Tradition*, or whe-
ther it hath any *Place* of *Scripture* to varrant it.

^a *Scotus*, and ^b *Stapleton* allow it no foot-
ing in *Scripture*, but ^c *Bellarmino* is re-
solute, that this *Article* is every where
in *Scripture*, and ^d *Thomas* grants as
much for the whole *Creed*. The *Church*
of *England* never doubted it, and *S. c. Aug-*
ustine prooves it.

^a *Scotus* in 1. D. 11. q. 1.

^b *Stapleton* *Relect. Con.* 5. q. 5.
Art. 1.

^c *Bellarm.* 4. de *Christo.* c. 6. &
12. *Scripturae passim hoc docent.*

^d *Thom.* 2. 24. q. 1. A. 9. ad 1.

^e *S. Aug.* Ep. 99.

And yet againe, you are different for the sense. NUM. 3.

For you agree not, Whether the Soule of *Christ*, in
triduo mortis, in the time of his Death, did go downe
into Hell really, and was present there; or virtually
and by effects only. For ^s *Thomas* holds the first,
and ^b *Durand* the later. Then you agree not, Whe-
ther the Soule of *Christ* did descend really and in
essence into the lowest pit of Hell, and Place of the
Damned, as ⁱ *Bellarmino* once held probable, and
proved it; or really only into that place, or Region
of Hell, which you call *Limbum Patrum*, and then, but
virtually from thence into the *Lower Hell*; to which

^e *Tho.* p. 3. q. 52.
A. 2. c. per suam
essentiam.

^b *Dur.* in 3. d. 22.

q. 3.
ⁱ *Bellar.* L. 4. de
Christo. c. 16.

^k *Bellarmino* reduces himselfe, and gives his reason,
because it is the ^l common Opinion of the Schoole. Now,
the Church of *England* takes the words, as they are
in the *Creed*, and believes them without farther Dis-
pute, and in that sense which the ancient *Primitive*
Fathers of the Church agreed in. And yet if any
in the Church of *England* should not be thoroughly
resolved in the sense of this *Article*; Is it not as law-
full

^k *Bellar.* *Recog.*
p. 11.

^l *Sequuntur*
enim. *Tho.* p. 3.
Q. 52. A. 2.

^m Non est pertinaciter asserendum, quin Anima Christi per alium modum nobis ignotum potuerit descendere ad Infernum: Nec nos negamus alium modum esse forsit an veriozem; sed fateamur nos illum ignorare. Durand. in 3. sent. Dist. 22. q. 3. Num. 9.

full for them to say (*I conceive thus, or thus of it*; yet if any other way of his Descent be found truer then this, I deny it not, but as yet I know no other) as it was for ^m Durand to say it, and yet not impeach the Foundation of the Faith.

F. The Bishop said, That M. Rogers was but a private man. But (*said I*) if M. Rogers (*writing as he did by publike Authority*) be accounted only a private man, &c.

§. 13.
NUM. I.

B. I said truth, when I said M. Rogers was a private man. And I take it, you will not allow every speech of every man, though allowed by Authority to have his Bookes Printed, to be the Doctrine of the Church of Rome. * This hath

* And this was an Ancient fault too, for S. Augustine checks at it in his time. *Noli colligere calumnias ex Episcoporum scriptis, sive Hillarii, sive Cypriani & Agrippini. Primum, quia hoc genus literarum ab Auctoritate Canonis distinguishendum est. Non enim sic leguntur tanquam ita ex iis testimonium proferatur, ut contra sentire non liceat, sicuti forte aliter sentirent, quam veritas postulat.* S. Aug. Ep. 48. &c. And yet these were farre greater men in their generations, then M. Rogers was.

beene oft complained of on both sides: *The imposing particular mens assertions upon the Church*: yet I see you meane not to leave it. And surely as Controversies are now handled (by some of your party) at this day, I may not say, it is the sense of the Article in hand, but I have long thought it a kinde of descent into Hell, to be conversant in them.

I would the Authors would take heed in time, and not seeke to blinde the People, or cast a mist before evident Truth, least it cause a finall descent to that place of Torment. But since you will hold this course, Stapleton was of greater note with you, then M. Rogers his exposition ^{or exp} of Notes upon the Articles of the Church of England is with us. And as he, so his Relection. And

And is it the Doctrine of the Church of Rome which Stapleton affirms, † *The Scripture is silent, that Christ descended into Hell, and that there is a Catholike, and an Apostolike Church?* If it be, then what will become of the Popes Supremacie over the whole Church? Shall he have his Power over the Catholike Church given him expressly in Scripture, in the ^a *Keyes, to enter, and in* ^b *Pasce, to seede when he is in, and when he had fed, to* ^c *Confirm*; and in all these *not to erre and faile in his Ministration*: And is the Catholike Church, in and over which he is to do all these great things, quite left out of the Scripture? Belike the *Holy Ghost* was carefull to give him his power; Yes in any case; but lest the assigning of his great Cure, the *Catholike Church*, to Tradition. And it were well for him, if he could so prescribe for what he now Claymes.

† Stapl. Cont. 5.
9. 5. c. 1.

^a S. Mat. 16. 19.
^b S. Ioh. 21. 15.
^c S. Luk. 22. 35.

But what if after all this, M. Rogers there sayes no such thing? As in truth, he doth not. His words are: ^d *All Christians acknowledge, He descended; but in the interpretation of the Article, there is not that consent, that were to be wished.* What is this to the Church of England, more then others? And againe ^e *Till we know the native and undoubted sense of this Article,* is M. Rogers (*We*) the Church of England? or rather his, and some others Iudgement, in the Church of England?

NUM. 2.

^d Rogers in Art.
Eccle. Angl.
Art. 3.

^e Ibid.

Now here A. C. will have somewhat againe to say, though God knowes; 'tis to little purpose. 'Tis, that the Jesuite urged M. Roger's Booke, because it was set out by Publike Authority: And because the Booke beares the Title of the Catholike Doctrine of the Church of England. A. C. may undoubtedly urge M. Rogers, if he please; But he ought not to say, that his Opinion is the Doctrine of the Church of England for neither of the Reasons by him expressed. First, not because his

NUM. 3.
A. C. p. 47.

Booke

Booke was publickly allowed. For many Bookes among them, as well as among us, have been Printed by publicke Authority, as containing nothing in them contrary to Faith and good manners, and yet containing many things in them of Opinion only, or private Judgement, which yet is farre from the avowed Positive Doctrine of the Church, the Church having as yet determined neither way by open Declaration upon the words, or things controverted. And this is more frequent among their Schoolemen, then among any of our Controversers, as is well knowne. Nor, secondly, because his Booke beares the Title of the Catholike Doctrine of the Church of England. For suppose the worst, and say, M. Rogers thought a little too well of his owne paines, and gave his Booke too high a Title, is his private Judgement therefore to be accounted the Catholike Doctrine of the Church of England? Surely no: No more then I should say, every thing said by * Thomas, or † Bonaventure, is Angelicall, or Seraphicall Doctrine, because one of these is stiled in the Church of Rome, Seraphicall, and the other, Angelicall Doctor. And yet their workes are Printed by Publicke Authority, and that Title given them.

* *Angelici D.
S. Tho. Summa.
† Celebratissimi
Parris Dom.
Bonaventura
Doctoris Seraphici in 3. L.
Sent. Disputata.*

NUM. 4.
A.C. p. 47.

Yea but our private Authors (saith A. C.) are not allowed (for ought I know) in such a like sort to expresse our Catholike Doctrine in any matter subject to Question. Here are two Limitations, which will goe farre to bring A. C. off, whatsoever I shall say against him. For first, let me instance in any private man, that takes as much upon him as M. Rogers doth, he will say, he knew it not, his Assertion being no other, then for ought he knowes. Secondly, If he be unwilling to acknowledge so much, he will answer, 'tis not just in such a like sort as M. Rogers doth it, that
is

is, perhaps, it is not the very Title of his Booke. But well then: Is there never a Private man *allowed in the Church of Rome to expresse your Catholike Doctrine in any matter subject to question*? What? not in any matter? Were not *Vega*, and *Soto* two private men? Is it not a matter subject to *Question*, to *great Question* in these Dayes, Whether a man may be certaine of his Salvation, *certitudine fidei*, by the certainty of Faith?

Doth not * *Bellarmino* make it a Controversie? And is it not a part of your

Catholike Faith, if it be determined in the

† *Councell of Trent*? And yet these two great *Fri:rs* of their time, *Dominicus Soto*, and *Andreas Vega*, were of contrary

Opinions; and both of them challenged the Decree of the Councell; and so consequent-

ly your Catholike Faith to be as each of them concluded; and both of them wrote Bookes to maintaine their Opinions, and both of their Bookes were published by Authority. And therefore I think 'tis *allow-*

ed in the Church of Rome to private men to expresse your Catholike Doctrine, and in a matter subject to Question. And

therefore also, if another man in the Church of Eng-

land, should be of a contrary Opinion to *M. Rogers*, and declare it under the Title of the Catholike Doctrine

of the Church of England, this were no more then *Soto*, and *Vega* did in the Church of Rome. And I, for my

part, cannot but wonder *A. C.* should not know it.

A. C. p. 47.

For he sayes, that for ought he knowes, Private men are not allowed so to expresse their Catholike Doctrine.

And in the same Question both *Catharinus*, and *Bellarmino*^b take on them, to expresse your Catholike Faith,

the one differing from the other, almost as much as *Soto*, and *Vega*, and perhaps in some respect

more.

* *Bellar. Lib. 3. de Justificat. c. 1. & 14.*

† *Hinc Concilio Catholici omnes ingenia sua, & judicia sponte sub-jiciunt. Bellar. 3. de Justif. c. 3. §. Sed Concilii Tridentini.*

^a *Hist. Concil. Trident. Lib. 2. p. 245 Edit. Lat. Leida. 1622.*

^b *Bellar. L. 3. de Justif. c. 3.*

F. But if M. Rogers be only a private man ; in what Book may we finde the Protestants publike Doctrine ? The Bishop answered, That to the Booke of Articles they were all sworne.

§. 14.
NUM. 1.

A. C. p. 47.

† And therefore
A. C. needs not
make such a
Noise about it,
as he doth, p. 48

B. What? Was I so ignorant to say, *The Articles of the Church of England were the Publike Doctrine of all the Protestants? Or, that all Protestants were sworne to the Articles of England,* as this speech seems to imply? Sure I was not. Was not the immediate speech before, of the *Church of England*? And how comes the Subject of the Speech to be varied in the next lines? Nor yet speake I this, as if other Protestants did not agree with the *Church of England* in the chiefest Doctrines, and in the maine Exceptions, which they joyntly take against the *Romane Church*, as appears by their severall Confessions. But if A. C. will say (as he doth) that because there was speech before of the *Church of England*, the Iesuite understood mee in a limited sense, and meant only the Protestants of the *English Church*; Bee it so ; ther's no great harme done † but this, that the Iesuite offers to enclose me too much. For I did not say, that the *Booke of Articles only* was the Continent of the *Church of Englands* publike Doctrine: She is not so narrow, nor hath she purpose to exclude any thing, which she acknowledges hers, nor doth she wittingly permit any Crossing of her publike Declarations; yet she is not such a shrew to her Children, as to deny her Blessing, or Denounce an *Anathema* against them, if some peaceably dissent in some Particulars remoter from the Foundation, as your owne Schoole men differ. And if the *Church of Rome*, since she grew to her greatness, had not beene so fierce in this Course, and too particular in Determining too many things,
and

and making them matters of *Necessary Beliefe*, which had gone for many hundreds of years before, only for things of *Pious Opinion*. *Christendome* (I perswade my selfe) had beene in happier peace at this Day, then I doubt, we shall ever live to see it.

Well, but *A. C.* will proove the *Church of England* a *Shrew*, and such a *Shrew*. For in her Booke* of *Canons* She *Excommunicates* every man, who shall hold any thing contrary to any part of the said *Articles*. So *A. C.* But surely these are not the very words of the *Canon*, nor perhaps the sense. Not the *Words*; for they are: *Whosoever shall affirme that the Articles are in any part superstitious, or erroneous, &c.* And perhaps not the sense. For it is one thing for a man to hold an *Opinion* privately within himselfe; and another thing boldly and publickly to affirme it. And againe, 'tis one thing to hold contrary to some part of an *Article*, which perhaps may bee but in the manner of Expression; and another thing positively to affirme, that the *Articles* in any part of them are *superstitious*, and *erroneous*. But this is, not the *Maine* of the *Businesse*: For though the *Church of England* Denounce *Excommunication*, as is^a before expressed; Yet She comes farre short of the *Church of Rome's* severity, whose *Anathemas* are not only for 39. *Articles*, but for very many more, *above one hundred in matter of *Doctrine*; and that in many *Poynts* as farre remote from the *Foundation*, though to the farre greater Rack of mens *Consciences*, they must be all made *Fundamentall*, if that *Church* have once *Determined* them: whereas the *Church of England* never declared, That every one of her *Articles* are *Fundamentall* in the *Faith*. For 'tis one thing to say: No one of them is *superstitious* or *erroneous*: And quite another to say: Every one of them is *fundamental*

NUM. 2.

A. C. p. 48.

* Can. 5.

* Can. 51

* Council. Trident.

A. C. p. 45.

and that in every part of it, to all mens Beliefe. Besides, the Church of England prescribes only to her owne Children, and by those Articles provides but for her owne peaceable Consent in those Doctrines of Truth. But the Church of Rome severely imposes her Doctrine upon the whole World under paine of Damnation.

F. And that the Scriptures only, not any unwritten Tradition, was the Foundation of their Faith.

§. 15.
NUM. 1.

B. The Church of England grounded her Positive Articles upon Scripture, and her Negative doe refute there, where, the thing affirmed by you, is not affirmed by Scripture, nor directly to be concluded out of it. And here not the Church of England only, but all Protestants, agree most truly, and most strongly in this, That the Scripture is sufficient to salvation, and con-

^a S. Basil. de verâ & piâ fide. Manifesta defectio Fidei est, importare quicquam eorum quæ scripta non sunt. S. Hilar. L. 2. ad. Const. Aug. Fidem tantum secundum ea quæ scripta sunt desiderantem, & hoc qui repudiat Antichristus est. & qui simulat, Anathema est. S. Aug. L. 2. de Doctr. Christian. c. 9. In iis quæ aperte in Scripturâ posita sunt, inveniuntur illa omnia quæ continent fidem, moresq; vivendi. And to this place Bellarm. L. 4. de verbo Dei in scripto. c. 11. faith, that S. Augustine speaks, de his Dogmatibus quæ necessaria sunt omnibus simpliciter, of those Points of faith, which are necessary simply for all men. So farre then he grants the question. And that you may know, it fell not from him on the suddaine, he had said as much before, in the beginning of the same Chapter, and here he confirms it againe. ^b Scotus Proleg. in sen. q. 2. Scriptura sufficienter continet Doctrinam necessariam Viatori. Thom. 2. 2æ. q. 1. A. 10. ad 1. In Doctrinâ (bristi & Apostolorum, veritas fidei est sufficienter explicata. And he speaks there of the written Word.

^c Scripturam Fundamentum esse, & columnam Fidei satemur in suo genere, i. e. in genere Testimoniorum. & in materia Credendorum. Releis. Con. 4. q. 1. Ar. 3. in fine.

taines in it all things necessary to it. The Fathers ^a are plaine, the Schoolemen not strangers in it. And have not we reason then to account it, as it is, The Foundation of our Faith? And ^c Stapleton himselfe, though an angry Opposite, confesses, That the Scripture is in some sort the Foundation of Faith, that is, in the nature of Testimony, and in the matter, or thing to be believed. And if the Scripture be the

Foundation, to which we are to goe for witnesse, if there

there be Doubt *about the Faith*; and in which we are to find the thing that is to be believed, *as necessary in the Faith*; we never did, nor never will refuse any *Tradition* that is *Universall*, and *Apostolike*, for the better *Exposition* of the *Scripture*; nor any *Definition of the Church*, in which she goes to the *Scripture*, for what she teaches, and thrusts nothing as *Fundamentall* in the *Faith* upon the world, but what the *Scripture* *fundamentally* makes *materiam Credendorum*, the substance of that which is to be believed, whether immediatly and expressly in words, or more remotely, till a cleare, and full *Deduction* draw it out.

Against the beginning of this Paragraph *A. C.* excepts. And first he sayes; 'Tis true, that the Church of England grounded her *Positive Articles* upon *Scripture*: NUM. 2.
A. C. p. 48. That is, 'tis true, if themselves may be competent Iudges in their owne Cause. But this by the leave of *A. C.* is true, without making our selves Iudges in our owne Cause. For that all the *Positive Articles* of the present Church of England are grounded upon *Scripture*, we are content to be judged by the joynt and constant Beliefe of the *Fathers*, which lived within the first foure or five hundred yeares after *Christ*, when the Church was at the best; and by the *Councils* held within those times; and to submit to them in all those Points of *Doctrine*. Therefore we desire not to be Iudges in our owne Cause. And if any whom *A. C.* calls a *Novellist*, can truly say, and maintaine this, he will quickly proove himselfe no *Novellist*. And for the *Negative Articles*, they refute, where the thing affirmed by you, is either not affirmed in *Scripture*, or not directly to be concluded out of it: Vpon this *Negative* ground *A. C.* inferres againe; That the *Baptisme* of *Infants* is not expressly (at least not evidently) affirmed in *Scripture*, nor directly (at least not A. C. p. 49.

demonstratively) concluded out of it. In which case he professes, he would gladly know, what can be answered to defend this doctrine, to be a Point of Faith necessary for the salvation of Infants. And in Conclusion, professes he cannot easily guesse what Answer can be made, unlesse we will acknowledge, Authority of Church-Tradition necessary in this Case.

NUM. 3.

And truly since A. C. is so desirous of an Answer, I will give it freely. And first in the Generall. I am no way satisfied with A. C. his Addition (*not expressly, at least not evidently*) what means he? If he speake of the Letter of the Scripture, then, whatsoever is expressly, is evidently in the Scripture; and so his Addition is vaine. If he speake of the Meaning of the Scripture, then his Addition is cunning. For many things are Expressly in Scripture, which yet in their Meaning are not evidently there. And what e're hee meane, my words are, That our Negative Articles refute that which is not affirmed in Scripture, without any Addition of Expressly, or Evidently. And he should have taken my words, as I used them. I like nor change, nor Addition, nor am I bound to either of A. C's making. And I am as little satisfied with his next Addition (*nor directly, at least not demonstratively concluded out of it.*) For are there not many things in Good Logicke concluded, directly, which yet are not concluded Demonstratively? Surely there are. For to be directly, or indirectly concluded flowes from the Moode or Forme of the Syllogisme: To be demonstratively concluded flowes from the Matter or Nature of the Propositions. If the Propositions be Prime and necessary Truths, the Syllogisme is demonstrative and scientificall, because the Propositions are such. If the Propositions be probable onely, though the Syllogisme be made in the clearest Moode, yet is the Conclusion

Conclusion no more. The Inference, or Consequence indeed is cleare and necessary, but the Consequent is but probable, or topically, as the Propositions were. Now my words were onely for a *Direct Conclusion*, and no more: though in this case I might give *A. C.* his Caution. For *Scripture* here is the thing spoken of. And *Scripture* being a *Principle*, and every *Text of Scripture* confessedly a *Principle* among all Christians, whereof no man ^a desires any farther proof: I would faine know, why that which is plainly and apparently, that is, by direct Consequence, proved out of *Scripture*, is not *Demonstratively* or *Scientifically* proved? If at least he think there can be any *Demonstration in Divinity*: and if there can be none, why did he add *Demonstratively*?

^a *Habitus enim Fidei ita se habet in ordine ad Theologiam, sicut se habet Habitus intellectus ad Scientias humanas.* M. Canus, L. 2. de Loc. c. 8.

NUM. 4.
A. C. p. 49.

Next in Particular; I answer to the Instance which *A. C.* makes, concerning the *Baptisme of Infants*. That it may be concluded *directly* (and let *A. C.* judge, whether not *demonstratively*?) out of *Scripture*, both that *Infants* ought to be baptized; and that *Baptisme* is necessary to their *Salvation*. And first, that *Baptisme is necessary to the Salvation of Infants* (in the ordinary way of the Church, without binding God to the use and means of that Sacrament, to which he hath bound us) [†] is expresse in *S. Iohn 3*. Except a man be borne againe of water,

[†] *S. Aug.* expressly of the Baptisme of Infants. L. 1. de Peccato. Mer. & Remiss. c. 30. Et L. 2. c. 27. Et L. 3. de Animâ & ejus Origine. c. 13. Nay they of the Romane Party which urge the Baptisme of Infants, as a matter of Faith, and yet not to be concluded out of *Scripture*; when they are not in eager pursuit of this controversie, but look upon truth with a more indifferent eye, confesse as much (even the Learned'st of them) as we ask. *Advertendum autem Salvatorem dum dicit [Nisi quis renatus, &c.] necessitatem imponere omnibus, ac prinde Parvulos debere veniri ex aqua & Spiritu.* Iansen. *Ham.* in *Euang.* c. 20. So here's Baptisme Necessary for Infants, and that Necessary imposed by our Saviour, and not by the Church onely. *Heretici nullo alio quam hoc Scripturæ testimonio probare possunt, Infantes esse baptizandos.* Mald. in *S. Ioh.* 3. 5. So *Maldonatus* confesses that the Hereticks (we know whom he meanes) can prove the Baptisme of Infants by no Testimony of *Scripture* but this: which speech implies, That by this Testimony of *Scripture* it is, and can be proved, and therefore not by Church-Tradition only. And I would faine know, why *Bellarmino*, L. 1. de Baptism. c. 8. §. 5. should bring three Arguments out of *Scripture* to prove the Baptisme of Infants [*Habemus in Scripturis tria argumenta, &c.*] if Baptisme cannot be proved at all out of *Scripture*, but only by the Tradition of the Church. And yet, this is not *Bellarmino's* way alone, but *Suarez's* in *Tho.* p. 3 q. 68. *Disput.* 25. Sect. 1. §. 2. *Ex Scripturâ possunt varia Argumenta sumi ad confirmandum Pædobaptismum.* Et similiter, &c. And *Greg.* de *Valentia*, L. de Bapt. Parvulorum c. 2. §. 1. And the Pope himselfe, *Innocent.* 3. L. 3. Decretal. Tit. 42. Cap. Majores. And they all jump with *S. Amb.* L. 10. *Epist.* 84. ad *Demetriadem* *Virginem*: who expressly affirms it; *Pædobaptismum esse Constitutionem Salvatoris*: And proves it out of *S. Joh.* 3. 5.

and

and the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdome of God. So, no Baptisme, no Entrance. Nor can Infants creepe in, any other ordinary way. And this is the received Opinion of all the Ancient Church of Christ^a. And secondly, That Infants ought to be baptized, is first

^a *Infantes reos esse Originalis peccati, & ideo baptizandos esse, Antiquam Fidei Regulam vocat. S. Aug. Ser. 8. de ver. Apost. c. 8. Et nemo vobis susurret doctrinas alienas, hoc Ecclesia semper habuit, semper tenuit, hoc à majorem fide recepit, &c. S. Aug. Ser. 10. de verb. Apost. c. 2. & S. Ambros. L. 10. Ep. 84. circa medium, Et S. Chrysost. Hom. de Adam & Eva. Hoc predicat Ecclesia Catholica ubique diffusa.*

^b *Egi causam eorum qui pro se loqui non possunt, &c. S. Aug. Sermon. 8. de verb. Apost. c. 8.*

plaine by evident and Direct Consequence out of Scripture. For if there be no Salvation for Infants in the ordinary way of the Church, but by Baptisme, and this appeare in Scripture, as it doth, then out of all Doubt, the Consequence is most evident out of that Scripture, That Infants are to be baptized, that their Salvation may be certaine. For they which cannot^b help themselves, must not be left onely to Extraordinary Helpes, of which wee

have no assurance, and for which wee have no warrant at all in Scripture, while wee in the meane time neglect the ordinary way, and meanes commanded by Christ. Secondly, 'tis very neare an Expression in Scripture it selfe. For when S. Peter had ended that great Sermon of his, *Act. 2.* he applies two comforts unto them, *Vers. 38. Amend your lives, and be baptized, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.* And then, *Vers. 39.* hee inferres, *For the promise is made to you, and to your children.* The Promise; what Promise? What? Why the Promise of Sanctification by the Holy Ghost. By what meanes? Why, by Baptisme. For 'tis expressly, *Be baptized, and ye shall receive.* And as expressly, *This promise is made to you, and to your children.* And therefore A. C. may finde it, if he will, That the Baptisme of Infants may be directly concluded

out

Act. 2. 38, 39.

out of Scripture. For some of his owne Party, ^a Ferus and ^b Salmeron, could both find it there. And so (if it will doe him any pleasure) he hath my Answer, which he saith, he would be glad to know.

^a *Nullum excipit, non Iudeum, non Gentilem, non Adultum, non Puerum. &c. Ferus in Act. 2. 39.*

^b *Et ad Filios vestros: quare debent consentire, quum ad usum rationis perveniunt, ad implenda promissa in Baptismo, &c. Salm. Tract. 14. upon the place.*

'Tis true, ^a Bellarmine presses a maine Place out of N U M. 5. S. Augustine, and he urges it hard.

S. ^b Augustine's words are, The Custome of our Mother the Church in Baptizing Infants, is by no meanes to be contemned, or thought superfluous; nor yet at all to be believed, unlesse it were

^a Bellar. L. 4. de Verbo Dei c. 9. §. 5.

^b S. Aug. Gen. ad Lit. c. 23. *Consuetudo Matris Ecclesie in Baptizandis parvulis nequaquam spernenda est, nec omnino credenda, nisi Apostolica esset Traditio.*

an Apostolicall Tradition. The Place is truly cited, but seemes a great deale stronger, than indeed it is. For first, 'tis not denyed, That this is an Apostolicall Tradition, and therefore to be believed. But secondly, not therefore onely. Nor doth S. Augustine say so, nor doth Bellarmine presse it that way. The truth is, it would have beene somewhat difficult to finde the Collection out of Scripture onely for the Baptisme of Infants, since they do not actually believe. And therefore S. Augustine is at *nec credenda nisi*, that this Custome of the Church had not been to be believed, had it not been an Apostolicall Tradition. But the Tradition being Apostolicall, led on the Church easily to see the necessary Deduction out of Scripture. And this is not the least use of Tradition, to lead the Church into the true meaning of those things which are found in Scripture, though not obvious to every eye there. And that this is S. Augustine's meaning, is manifest by himself, who best knew it. For when he had said, 'as he doth, That to baptize children, is *Antiqua fidei Regula*, the Ancient Rule of Faith, and the constant Tenet of the Church, yet he

Cur Antiquam fidei Regulam frangere conarur? S. Aug. Ser. 8. de ver. Apoc. c. 8. Hoc Ecclesia semper tenuit. Ib. Ser. 10. c. 23

doubts not to collect and deduce it out of *Scripture* also. For when *Pelagius* urged, That *Infants* needed not to be baptized, because they had no *Originall Sin*: *S. Augustine* relies not upon the Tenet of the Church

^a *Quid necessarium habuit Infans Christum, si non aegrotat?* *S. Matth. 9. 12.*

Quid est quod dicis, nisi ut non accedant ad Iesum? Sed ibi clamat Iesus. Sine Parvulos venire ad me. S. Aug. in the fore-cited places.

only, but argues from the Text thus.

^a *What need have Infants of Christ, if they be not sicke? For the sound need not the Physitian, S. Mat. 9. And againe, is not this said by Pelagius, ut non accedant ad Iesum? That Infants may not*

come to their Saviour? *Sed clamat Iesus, but Iesus*

^{*} *S. Marc. 10. 14. cries out, Suffer Little ones to come unto me, *S. Mar. 10.*

And all this is fully acknowledged by ^b *Calvine*, Namely, That all men acknowledge the Baptisme of Infants to descend from Apostolicall Tradition.

^b *Nullus est Scripter tam vetustus, qui non ejus Originem ad Apostolorum seculum pro certo referat. Calv. 4. Inst. c. 16 §. 8.*

[†] *Miserrimum asylum foret, si pro Defensione Pedobaptismi ad nullam Ecclesiae auctoritatem fugere cogermur, Calv. 4. Inst. c. 8. §. 16.*

[†] And yet that it doth not depend upon the bare and naked Authority of the Church. Which he speakes not in regard of Tradition, but in relation to such prooffe, as is to be made by necessary Consequence out of *Scripture* over and above Tradition.

As for Tradition, ^{*} I have said enough for that, and as much as *A. C.* where 'tis truly Apostolicall. And yet if any thing will please him, I will add this concerning this particular, The Baptizing of Infants. That the Church received this by Tradition from the Apostles. By Tradition. And what then? May it not directly be concluded out of *Scripture*, because it was delivered to the Church by way of Tradition? I hope *A. C.* will never say so. For certainly in Doctrinall things, nothing so likely to be a Tradition Apostolicall,

NUM. 6.

^{*} *§. 15. Num. 1. A. C. p. 49,*

^c *Orig. in Rom. 6. 6. tom. 2 p. 543. Pro hoc Ecclesia ab Apostolu Traditionem suscepit, etiā parvulis Baptismū dare. Et S. Aug. Ser. 10. de verb. Apol. c. 2. Hoc Ecclesia à Majorū fide percepit. And it is to be observed, that neither of these Fathers (nor I believe any other) say that the Church received it à Traditione solā, or à Majorum fide solā; as if Tradition did exclude collection of it out of *Scripture*.*

as

as that which hath a *root and a Foundation in Scripture. For Apostles cannot write, or deliver contrary, but subordinate, and subservient things.

*Yea, and Bellarmine himself avers, *Omnes Traditiones &c. contineri in Scripturis in universali. L. 4. de verb. Dei non scripto. c. 10 §. Sic etiam. And S. Basil. Sermon. de fide approves only those Agrapha, quæ non sunt aliena à piâ secundâ Scripturâ Sententiâ.*

F. I asked how he knew Scripture to be Scripture, and in particular, Genesis, Exodus, &c. These are believed to be Scripture, yet not proved out of any Place of Scripture. The Bishop said; That the Books of Scripture are Princip'es to be supposed, and needed not to be proved.

B. I did never love too curious a search into that which might put a man into a wheele, and circle him so long betweene proving Scripture by Tradition, and Tradition by Scripture, till the Divell finde a meanes to dispute him into Infidelity, and make him believe neither. I hope this is no part of your meaning. Yet I doubt this ^b Question, *How doe you know Scripture to be Scripture?* hath done more harme, than you will be ever able to helpe by Tradition. But I must follow that way which you draw me. And because it is so much insisted upon by you, and is in it self a matter of such Consequence, I will sift it a little farther.

§. 16.
NUM. 1.

^b Qui conantur fidem destruere sub specie Quaestionis difficilis, aut forte insolubilis, &c. Orig. 2. 35. in S. Matth.

^c To know that Scriptures are Divine, and infallible in every part, is a Foundation so necessary, as it it bee doubtfully question'd, all the Faith built upon Scripture falls to the ground. A. C. p. 47. Necessè est nôsse extare Libros aliquos verè Divinos. Bellarm. L. 4. de verb. Dei non scripto. c. 4. §. Quartò necesse. Et etiam libros qui sunt in manibus esse illos. Ibid. §. Sextò oportet.

Many men labouring to settle this great Principle in Divinity, have used diverse meanes to prove it. All have not gone the same way, nor all the right way. You cannot be right, that resolve Faith of the Scriptures, being the Word of God, into onely Tradition. For onely, and no other proove are equall. To

NUM. 2.

- prove the Scripture therefore (so called by way of Excellence) to be the *Word of God*, there are severall Offers at diverse proofes. For first, some flie to the *Testimony* and witnesse of the *Church*, and her *Tradition*, which constantly believes, and unanimously delivers it. Secondly, some to the *Light and the Testimony* which the *Scripture* gives to it selfe; with other internall proofes which are observed in it, and to be found in no other Writing whatsoever. Thirdly, some to the *Testimony of the Holy Ghost*, which cleares up the light that is in Scripture, and seales this Faith to the soules of men, that it is *Gods Word*. Fourthly, all that have not imbrutised themselves, and sunke below their *species*, and order of *Nature*, give even *Naturall Reason* leave to come in, and make some proofe, and give some approbation upon the weighing, and the consideration of other Arguments. And this must be admitted, if it be but for *Pagans* and *Infidels*, who either consider not, or value not any one of the other three: yet must some way or other bee converted, or left without excuse, *Rom. 1.* and that is done by this very evidence.

ROM. 1. 20.

NUM. 3.

1. For the first: The *Tradition of the Church*, which is your way: That taken and considered alone, it is so farre from being the *only*, that it cannot be a *sufficient* Prooffe to believe by *Divine Faith*, that Scripture is the Word of God. For that which is a *full and sufficient prooffe*, is able of it selfe to settle the soule of man concerning it. Now the *Tradition of the Church* is not able to doe this. For it may bee further asked, why wee should believe the *Churches Tradition*? And if it be answered, we may believe, *Because the Church is infallibly governed by the Holy Ghost*; it may yet be demanded

demanded of you, How that may appeare: And if this be demanded, either you must say, you have it by *speciall Revelation*, which is the *private Spirit* you object to other men, or else you must attempt to prove it by *Scripture*^a, as all of you doe. And that very offer, to prove it out of *Scripture* is a sufficient acknowledgement, that the *Scripture*, is a higher Proove, then the *Churches Tradition*, wch (in your own Grounds) is, or may be *Questionable*, till you come thither. Besides, this is an *Inviolable* ground of Rea-

^a *Esse aliquas veras Traditiones demonstratur ex Scripturis. Bel-lar. L. 4. de verbo Dei non Scrip-to. c. 5. and A. C. p. 50. proves Tradition out of 2 Thef. 2.*

son: * *That the Principles of any Conclusion must be of more credite, then the conclusion it self.* Therefore if the *Articles of Faith*, The *Trinity*, the *Resurrection*, and the rest, be the *Conclusions*, and the *Principles* by which they are prooved, be only *Ecclesiasticall Tradition*, it must needs follow, That the *Tradition of the Church* is more infallible then the *Articles of the Faith*, if the *Faith* which we have of the *Articles* should be finally *Resolved* into the *Veracity of the Churches Testimony*. But this † your *Learned* and *wary* men deny. And therefore I hope your selfe dare not affirme.

* *Arist. 1. Post. c. 2. T. 16. Per Pacium. Quocirca si dicitur auctoritas, propter prima scimus & credimus, illa quoque scimus & credimus magis, quia per illa scimus, & credimus etiam posteriora.*

† *Eorum errorem dissimulare non possum, qui asserunt fidem Nostram, eò tanquam in ultimam credendi causam reducendam esse. Vt Credamus Ecclesiam esse Veracem &c. M. Canus. L. 2. de Locis, c. 8, §. Cui, & tertium,*

Again, if the *Voyce of the Church* (saying the *Bookes of Scripture* commonly received, are the *Word of God*) be the formall Object of *Faith*, upon which alone absolutely I may resolve my selfe, then every man not only may, but ought to resolve his *Faith* into the *Voyce* or *Tradition of the Church*: for every man is bound to rest upon the proper and formall Object of the *Faith*. But nothing can bee more evident then this, That a man ought not to resolve his *Faith* of this Principle into the sole *Testimony of the Church*. Therefore neither is that *Testimony*, or *Tradition* alone

NUM. 4.

* Vox Ecclesia non est formale Obiectum Fidei. Stapl. Relict. Cont: 4. q. 3. A. 2. Licet in Articulo Fidei [Credo Ecclesiam] fortè contineatur hoc totum, Credo ea, quæ docet Ecclesia : tamen non intelligitur necessariò, quod Credo docenti Ecclesia tanquam Testi infallibili. ibid. Vbi etiam rejicit Opinionem. Durandi & Gabr. Et Waldens. L. 2. Doctr. Fidei Art. 2. r. 21. Num. 4. Testimonium Ecclesia Catholica est Obiectum Fidei Christianæ, & Legislatio Scriptura Canonica, subjicitur tamen ipsi sicut Testis Iudici, & Testimonium Veritati &c. Canus Loc. Lib. 2. cap. 8. Nec, si Ecclesia aditum nobis præbet ad hujusmodi Libros Sacros cognoscendos, protinus ibi acquiescendum est, sed ultrà oportet progredi, & Solidâ Dei veritate nisi &c.

the formall Object of Faith. * The Learned of your owne part grant this : † Although in that Article of the Creed (I believe the Catholike Church) peradventure all this be contained (I believe those things which the Church teacheth) yet this is not necessarily understood,

That I believe the Church teaching, as an Infallible Witnesse. And if they did not confesse this ; it were no hard thing to prove.

Num. 5.

But here's the cunning of this Devise All the Authority's of Fathers, Councils, nay of Scripture too,

^b Omnis ergo Ecclesiastica Authoritas, cum sit ad Testificandum de Christo, & Legibus ejus : utilior est Christi legibus, & Scripturis Sanctis necessariò proponenda. Wald. L. 2. Doctr. Fidei Art. 2. cap. 21. Numb. 1.

^b (though this be contrary to their owne Doctrine) must bee finally Resolved into the Authority of the Present Ro-

mane Church, And though they would seeme to have us believe the Fathers, and the Church of old, yet they will not have us take their Doctrine from their owne Writings, or the Decrees of Councils : because (as they say) wee cannot know by reading them, what their meaning was, but from the Infallible Testimony of the present Romane Church teaching by Tradition. Now by this, two things are evident. First, That they ascribe as great Authority (if not greater) to a part of the Catholike Church, as they doe to the whole, which wee believe in our Creede ; and which is the Society of all Christians. And this is full of Absurdity in Nature, in Reason, in All things, That any
Part

^cPart should bee of equall worth, power, credit, or authority with the Whole. Secondly, that in their Doctrine concerning the Infallibility of their Church, their proceeding is most unreasonable. For if you askethem, Why they believe their whole Doctrine to be the sole true Catholike Faith? Their Answer is, Because it is agreeable to the Word of God, and the Doctrine and Tradition of the Ancient Church. If you aske them, How they know that to be so? They will then produce Testimonies of Scripture, Councils, and Fathers, But if you aske a third time, By what meanes they are assured, that these Testimonies doe indeed make for them, and their Cause? They will not then have recourse to Text of Scripture, or Exposition of Fathers, or phrase and propriety of Language, in which either of them were first written, or to the scope of the Author, or the ^d Causes of the thing uttered, or the Conference with like ^e Places, or the Antecedents ^f and Consequents of the same Places: ^g or the Exposition of the darke and doubtful Places of Scripture by the undoubted and manifest. With divers other Rules given for the true knowledge and understanding of

^cTotum est majus sua parte. Etiam si Axioma sit apud Euclidem, non tamen ideo Geometricum putandum est, quia Geometres eo utitur. Vtitur enim & tota Logica. Ram in Schol. Math. And Aristotle vindicates such Propositions πᾶσι τοῖς μαθηματικοῖς καὶ ἀπορίᾳ ἀξιωματικῇ. from being usurped by Particular Sciences. ἀπορίᾳ ἀπορίᾳ &c. Quia conveniunt omni Enti; & non alicui Generi separatim. 4. Metaph. cap. 3. T. 7.

^d Intelligentia dictorum ex causis est assumenda dicendi, quia non Sermone res, sed Rei Sermo est subiectus. S. Hilar. L. 4. de Trin. Ex materia dicti dirigendus est sensus. Tert. L. de Resur. carnis. c. 37.

^e Videndo differentias Similium ad Similia. Orig. Tract. 19 in S. Math.

^f Recolendum est unde venerit ista Sententia. & quae illam superiora pepererint, quibusque connexa dependeat. S. Aug. Ep. 29. Solei circumstantia Scriptura illuminare Sententiam. S. Aug. L. 83. Quest. 9. 69.

^g Qua ambigue & obscure in nonnullis Scripturae Sacrae locis dicta videntur, per ea quae alibi certa, & indubitata habentur declarantur. S. Basil in Regulis contrahitis, Reg. 267. Manifestiora quaeque praevalent, & de incertis certiora praescribunt. Tert. L. de Resur. c. 19 & 21. S. Aug. L. 3. De Doct. l. brist c. 26. Moris est Scripturarum obscuris Manifesta subnectere, & quod prius sub enigmatibus dixerint, aperta voce praeferre, S. Hieron. in Esa 19. princ. Vide. §. 26. Nu. 4.

Scripture

^b S. Aug. L. 3. de
Doctr. Christi-
ana.

Scripture, which do frequently occurre in ^b S. Augu-
stine. No, none of these, or the like helps: That,
with them, were to Admit a Private Spirit, or to
make way for it: But their finall Answer is; They
know it to be so, because the present Romane Church wit-
nesseth it, according to Tradition, arguing, à primo
ad ultimum, from first to last, the Present Church of
Rome and her Followers believe her owne Do-
ctrine, and Tradition to bee true and Catholike,
because she professes it to be such. And if this bee
not to proove *idem per idem*, the same by the same,
I know not what is: which, though it be most ab-
surd in all kind of learning, yet out of this I see not
how 'tis possible to windethem selves, so long as
the last resolution of their Faith must rest (as they
teach) upon the Tradition of the present Church
only.

N u m. 6.

It seemes therefore to mee very necessary*, that

* And this is so necessary, that Bellarmine confesses,
that if Tradition (which he relies upon) be not Di-
vine: He and his can have no Faith. *Non habemus
fidem. Fides enim verbo Dei nititur. L. 4. de verbo
Dei. c. 4. §. At si ita est.*

And A. C. tells us. p. 47. To know that Scripture
is Divine and Infallible in every part, is a Founda-
tion so necessary, as if it be doubtfully questioned, all
the Faith built upon Scripture falls to the ground.
And he gives the same reason for it, p. 50. which Bel-
armine doth.

we bee able to proove
the Bookes of Scrip-
ture to bee the Word of
God, by some Authority that
is absolutely Divine. For
if they bee warranted
unto us by any Autho-
rity lesse then Divine,

then all things contained in them (which have no
greater assurance then the Scripture, in which they
are read) are not Objects of Divine Beliefe. And that
once granted will enforce us to yeeld, That all the
Articles of Christian Beliefe have no greater assurance
then Humane, or Morall Faith, or Credulity can afford.
An Authority then simply Divine must make good
the Scriptures Infallibility, at least in the last Reso-
lution of our Faith in that Poynt. This Authority
cannot

cannot bee any Testimony ,
or *Voyce* of the * Church alone.
For the Church consists of
men subject to *Error* ; And
no one of them , since the
Apostles times, hath beene as-
sisted with so plentifull a
measure of the Blessed Spirit,

as to secure him from being deceived ; And all the
Parts, being all liable to mistaking, and fallible, the
Whole cannot possibly bee *Infallible*, in, and of it self,
and privileged from being deceived in some
Things , or other. And even in those *Fundamentall*
Things, in which the *Whole Vniuersall Church* neither
doth, nor can Erre; yet even there her *Authority* is not
Divine, because She delivers those supernatural Truths
by *Promise of Assistance*, yet tyed to *Meanes* : And not
by any *speciall Immediate Revelation*, which is necessa-
rily required to the very least Degree of *Divine Au-*
thority. And therefore our *VVorthies* do not only say,
but prove, That all the Churches Constitutions are of the
nature of *Humane Law*. ^a And some among you, not
unworthy for their Learning, prove it at large, That
all the Churches Testimony , or *Voyce*, or *Sentence* (call it
what you will) is but *suo modo* , or *aliquo modo* , not
simply, but in a manner *Divine*. Yea, and *A.C.* himselfe,
after all his debate comes to that, and no fur-
ther, That the Tradition of the Church is, at least in some
sort, *Divine and Infallible*. Now that which is *Di-*
vine but in a sort or manner , bee it the Chur-
ches manner, is *aliquo modo non Divina*, in a sort
not *Divine*. But this *Great Principle of Faith* (the
Ground and Prooofe of whatsoever else is of Faith)
cannot stand firme upon a Prooofe that is, and
is not ; in a manner, and not in a manner *Divine*,

** Ecclesiam spiritu afflatam esse, certè credo. Non
ut veritatem, auctoritatemque Libris Canoniciis
tribuat, sed ut doceat illos, non alios esse Canoni-
cos. Nec si aditum nobis præbet ad huiusmodi (a-
eros Libros cognoscendos, protinus ibi acquie-
scendum est, sed ultra oportet progredi, & solidè
Dei veritate nitì. Quà ex re intelligitur quid
sibi voluerit Augustinus, quum ait, Evangelio
non crederem, nisi &c. M. Canus L. 2. de Locis,
c. 8. fol. 34. b. Non docet fundatam esse Evange-
lii fidem in Ecclesie Auctoritate, sed &c. Ibid.*

† Hook. l. 3. §. 9

^a Stapl. Relati-
Con. 4. q. 3. A. 1.
& 2.

A. C. p. 51.

As it must, if we have no other *Anchor* then the *External Tradition* of the Church to lodge it upon, and hold it steddy in the midst of those waves, which daily beate upon it.

NUM. 7.
A. C. p. 49.

A. C. p. 50.

A. C. p. 51.

Now here *A. C.* confesses expressly, That to prove the *Bookes of Scripture* to be *Divine*, we must be warranted by that which is *Infallible*. *Hee confesses farther, that there can be no sufficient Infallible Proofs of this, but Gods Word, written, or unwritten.* And he gives his Reason for it. *Because if the Proofs be merely Humane, and Fallible, the Science or Faith which is built upon it, can be no better* So then this is agreed on by mee, (yet leaving other men to travell by their owne way, so bee they can come to make *Scripture* thereby *Intallible*) That *Scripture* must be knowne to be *Scripture* by a *sufficient, Infallible, Divine Proofs* And that such Proofs can be nothing but the *Word of God*, is agreed on also by me. Yea, and agreed on for me it shall be likewise, that Gods Word may be *written, and unwritten*. For Cardinal *† Bellarmine* tells us truly, that it is not the *writing, or printing*, that makes *Scripture* the *Word of God*; but it is the *Prime Vnderlying Essentiall Truth, God himselfe uttering, and revealing it to his Church*, that makes it *Verbum Dei*, the *Word of God*. And this Word of God is uttered to men, either *immediately* by God himselfe, *Father, Sonne, and Holy Ghost*, and so 'twas to the *Prophets* and *Apostles*: Or *mediately*, either by *Angels*, to whom God had spoken first, and so the *Law* was given, * *Gal. 3.* and so also the *Message* was delivered to the *Blessed Virgin*, ² *S. Luke 1.* or by the *Prophets* ^b and *Apostles*, and so the *Scriptures* were delivered to the Church. But their *being written*, gave them no *Authority* at all, in regard of themselves.

† *Verbum Dei non est tale, nec habet ullam Auctoritatem, quia scriptum est in membranis, sed quia à Deo profectum est.*
Beilar. l. 4. de Verb. Dei. 2. §. Ecclesiasticæ Traditione.

* *Lex ordinata per Angelos in manu Media oris Gal. 3. 19.*

^a *S. Luk. 1. 30.*

^b *The Holy Ghost &c.*

which spake by the *Prophets, in Symb. Nicen.*

selves. *Written* or *unwritten*, the *Word* was the same.

But it was written, that it might bee the better preserved, and continued with the more integrity to the use of the Church, and the more faithfully in our ^d Memories. And you have been often enough told (were truth, and not the maintaining of a party, the thing you seek for) that if you will shew us any such *unwritten Word*

^c Nam Pseudoprophetae etiam viventibus adhuc Apostolis, multas fingebant corruptelas sub hoc prae-textu & titulo, quasi ab Apostolis viva voce essent traditae: & propter hanc ipsam causam Apostoli De Veritatem suam cœperunt Literis comprehendere, & Ecclesijs commendare. Chem. Exam. Concil. Trid. de Traditionibus sub octavo genere Tradit. And to altho Iansen. Comment. in S. Ioh. 5. 47. Sicut enim firmitus est quod mandatur Literis, ita est culpabilis & majus non credere Scriptis, quam non credere Verbis.

^d Labilis est memoria, & ideo indigemus Scripturâ: Dicendum quod verum est, sed hoc non habet, nisi ex inundantia peccatorum. Henr. a Gand. Sum. p. 1. Ar. 8. q. 4. fine. Christus ipse de pectore morituro Testamentum transfert in tabulas duraturas. Optat. L. 5. Christus ipse non transtulit, sed ex Optati sententia, Ejus Inspiratione, si non Jussu, Apostoli transtulerunt.

of God delivered by his Prophets and Apostles, we will acknowledge it to be Divine, and Infallible. So, written, or *unwritten*, that shall not stumble us. But then A. C. must not tell us, at least not thinke we shall swallow it into our Beliefe: that every thing which he sayes, is the *unwritten Word* of God, is so indeed.

I know Bellarmine hath written a whole Booke * *De verbo Dei non scripto*, of the Word of God not written, in which he handles the Controversie concerning Traditions. And the Cunning is, to make his weaker Readers believe, that all *that*, which He, and his are pleased to call Traditions, are by and by no lesse to be received, and honoured, then the *unwritten word* of God ought to be. Whereas 'tis a thing of easie knowledge, That the *unwritten Word* of God and Tradition, are not Convertible Termes, that is, are not all one. For there are many *Unwritten Words* of God, which were never delivered over to the Church, for ought appears: And there are many Traditions (affirmed,

NUM. 8.
*Bellar. L. 4. De
Verbo Dei non
script.

at least to be *such* by the (Church of Rome) which were never warranted by any *unwritten Word of God*.

NUM. 9.

First, That there are many *unwritten words of God*, which were never delivered over to the Church, is manifest. For when, or where were the words, which Christ spake to his *Apostles*, during the ^a forty dayes of his Conversing with them after his Resurrection, first delivered over to the Church? or what were the *unwritten Words* He then spake? If neither Hee, nor His *Apostles*, or *Evangelists* have delivered them to the Church, the Church ought not to deliver them to her Children.

^a Acts 1. 3.

^b *Annunciare aliquid Christianis Catholicis, prater id quod acceperunt, nunquam licuit, nusquam licet, nunquam licebit.* Vincen. Lir. c. 14. Et prescript nihil aliud innovari, nisi quod traditum est. S. Cypri. ad Pompeium cont. Epist. Stephan. princ.

Or if she doe ^b tradere non traditum, make a Tradition of that, which was not delivered to her,

and by some of Them, then She is unfaithful to God, and doth not *servare depositum*, faithfully keepe that

^{*} 1 Tim. 6. 20. and, 2 Tim. 1. 14.

which is committed to her *Trust*. ^{*} 1 Tim. 6. And her Sonnes, which come to know it, are not bound

^c *Si ipsa (Ecclesia) contraria Scriptura diceret, (Fidelis) ipsi non crederet.* &c. Hen. a Gand. Sum. p. 1. A. 10. q. 1. And Bellarmine himselfe, that he might the more safely defend himselfe in the Cause of Traditions, sayes, (but how truly let other men Iudge,) *Nullam Traditionem admittimus contra Scripturam.* L. 4. ac Verbo Dei. c. 3. §. Deinde commune.

to obey her Tradition against the ^c Word of their Father. For where-soever Christ holds his peace, or that his words are not Registered, I am

^d S. Aug. Tom. 96. in S. Ioh. in ill. Verba, Multa habeo dicere, sed non potestis portare modò.

of S. ^d Augustines Opinion, No man may dare without rashnesse say they were *these*, or *these*. So, there were many *unwritten Words of God*, which were never delivered over to the Church; and therefore never made Tradition. And there are many Traditions, which cannot be said to be the *unwritten Word of God*. For I. believe, a Learned Romanist, that will weigh before he speakes, will not easily say, That to Anoint, or use Spittle in Baptisme; or to use three Dippings in the

the

the use of that *Sacrament*: or diverse other like *Traditions* had their *Rise* from any *Word of God unwritten*: Or if he be so hardy as to say so, 'tis *gratis dictum*, and he will have enough to doe to prove it. So, there may be an *unwritten Word of God*, which is no *Tradition*. And there are many *Traditions*, which are no *unwritten Word of God*. Therefore *Tradition* must be taken two wayes. Either, as it is the *Churches Act* delivering, or the *Thing* thereby delivered, and then 'tis *Humane Authority*, or from it, and unable infallibly to warrant *Divine Faith*, or to be the Object of it. Or els as it is the *unwritten Word of God*: and then where ever it can be made to appeare so, 'tis of *divine and infallible Authority*, no question. But then I would have *A. C.* consider where he is in this Particular. He tels us, *We must know infallibly, that the Bookes of Holy Scripture are Divine, and that this must be done by unwritten Tradition, but so, as that this Tradition is the Word of God unwritten*: Now let him but prove that this, or any *Tradition*, which the *Church of Rome* stands upon, is the *Word of God*, though *unwritten*, and the businesse is ended. But *A. C.* must not thinke, that because the *Tradition of the Church* tels me these Bookes are *Verbum Dei, Gods Word*; and that I do both honour and believe this *Tradition*; That therefore this *Tradition* it selfe is *Gods Word* too; and so absolutely sufficient and infallible to worke this Beliefe in me. Therefore for ought *A. C.* hath yet added, we must on with our Inquiry after this great Businesse, and most necessary *Truth*. A. C. p. 42.

2. For the second way of proving, That *Scripture* should be fully and sufficiently knowne, as by *Divine and Infallible Testimony, Lumine proprio*, by the resplendency of that *Light*, which it hath in it selfe onely, and by the witnesse that it can so NUM. 10.

* Hook. l. 2. §. 4

give to it selfe, I could never yet see cause to allow.
^a For as there is no place in Scripture that tels us,
 Such Books containing such, and such Particulars are
 the *Canon*, and *infallible Will and Word of God*: So
 if there were any such place, that were no suffi-
 cient prooffe; For a man may justly aske another
 Booke to beare witnesse of *that*; and againe of
that another; and where ever it were written in
 Scripture, that must be a part of the *Whole*. And
 no created thing can alone give witnesse to it selfe,
 and make it evident, nor one part testifie for ano-
 ther, and satisfie where Reason will but offer to
 contest. Except those *Principles onely of Naturall*
knowledge, which appeare manifest by *intuitive*
light of understanding, without any Discourse.
 And yet they also to the weaker sort require *Indu-*
ction preceding. Now this *Inbred light of Scripture*
 is a thing coincident with *Scripture it selfe*: and
 so, the *Principles*, and the *Conclusion* in this kind
 of prooffe should be entirely the same, which
 cannot be. Besides, if this *inward Light* were so
 cleare, how could there have been any variety
 among the *Ancient Believers* touching the Authori-
 ty of S.^a *James*, and S. *Jude's Epistles*, and the ^b *Apo-*
calyps, with other Bookes which were not recei-
 ved for diverse yeares after the rest of the *New*
Testament? For certainly, the *Light* which is in
 the Scripture, was the same then, which now it
 is. And how could the *Gospel of S. Bartholomew*, of
S. Thomas, and other counterfeit peeces obtaine so
 much credit with some, as to be received into the
Canon, if the evidence of this *Light* were either *Uni-*
versall, or *Infallible*, of, and by it selfe? And this,
 though I cannot approve, yet, me thinks, you may,
 and upon probable grounds at least. For I hope
 no

Euseb. L. 2. c.
 27. fine. Edit.
 Basil. 1549.
 * Euseb. L. 3. c.
 25.

no *† Rom: nist* will deny, but that there is as much *light in Scripture* to manifest, and make ostension of it selfe to be infallibly the *written Word of God*, as there is in any *Tradition of the Church*, that it is Divine, and infallibly the *unwritten Word of God*.

† Except *A. C.* whose boldness herein I cannot but pitie. For he denies this *light* to the *Scripture*, and gives it to *Tradition*: His words are, p. 52. *Tradition of the Church is of a company, which by its owne light shewes it selfe to bee infallibly assisted, &c.*

And the Scriptures saying from the mouthes of the Prophets, *^b Thus saith the Lord*, and from the mouthes of the *^a Apostles*, that *the Holy Ghost spake by them*, are at least as able, and as fit to beare witness to their owne Verity; as the Church is to beare witness to her owne *Traditions*, by bare saying they come from the *Apostles*: And your selves would never go to the Scripture, to prove that there are *Traditions*, *^b as you do*, if you did not thinke the Scripture as easie to be discovered by *inbred light in it selfe*, as *Traditions* by their *light*. And if this be so, then it is as probable at the least (which some of ours affirme) That *Scripture may bee knowne to bee the Word of God, by the Light, and Lustre which it hath in it selfe*, as it is (which you *^c affirme*) That *a Tradition may be knowne to be such, by the light which it hath in it selfe*: which is an excellent Proposition to make sport withall, were this an Argument, to be handled merrily.

^b Isa 44. & passim.

^c Act. 28. 25.

^b 2. Thess. 2. 15. Jude, vers. 3.

^c In your Articles delivered to D. W. to be answered. And A. C. p. 52.

3. For the third Opinion, and way of proving; NUM. II.
either some thinke, that there is no sufficient warrant for this, unlesse they fetch it from the *Testimony of the Holy Ghost*, and so looke in vaine after *speciall Revelations*, and make themselves by this very Conceit, obnoxious, and easie to be led by all the whisperings of a *(seducing private spirit)*; or els you would faine have them think so. For your side, both upon this, and other Occasions, do often challenge, *That*

we

* A Iesuite, under the name of T. S. set out a Booke, An. 1630. which he called, *The Triall of the Protestant private Spirit.*

Ut Testimonia Scriptura certam & indubitaram fidem praeferant, necessarium videtur ostendere, quod ipsa Divina Scriptura sint Dei Spiritu inspiratae. Orig. 4. *vel esset.*

*We resolve all our Faith into the Dictates of a *private Spirit; from which we shall ever prove our selves as free, if not freer than you. To the Question in hand then: Suppose it agreed upon that there must be a Divine Faith, cui subesse non potest falsum,*

under which can rest no possible error, That the Bookes of Scripture are the written Word of God: If they which goe to the testimony of the Holy

Ghost for proove of this, doe meane by Faith, Objectum Fidei, the Object of Faith that is to bee believed, then, no question, they are out of the ordinary way. For God never sent us by any word or warrant of his, to looke for any such speciall, and private Testimony to prove which that Booke is, that we must believe. But if by Faith they meane, the Habit, or Act of Divine infused Faith, by which vertue they doe believe the Credible Object, and thing to bee believed; then their speech is true, and confessed by all Divines of all sorts. For Faith is the gift of God, of God alone, and an infused †Habit, in respect whereof the Soule is merely recipient; And therefore the sole Infuser, the Holy Ghost must not bee excluded from that worke, which none can doe, but Hee. For the Holy Ghost, as *Hee first dictated the Scripture to the Apostles:*

Esō

* 1. Cor. 12. 3. 4.

Datur nobis à Deo, &c. S. Aug. in Psal. 87.

† *Quia homo assentiendo eis quae sunt fidei, elevatur supra Naturam suam, oportet quod hoc in sit ei ex supernaturali p incipio interioris movente, quod est Deus. Tho. 2. 2. a. q. 6. A. 1. c. And your owne Divines agree in this, That Fides acquisita is not sufficient for any Article, but there must be Fides infusa, before there can be Divine Certainty. Fides acquisita innititur conjecturis humanis. Ad quem modum & Saraceni suis Praeceptoribus, & Indaei suis Rabinis, & Gentēs suis Philosophis, & omnes suis Majoribus inhaerent: non sic Christiani, sed per interioris lumen infusum à Spiritu Sancto, quo firmissimè & certissimè moventur ad credendum, &c. Canus. L. 2. Locor. c. 8. §. Jam si hac.*

* *Symb. Nicen. The Holy Ghost spake by the Prophets, &c. Et 1. S. Pet. 2. 21. Quis modus est, quo doces animas ea quae futura sunt? Docuisti enim Prophetas tuos, S. Aug. L. 11. Confess. c. 19.*

^b So did he not leave the Church in generall, nor the true

members of it in particular, without Grace to believe, what himself had revealed, and made Credible. So

that Faith, as it is taken for the vertue of Faith, whether it be of this, or any other Article, though it receive a kinde of preparation, or Occasion of Beginning from the Testimony of the Church, as it proposeth, and induceth to

the Faith; yet it ends in God, revealing within, and teaching within, that which the Church preached without. For till the Spirit of God move the Heart of man, he cannot believe, be the Object never so Credible. The speech is true then, but quite out of the State of this Question: which inquires onely after a sufficient meanes to make this

Object Credible, and fit to be believed, against all impeachment of folly and temerity in Beliefe, whether men do actually believe it or not. For which no man may expect inward private Revelation, without the externall means of the Church, unlesse perhaps the case of Necessity be excepted, when a man lives in such a time & place as excludes him from all ordinary means; in which I dare not offer to shut up God

from the soules of men, nor to tie him to those ordinary waies and means, to which yet in great wisdom

^b Nec enim Ecclesia Testimonium, aut Judicium prædicamus, Dei Spiritum, vel ab Ecclesia docente, vel à nobis audientibus, excludimus, sed utrobique disertè includimus, &c. Stapl. trip. contr. Whitak. c. 3.

^c Fides qua caput ab Ecclesia Testimonio, quatenus proponit & inducit ad Fidem, deint in Deo intus revelante, & intus docente quod foris Ecclesia prædicavit. Stapl. Relect. Cont. 4. q. 3. a. 2. When grave and learned men doe someti mes hold, that of this Principle there is no prooffe, but by the Testimony of the Spirit, &c. I thinke it is not their meaning, to exclude all outward Prooffes, &c. but rather t us, That all other meanes are uneffectuall of themselves to worke Faith, without the speciall Grace of God. Hook. &c. Lib. 3. S. 8.

^d De habitu Fidei quoad fieri ejus, & generationem, quàm à Deo immediate solo Dono gratuito infusus est, Nihil ad Questionem, nisi quoad hoc quod ver Scriptura inspectionem, &c. Henr. à Gand. Sum. a. 10. q. 1. lit. D.

^e Stapl. Relect. Cont. 4. Q. 3. A. 2. Doth not onely assume it, but proves it too, à paritate rationis, in case of necessity, where there is no Contempt of the externall meanes.

NUM. 12.

and providence He hath tied and bound all mankind.

Private Revelation then hath nothing ordinarily to doe, to make the Object Credible in this, That Scripture is the Word of God, or in any other Article. For the Question is of such outward, and evident meanes, as other men may take notice of, as well as our selves. By which if there arise any Doubting, or Infirmitie in the Faith, others may strengthen us, or we afford meanes to support

them: Whereas the ^aTestimony of the Spirit, and all private Revelation is within, nor felt, nor seen of

^a Quid cum singulis agitur, Deus scit qui agit, & ipsi cum quibus agitur, sciunt. Quid autem agatur cum genere Humano, per Historiam commendari voluit, & per Prophetiam. S. Aug. de vera Relig. c. 25.

any, but ~~men~~ that hath it. So that hence can be drawn no proofe to others. And Miracles are not sufficient alone to prove it, unlesse both They, and the Revelation too agree with the Rule of Scripture, which is now an unauerable Rule by ^b man, or Angell. To all this A. C. sayes nothing, save that I seeme not to admit of an infallible Impulsion of a private Spirit, ex parte subjecti, without any infallible Reason, and that sufficiently applied ex parte objecti, which if I did admit, would open a gap to all Enthusiasmes, and dreames of fanaticall men. Now for this yet I thank him. For I do not onely seeme not to admit, but I doe most clearly reject this phrensie in the words going before.

^b Gal. 1. 8.

A. C. p. 52.

NUM. 13.

4. The last way, which gives Reason leave to

^c Utitur tamen sacra Doctrina Ratione Humanâ, non quidem ad probandum Fidem ipsam, sed ad manifestandum aliqua alia, quæ irraduntur in hac Doctrinâ. Tho. p. 1. q. 1. A. 8. ad 2.

Passibus rationis novus homo tendit in Deum. S. Aug. de vera Relig. c. 26. (Passibus, verû est, sed nec æquis, nec solis:) Nam Invisibilia Dei altiori modo quantum ad plura percipit Fides, quam Ratio naturalis ex Creaturis in Deum procedenti. Tho. 2. 2. q. 2. A. 3. ad 3.

come in, and prove what it can, may not justly be denied by any reasonable man. For though Reason without Grace cannot see the way to Heaven, nor believe this

Booke, in which God hath written the way; yet
Grace

Grace is never placed but in a reasonable creature, and proves by the very seat, which it hath taken up, that the end it hath, is to be spirituall eye-water, to make Reason see what by [†] Nature onely it cannot, [†] Animalis homo non percipit. 1. Cor. 2. 14. but never to blemish Reason in that, which it can comprehend. Now the use of Reason is very generall; and man (do what he can) is still apt to search and seeke for a Reason why he will believe, though after he once believes, his Faith growes ^d stronger, than either his Reason, or his Knowledge: and great reason for this, because it goes higher, and so upon a safer Principle, than either of the other can in this life.

In this Particular, the Bookes called the Scripture, are commonly and constantly reputed to bee the Word of God, and so infallible Verity, to the least point of them. Doth any man doubt this? The world cannot keepe him from going to weigh it at the Ballance of Reason, whether it bee the Word of God, or not. To the same Weights hee brings the Tradition of the Church, the inward motives in Scripture it selfe, all Testimonies within, which seeme to beare witness to it; and in all this, there is no harme: the danger is, when a man will use no other Scale, but Reason, or preferre Reason before any other Scale. For the Word of God, and the Booke containing it, refuse not to bee weighed by

^d Quia scientia certitudinem habent ex naturalis lumine Rationis humana, quæ potest errare: Theologia autem (quæ docet & Obiectum & Notitiam Fidei, sicut & Fidem ipsam) certitudinem habet ex lumine Divina scientia, quæ decipi non potest. Tho. p. 1. q. 1. A. 5. c. Vt ipsa fide valentiores fidei, quod credimus intelligere mereamur. S. Aug. cont. Ep. Manichei, dictam, Fundamentum, c. 14. Hoc autem ita intelligendum est, ut scientia certior sit Certitudine Evidentiæ; Fides verò certior Firmitate Adhæssionis. Majus lumen in Scientia, majus Robur in Fide. Et hoc, quia in Fide, & ad Fidem Actus imperatus Voluntatis concurrunt. Credere enim est Actus Intellectus Vero assentionis productus ex Voluntatis Imperio. Biel. in 3. Sent. d. 23. q. 2. A. 1. Unde Tho. Intellectus Credentis determinatur ad Unum, non per Rationem, sed per Voluntatem; & ideo Assensus hic accipitur pro Actu Intellectus, secundum quod & Voluntate determinatur ad Unum. 2. 2. q. 2. A. 1. ad 3.

* Si vobis, rationi, & veritati consentanea videntur, in pretio habete, & de mysteriis Religionis, Iustin. Mart. Apol. 2. Igitur, si sunt dispositiones rationis, &c. Tertull. L. de Christo, c. 18. Rationalis ille est credere Deum esse Autorem Scripturæ. c. Henr. à Gand. Sum. To. 1. Ar. 9. q. 3.

Reason. But the Scale is not large enough to containe, nor the *Weights* to measure out the true vertue, and full force of either. *Reason* then can give no *supernaturall* ground, into which a man may resolve his Faith, That Scripture is the Word of God in-

fallibly; yet *Reason* can go so high, as it can prove that *Christian Religion*, which rests upon the *Authority* of this Booke, stands upon surer grounds of *Nature*, *Reason*, common *Equity*, and *Iustice*, than any thing in the World, which any *Infidell*, or meere *Naturalist*, hath done, doth, or can adhere unto, against it, in that which he makes, accounts, or assumes as *Religion* to himselfe.

NUM. 15.

The *Ancient Fathers* relied upon the *Scriptures*, no *Christians* more; and having to doe with *Philosophers* (men very well seene in all the subtilties, which *Naturall Reason* could teach, or learne) They were often put to it, and did as often make it good, That they had sufficient warrant to relie, so much as They did, upon *Scripture*. In all which *Disputes*, because they were to deale with *Infidels*, they did labour to make good the *Authority* of the Booke of God by such Arguments, as unbelievers themselves could not but thinke *reasonable*, if they weighed them with *indifferency*. For though I set the *Mysteries of Faith* above *Reason*, which is their proper place; yet I would have no man thinke They contradict *Reason*, or the *Principles thereof*. No sure. For *Reason* by her own light can discover how firmly the *Principles of Religion* are true: but all the Light shee hath will never bee able to finde them false. Nor may any man thinke that the *Principles of Religion*,
even

even this, *That Scriptures are the Word of God*; are so indifferent to a Naturall eye, that it may with as just cause leane to one part of the *Contradiction*, as to the other. For though this Truth, *That Scripture is the Word of God*, is not so Demonstratively evident, *a priori*, as to enforce Assent: yet it is strengthen'd so abundantly with probable Arguments, both from the Light of Nature it selfe, and *Humane Testimony*, that he must be very wilfull, and selfe-conceited, that shall dare to suspect it.

Nay, yet farther, ^a *It is not altogether impossible to* NUM. 16.
proove it even by Reason, a Truth infallible, or
else to make them deny some apparent Principle of their own. For Example: It is an apparent Principle, and with them, *That God, or the Absolute prime Agent, cannot be forced out of any Possession.* For if He could be forced by another Greater, He were neither Prince, nor Absolute, nor ^b God, in their owne Theologie. Now they must grant, *That that God, and Christ*, which the Scripture teaches, and we believe, is the only true God, and no other with him, and so deny the Deity, which they worshipped, or else deny their owne Principle about the Deity, *That God cannot be commanded; and forced out of possession:* For ^c their Gods, Saturne, and Serapis, and Iupiter himselfe, have beene adjured by the Name of the true, and only God, and have beene forced out of the bodies they possessed, and confessed themselves to be foule and seducing Divels: And their Confession was to be supposed true, in poynt of Reason: For they that were adored as Gods, would never belie themselves into Divels, to their owne reproach, especially in the presence of them that worshipped

* Hook. L. 3. §. 8. *Si Plato ipse viveret, & me interrogantem non aspernaretur &c.* S. Aug. de vera Relig. c. 3. *Videmus quatenus Ratio potest progredi a visibilibus ad invisibilia, &c.* Ibid. c. 19.

* *Si vim spectes, Deus Valentissimus est, Arist. de Mundo. cap. 7. Domini & Magni de ratores omnia, Cic. 2. de Leg.*

^c *Ipse Saturnus, & Serapis, & Jupiter, & quicquid Damonum colitis, isti dolore quod sunt, eloquantur. Nec utiq; in turpitudinem sui nonnullis praefertim vestrorum assistentibus, mentiantur. Ipsis testibus esse eos Demones de se verum consentibus credite. Adjurati enim per Deum verum, & solum inviti &c.* Arnob. 8. contra Gent. *Minutius Felix*, as is ne thought,

them, were they not forced. This, many of the Unbelievers saw; therefore they could not (in very force of Reason) but they must either deny their God, or deny their Principle in Nature. Their long Custom would not forsake their God, and their Reason could not forget their Principle. If Reason therefore might judge among them, they could not worship any thing that was under Command. And if it be reasonable to doe, and believe this, then why not reasonable also to believe, That Scripture is his Word, given to teach himselfe, and Christ, since there they find Christ ^d doing that, and ^e giving power to doe it after, which themselves saw executed upon their Divell-Gods?

^d S. Mat. 12. 22

^e S. Mat. 16. 17

NUM. 17.

Besides, whereas all other written Lawes have scarce had the honour to be duly observed, or constantly allowed worthy approbation in the Particular places, where they have beene established for Lawes; this Law of Christ, and this Canon of Scripture the container of it, is, or hath beene received in al-

most * all Nations under Heaven: And wheresoever it hath beene received, it hath been both approved for Unchangeable good, and believed for Infallible verity. This perswasion could not have beene wrought in men of all sorts, but by working upon their Reason, unlesse wee shall thinke all the World unreasonable, that received it. And surely God did not give this admirable faculty of Reasoning to the four man, for

* Si Libri quoquo modo se habent sancti tam. & Divinarum rerum pleni prope totius generis humani confessione diffamantur. &c. S. Aug. de Vit. Cred. c. 7. Scriptura summâ dispositione Providentiâ super omnes omnium Gentium Literas, omnia sibi genera ingeniorum humanorum Divinâ Excellens Autoritate subjecit. S. Aug. 11. de Civit. Dei, c. 1. At in omni orbe terrarum, in omni Graciâ, & universis Nationibus innumeri sunt. & immensi, qui relictis Patriis Legibus, &c. ad observantiam Moysi, & Christi. &c. Origen. 4. *de p. v. cap. 1.*

any cause more prime then this, ^{ver,} or to Judge and allow (within the Sphere of ^{verne} Acti-
city, and not presuming farther) ^{way} to
Himselfe

Himselfe, when and howsoever it should bee discovered.

One great thing that troubled *Rationall men*, was that which stumbled the *Manichee* (an Heresie it was, but more then halfe *Pagan*) namely, *That somewhat must be believed, before much could be knowne*. Wise men use not to believe, but what they know : And the *Manichee* * scorned the *Orthodox Christian* : as *light of Beliefe*, promising to leade no Disciple after him, but upon evident knowledge. This stumbles many ; but yet the Principle, *That somewhat must be believed before much can be knowne*, stands firme in *Reason* still. For if in all Sciences there be some Principles, which cannot be proved ; if *Reason* be able to see this, and confesse it ; if almost all *Artists* have granted it, if in the *Mathematicks*, where are the Exactest Demonstrations, there be *Quædam postulata* ; some things to be first Demanded, and granted, before the *Demonstration* can proceed : Who can justly deny that to *Divinity*, *A Science of the Highest Object*, *God Himselfe*, which he easily and reasonably grants to inferiour Sciences, which are more within his reach ? And as all Sciences suppose some Principles without proving ; so have they almost all, some *Text*, some *Authority*, upon which they rely in some measure : and it is *Reason* they should. For though these Sciences make not their *Texts* *Infallible*, as *Divinity* doth ; yet full consent and prudent *Examination*, and long continuance, have wonne reputation to them, and settled reputation upon them, very deservedly. And were these *Texts* more void of Truth, then they are, yet it were fit, and reasonable to uphold their credit, that *Novices*, and young Beginners in a Science, which are not able to worke strongly upon *Reason*, nor *Reason* upon them, may have

NUM. 18.

* *Irridere in Catholicâ Fidei disciplinâ, quod juberentur homines credere, non autem, &c.*
S. Aug. I. Retrac. c. 14.

have Authority to believe, till they can learne to Conclude from Principles, and so to know. Is this also *reasonable* in other Sciences, and shall it not be so in *Theologie*, to have a *Text*, a *Scripture*, a *Rule*, which Novices may be taught first to believe, that so they may after come to the knowledge of those things, which out of this *rich Principle*, and * *Treasure* are Deduceable? I yet see not

how *right Reason* can deny these Grounds; and if it cannot, then a meere Naturall man may be thus farre convinced, *That the Text of God is a very Credible Text.*

NUM. 19.

Well, these are the foure wayes, by most of which, men offer to proove the *Scripture to bee the Word of God*, as by a *Divine and Infallible Warrant*. And, it seemes, no one of these doth it alone. The *Tradition* of the *present Church* is too weake, because that is not *absolutely Divine*. The *Light which is in Scripture it selfe*, is not bright enough, it cannot beare sufficient witness to it selfe. The *Testimonie of the Holy Ghost*, that is most infallible, but ordinarily it is not so much as considerable in this *Question*, which is not, how, or by what meanes we believe, but how the *Scripture* may be proposed as a *Credible Object*, fit for *Beliefe*. And for *Reason*, no man expects, that that should proove it; it doth service enough, if it enable us to disprove that which misguided men conceive against it. If none of these then be an *Absolute and sufficient* meanes to prove it, either we must finde out another, or see what can be more wrought out of these. And to all this again *A. C.* sayes nothing.

For

For the *Tradition* of the Church then, certaine Num. 20.
 it is, wee must distinguish the Church, before
 wee can judge right of the Validity of the *Tradition*. For if the speech bee of the *Prime Christian Church*, the *Apostles*, *Disciples*, and such as
 had immediate *Revelation* from Heaven; no questi-
 on, but the *Voyce* and *Tradition* of this Church is
 Divine, not *aliquo modo*, in a sort, but simply; and
 the Word of God from them, is of like Validity,
Written, or *delivered*. And against this *Tradition* (of
 which kinde this, *That the Bookes of Scripture are*
the Word of God, is the most generall and uni-
 forme) the Church of England never excepted.
 And when S. † *Augustine* said; *I would*
not believe the Gospell, unlesse the Autho-
riety of the Catholike Church mooved mee
 (which Place you urged at the Confe-
 rence, though you are now content
 to slide by it) some of your owne will
 not endure should be understood, save
 * of the Church in the time of the *Apostles*
 only: and † some of the Church in Generall,
 not excluding after-ages. But sure to
 include *Christ*, and his *Apostles*. And
 the certainty is there, abundance
 of certainty in it selfe: but how
 farre that is evident to us, shall after
 appeare.

† L. 1. cont. *Epis. Fund.* c. 5.
Ego verò non crederem Evange-
lio, nisi me Catholica Ecclesià
commoveret Autoritas.

* *Occham. Dial.* p. 1. L. 1. c. 4.
Intelligitur solum de Ecclesià
qua fuit tempore Apostolorum.

† *Bicl. l. 1. c. 2. in C. Missæ. A*
tempore Christi & Apostolorum
&c. And so doth S. *Augustine* take
Eccles. Contra Fund.

But this will not serve your turne. The *Tra-* Num. 21.
dition of the present Church must bee as *Infal-*
lible, as that of the *Primitive*. But the con-
 trary to this is proved * before, because this
Voyce of the present Church, is not simply *Di-*
vine. To what end then serves any *Tradition* of
 the present Church? To what? Why to a very

* §. 16. Num. 62

good end. For first, it serves by a full consent to worke upon the mindes of *unbelievers*, to move them to reade, and to consider the Scripture, which (they heare by so many Wise, Learned, and Devoute men) is of no meaner esteeme then the *Word of God*. And secondly, It serves among *Novices*, *Weaklings*, and *Doubters* in the Faith, to instruct, and confirme them, till they may acquaint themselves with, and understand the Scripture, which the Church delivers as the *Word of God*. And thus againe some of your owne understand the fore-cited Place of S. Au-

* *Sive Infideles, sive in Fide Novitii*. Can. Loc. L. 2. c. 8. *Neganti, aut omnino nescienti Scripturam*. Stapl. Relect. Cont. 4. q. 1. A. 3.

† *Quid si fateamur Fideles etiam, Ecclesie Autoritate commoveri, ut Scripturas recipiant: Non tamen inde sequitur eos hoc modo penitus persuaderi: aut nullà alià fortioreque ratione induci? Quis autem Christianus est, quem Ecclesia Christi, commendans Scripturam Christi, non commoveat?* Whitaker: *Disp. de sacrâ Scripturâ. Contro. 1. q. 3. c. 8. ubi citat locum hunc, S. Aug.*

* Et ibid. *Quibus obtemperavi dicentibus Credite Evangelio*. Therefore he speaks of himselfe, when he did not believe.

• *Certum est quod tenemur credere omnibus contentis in Sacro Canone, quia Ecclesia credit ex ea ratione solâ. Ergo per prius & magis tenemur Credere Ecclesie, quàm Evangelio*. Almain. in 3. Dist. 24. Conclus. 6. Dub. 6. And to make a shew of proof for this, he falsifies S. Aug. most notoriously, and reads that known place, not *Nisi me commoveret* (as all read it) but *compelleret*. Patet. quia dicit Augustinus, *Evangelio non Credere, nisi eas hoc me compelleret Ecclesie Autoritas*. Ibid. And so alio Gerson reads it, *In Declarat. veritatum, quia*

Augustine, *I would not believe the Gospel, &c.* * For he speaks it either of *Novices*, or *Doubters* in the Faith, or else

of such as were in part *Infidels*. You at the Conference (though you omit it here) would needs have it, that S. Augustine spake even of the † *faithfull*, which I cannot yet think. For he speaks to the *Manichees*, and they had a great part of the *Infidell* in them.

And the words immediately before these, are, *If thou shouldest finde one, Qui Evangelio nondum credit, which did not yet believe the Gospel, what wouldest thou doe to make him believe?*

* *Ego verò non, Truly I would not, &c.* So to these two ends it serves, and there need be no Question between us. But then every thing, that is the *first Inducer* to believe, is not by and by either the *Principall Motive*, or the *chiefe*, and last *Object of Beliefe*, upon which a man may rest his Faith. Unless we shall be of ^b *Iacobus Almain's* Opinion;

That

That we are *per prius & magis*, first and more bound, to believe the Church, then the Gospel. Which your own Learned men, as you may see by *¶ Mel. Canus*, reject as Extreame foule, and so indeed it is. The first knowledge then (after the *Quid Nominis* is knowne by *Grammar*) that helps to open a mans understanding, and prepares him to bee able to Demonstrate a Truth, and make it evident, is his *Logicke*: But when he hath made a *Demonstration*, he resolves the knowledge of his Conclusion, not into his *Grammaticall*, or *Logicall* Principles, but into the *Immediate Principles* out of which it is deduced: So in this Particular, a man is probably led by the *Authority* of the present Church, as by the *first informing, inducing, perswading* Meanes, to believe the Scripture to be the Word of God: but when he hath studied, considered, and compared this Word with it selfe, and with other Writings, with the helpe of Ordinary Grace, and a minde morally induced, and reasonably perswaded by the Voyce of the Church; the Scripture then gives greater, and higher reasons of Credibility to it selfe, then *Tradition alone* could give. And then he that Believes, resolves his last and full Assent, *That Scripture is of Divine Authority*, into *internall Arguments* found in the Letter it selfe, though found by the Helpe and Direction of *Tradition without*, and *Grace within*. And the resolution that is rightly grounded, may not endure to pitch, and rest it selfe upon the *Helpes*, but upon that *Divine Light*, which the Scripture, no Question, hath in it selfe, but is not kindled, till these *Helps* come. *Thy word is a Light*^d: so *David*. A Light? Therefore it is as

credenda sunt. &c. part. 1 p. 414. §. 3. But in a most ancient Manuscript in Corp. Ch. Colledge Library in Cambridge, the words are, *Nisi me commoveret. &c.*

¶ Canus L. 2. de Læcis c. 8. fo. 34. b. §. 16. Num. 6.

^d *Psalm. 119. 105. Sanctorum Scripturarum Lumen, S. Aug. L. de vera Relig. c. 7. Quid Lucem Scripturarum vanis umbris? &c. S. Aug. L. de Mor. Eccl. Cathol. c. 35.*

much *manifestativum sui*, as *alterius*, a manifestation to it selfe, as to other things which it shewes : but still, not till the *Candle be Lighted*; not till there hath beene a Preparing Instruction, *What Light it is*. Children call the *Summe*, and *Moone*, *Candles*; *Gods Candles*: They see the light as well as men, but cannot distinguish betweene them, till some *Tradition*, and *Education*, hath informed their *Reason*. And * *animalis homo*, the naturall man sees some *Light of Morall counsell*, and instruction in Scripture, as well as Believers; Bu he takes all that glorious Lustre for *Candle-light*, and cannot distinguish betweene the *Summe*, and *twelve to the Pound*, till *Tradition* of the Church, and *Gods Grace* put to it, have cleared his understanding: So *Tradition* of the present Church, is the first Morall Motive to Beliefe. But the Beliefe it selfe, *That the Scripture is*

* I Col. 2. 14.

† Orig. 4. *ἐκ τῆς ἀρχῆς*. c. 1. went this way, yet was he a great deale nearer the prime Tradition, then we are. For being to proove that the Scriptures were inspired from God, he saith, *De hoc assignabimus ex ipsis Divinis Scripturis, quæ nos competentèr moverint, &c.*

* *Principaliter tamen (etiam & hîc) credimus propter Deum, non Apostolos, &c.* Henr. à Gand. *Sum. 2. 9. q. 3.* Now, if where the Apostles themselves spake, *ultima resolutio Fidei*, was in *Deum*, not in *ipsos per se*, much more shall it be in *Deum*, then in *presentem Ecclesiam*: and into the writings of the Apostles, then into the words of their Successors, made up into a Tradition.

the Word of God, rests † upon the Scripture, when a man findes it to answer, and exceed all that, which the Church gave in Testimony, as will after appear. And as in the Voyce of the Primitive, and Apostolicall Church, there was a simply *Divine Authority*, delivering the Scripture, as Gods Word; so, after Tradition of the present Church hath taught, and informed the Soule, the Voyce of God is plainly heard in *Scripture it selfe*. And then here's double Authority, and both *Divine* that confirms Scripture to be the *Word of God*, *Tradition of the Apostles* delivering it; and the *internall worth* and argument in the Scripture, objects to a soule prepared by the present Churches Tradition, and *Gods Grace*.

The

The Difficulties which are pretended against Num. 22.
 this, are not many, and they will easily vanish. For
 first, you pretend, we go to *Private Revelations for*
Light to know Scripture. No, we do not, you see it is
 excluded out of the very state of the Question: and
 we go to the *Tradition of the present Church*, and by it,
 as well as you. Here we differ; we use the *Tradi-*
tion of the present Church, as the *first*
Motive, not as the *Last Resolution* of
 our Faith. We *Resolve* onely into
^d *Prime Tradition Apostolicall*, and
 Scripture it selfe.

^d Calv. Instit. 1. c. 5. §. 2. *Christi-
 ana Ecclesia Prophetarum scriptis. &
 Apostolorum predicatione initio fun-
 data fuit, ubicunque reperietur ea
 Doctrina, &c.*

Secondly, you pretend, we do not, nor cannot Num. 23.
 know the *prime Apostolicall Tradition*, but by the *Tra-*
dition of the present Church; and that therefore, if the
Tradition of the present Church be not Gods *un-*
written Word, and *Divine*, we cannot yet know
 Scripture to be Scripture, by a *Divine Authority*.
 Well: Suppose I could not know the *prime Traditi-*
on to be *Divine*, but by the *present Church*, yet it
 doth not follow, that therefore I cannot know
 Scripture to be the Word of God by a *Divine Autho-*
rity; because *Divine Tradition* is not the sole, and one-
 ly meanes to prove it. For suppose, I had not, nor
 could have full assurance of *Apostolicall Tradition Di-*
vine; yet the morall perswasion, reason, and force
 of the present Church, is ground enough to move
 any reasonable man, that it is fit he should read the
 Scripture, and esteeme very reverently and highly
 of it. And this once done, the Scripture hath then
 In, and *Home-Arguments* enough to put a Soule, that
 hath but ordinary Grace, out of Doubt, *That Scrip-*
ture is the Word of God, Infallible and Divine.

Thirdly, you pretend, that we make the Scripture Num. 24.
 absolutely, and fully to be knowne *Lumine suo*, by
 M 3 the

^a And where
Hooker uses this
very Argument,
as he doth, L. 3.
§. 8. his words
are not, If there
bee *sufficient*
Light. But, if
that Light bee
Evident.
^b 1 Cor. 2, 14.

^a *2 Cor. 12, 12.*
Heb. 11, 1.

the Light and Testimony which it hath in, and gives to it selfe. Against this, you give reason for your selves, and prooffe from us. Your Reason is, *If there be sufficient Light in Scripture to shew it selfe, then every man that can, and doth but read it, may know it presently to be the Divine Word of God; which we see by daily experience, men neither do, nor can.* First it is not absolutely, nor universally true, 'There is ^a *sufficient Light*; therefore every man may see it. Blinde men are men, and cannot see it; and ^b *senfuall men*, in the Apostles judgement, are such: Nor may we deny, and put out this Light, as *insufficient*, because *blinde eyes* cannot, and *perverse eyes* will not see it; no more then we may deny meat to be sufficient for nourishment, though men that are heart-sicke, cannot eat it. Next, we do not say, That there is *such a full light in Scripture*, as that every man upon the first sight must yeeld to it; such Light as is found in Prime Principles; *Every whole is greater than a Part of the same*, and this, *The same thing cannot be, and not be, at the same time, and in the same respect*. These carrie a naturall Light with them, and evident: for the *Termes* are no sooner understood, then the *Principles themselves* are fully knowne, to the convincing of mans understanding, and so they are the beginning of knowledge; which, where it is perfect, dwels in *full Light*: but such a full Light we do neither say is, nor require to be in Scripture; and if any particular man doe, let him answer for himselfe. The Question is, onely of *such a Light in Scripture*, as is of force to *breed faith*, that it is the Word of God; not to make a *perfect knowledge*. Now *Faith*, of whatsoever it is, this or other Principle, is an *Evidence*^a, as well as *Knowledge*, and the *Beliefe* is firmer then any Knowledge can be, ^b *because*

because it rests upon *Divine Authority*, which cannot deceive; whereas *Knowledge* (or at least he that thinks he knowes) is not ever certaine in Deductions from Principles? † But the *Evidence* is not so cleere: For it is *of things not seene*, in regard of the Object; † S. 16. Nu. 13. † Heb. 11. 1.

and in regard of the Subject that sees, it is in *an enigmat*, in a Glasse, or darke speaking. Now God doth not require a full *Demonstrative Knowledge* in us, that the Scripture is his Word, and therefore in his Providence hath kindled in it no Light for that, but he requires our Faith of it, and such a *certaine Demonstration*, as may fit that. And for that, he hath left sufficient Light in Scripture to Reason, and Grace meeting, where the soule is *morally prepared by the Tradition of the Church*; unlesse you be of *Bellarmino's* Opinion, That to believe there are any Divine Scriptures, is not *omnino necessary to Salvation*.

^d 1 Cor. 13. 12. And A. C. confesses, p. 52. That this very thing in Question may be known infallibly, when 'tis knowne but obscurely. Et Scotus in 3. Dist. 23 q. 1. fol. 41. B. Hoc modo facile est videre quomodo Fides est cum anigmat, & obscuritate: Quia Habitus Fidei non credit Articulum esse verum ex Evidentiâ Obje-cti, sed propter hoc, quod assentit veritati infundentis Habitu, & in hoc revelantis Credibilita.

* Bellar. l. 3. de Eccles. c. 14. Credere nulli esse divinas Scripturas, non est omnino necessarium ad salutem. I will not breake my Discourse, to rise this speech of Bellarmine; it is bad enough in the best sense, that favour it selfe can give it. For if he meane by *omnino*, that it is not altogether, or simply necessary to believe there is Divine Scripture, and a written Word of God; that's false, that being granted, which is among all Christians, That there is a Scripture: And God would never have given a Supernaturall unnecessary thing. And if he meanes by *omnino*, that it is not in any wise necessary, then it is sensibly false. For the greatest upholders of Tradition that ever were, made the Scripture very necessary in all the Ages of the Church. So it was necessary, because it was given; and given, because God thought it necessary. Besides, upon *Romane Grounds*, this I thinke will follow: That which the Tradition of the present Church delivers, as necessary to believe, is *omnino* necessary to salvation: But that there are Divine Scriptures, the Tradition of the present Church delivers, as necessary to believe: Therefore, to believe there are Divine Scriptures, is *omnino* (be the sense of the word what it can) necessary to Salvation. So Bellarmine is herein foule, and unable to stand upon his owne ground. And he is the more, partly, because he avouches this Proposition for truth after the New Testament written. And partly, because he might have seene the state of this Proposition carefully examined by *Gandavo*, and distinguished by Times. Sum. p. 1. A. 8. q. 4. fine,

The Authority which you pretend against this, is out of * Hooker: Of things necessary, the very chiefeſt

NUM. 25.
Lib. 1. §. 14.

is

^b *Protest. Apol.*
Tract. 1. §. 10.
N. 3.
^c *L. 2. §. 4.*

^d *L. 2. §. 7. &*
L. 3. §. 8.

^e *S. Ioh. 5. 31.*
He speakes of
himselfe as man.

S. Ioh. 8. 13.

is to know, what Bookes we are bound to esteeme Holy; which Point is confessed impossible for the Scripture it selfe to teach. Of this ^b Brierly (the Store-house for all Priests that will be idle, and yet seeme well read) tells us, That ^c Hooker gives a very sensible Demonstration: It is not the Word of God, which doth, or possibly can assure us, that wee doe well to thinke it is His Word: for if any one Booke of Scripture did give Testimony to all; yet still that Scripture, which giveth credit to the rest, would require another to give credit unto it. Nor could we ever come to any pause, to rest our assurance this way: so that unlesse, beside Scripture, there were something that might assure, &c. And ^d this he acknowledgeth (saith Brierly) is the Authority of Gods Church. Certainly, Hooker gives a true, and a sensible Demonstration; but Brierly wants fidelity, and integrity, in citing him: For in the first place, Hooker's speech is, Scripture it selfe cannot teach this; nor can the Truth say, that Scripture it selfe can. It must needs ordinarily have Tradition, to prepare the minde of a man to receive it. And in the next place, where he speaks so sensibly, That Scripture cannot beare witnesse to it selfe, nor one part of it to another; that is grounded upon Nature, which admits no created thing to be witnesse to it selfe; and is acknowledged by our Saviour, ^e If I beare witnesse to my selfe, my witnesse is not true, that is, is not of force to be reasonably accepted for Truth. But then it is more then manifest, that Hooker delivers his Demonstration of Scripture alone. For if Scripture hath another prooffe, nay many other proofes to usher it, and lead it in, then no question, it can both prove; and approve it selfe. His words are, So that unlesse, besides
 Scripture

Scripture, there be, &c. Besides Scripture; therefore he excludes not Scripture, though he call for another Proove to lead it in, and help in assurance, namely, Tradition, which no man, that hath his braines about him, denies. In the two other Places Brierly falsifies shamefully; for folding up all that Hooker sayes, in these words, *This* (other meanes to assure us besides Scripture) *is the Authority of Gods Church*; he wrinkles that *Worthy Authour* desperately, and shrinks up his meaning. For in the former place abused by Brierly; no man can set a better state of the Question betweene Scripture, and Tradition, then Hooker doth: ^a His words are these, *The* ^a L. 2. §. 7. *Scripture is the ground of our Beliefe; The Authority of man* (that is the Name he gives to Tradition) *is the Key which opens the doore of entrance into the knowledge of the Scripture.* I aske now, when a man is entred, and hath viewed a house, and upon viewing likes it, and upon liking resolves unchangeably to dwell there; doth he set up his Resolution upon the Key, that let him in? No sure; but upon the goodnesse and Commodiousnesse, which he sees in the House. And this is all the difference (that I know) betweene us in this Point; In which, do you grant (as you ought to do) that we resolve our Faith into Scripture, as the Ground; and we will never deny, that Tradition is the Key that lets us in. In the latter place, Hooker is as plaine, as constant to himselfe, and Truth: ^b His words are, *The first out-* ^b L. 3. §. 8. *ward Motive, leading men so to esteeme of the Scripture, is the Authority of Gods Church &c.* But afterwards, the more wee bestow our Labour in reading, or learning the Mysteries thereof, the more wee finde that the thing it selfe doth answer our received opinion concerning it: so that the former inducement prevailing

N

some what

somewhat with us before, doth now much more prevaile, when the very thing hath ministred farther Reason. Here then againe, in his Iudgement, Tradition is the first Inducement; but the farther Reason, and Ground, is the Scripture. And Resolution of Faith ever settles upon the Farthest Reason it can, not upon the First Inducement. So that the State of this Question is firme, and yet plaine enough, to him that will not shut his eyes.

NUM. 26.
A. C. p. 52.

Now here after a long silence A. C. thrusts himselfe in againe, and tels me, That if I would consider the Tradition of the Church, not onely as it is the Tradition of a Company of Fallible men, in which sense the Authority of it (as himselfe confesses) is but Humane, and Fallible, &c. But as the Tradition of a Company of men assisted by Christ, and his Holy Spirit; in that sense I might easily finde it more then an Introduction, indeed as much as would amount to an Infallible Motive. Well, I have considered The Tradition of the present Church both these wayes. And I finde that A. C. confesses, That in the first sense, the Tradition of the Church is meere humane Authority, and no more. And therefore in this sense, it may serve for an Introduction to this Beliefe, but no more. And in the second sense, as it is not the Tradition of a Company of men onely, but of men assisted by Christ, and His Spirit: In this second sense I cannot finde, that the Tradition of the present Church is of Divine and Infallible Authority, till A. C. can prove, That this Company of men (the Romane Prelates, and their Clergie he meanes) are so fully, so cleereely, so permanently assisted by Christ, and his Spirit, as may reach to Infallibility, ~~and thus~~ to a Divine Infallibility,

in

in this, or any other Principle, which they teach. For every *Assistance of Christ, and the Blessed Spirit,* is not enough to make the Authority of any Company of men *Divine, and infallible;* but such and so great an *Assistance* onely, as is purposely given to that effect. Such an *Assistance* the *Prophets* under the Old Testament, and the *Apostles* under the New had; but neither the *High-Priest* with his *Clergie* in the Old, nor any Company of *Prelates*, or *Priests* in the New, since the *Apostles* ever had it. And therefore, though at the entreaty of *A. C.* I have considered this very well; yet I cannot, ~~no~~ not in this *Assisted sense*, thinke the *Tradition* of the present Church, *Divine, and Infallible,* or such Company of men to be worthy of *Divine, and infallible Credit, and sufficient to breed in us Divine, and Infallible Faith.* Which I am sorrie *A. C.* should affirme so boldly as he doth. What? That Company of men (the *Romane Bishop, and his Clergie*) of *Divine and Infallible Credit, and sufficient to breed in us Divine, and Infallible Faith?* Good God! Whither will these men goe? Surely they are wise in their generation, but that makes them never a whit the more the *Children of light*: ^a *S. Luke* ^a *S. Luke 16. 8.* 16. And could they put this home upon the world (as they are gone farre in it) what might they not effect? How might they, and would they then *Lord it over the Faith* of *Christendome*, contrary to ^b *S. Peter's Rule* (whose *Successours* certainly in this they are not.) But I pray, if this Company of men be *infallibly assisted*, whence is it, that this very Company have erred so dangerously, as they have, not only in some other things, but even in this *Particular*, by equaling the *Tradition* of the present Church to the *written Word of God?* Which is a *Doctrine*

A. C. p. 52.

A. C. p. 52.

^a *S. Luke 16. 8.*

^b *1. S. Pet. 5. 3.*

^a *S. Basil* goes as farre for *Traditions* as any. For he sayes: *Parem vim habent ad pietatem, L. de Sp. Sanct. c. 27.* But first, he speaks of *Apostolicall Tradition*, not of the *Tradition* of the *Present Church*. Secondly, the Learned take exceptions to this Booke of *S. Basil*, as corrupted. *BP. Andr. Opusc. cont. Peron. p. 9.* Thirdly, *S. Basil* himself, *Ser. de Fide*, professes that he uses sometimes *Agrapha*, *sed ea solum quæ non sunt aliena à piâ secundum Scripturam sententiâ.* So he makes the *Scripture* their Touch-stone, or tryall And therefore must of Necessity make *Scripture* superior, in as much as that which is able to try another, is of greater force, and superiour Dignity in that use, then the thing tried by it. And *Stapleton* himselfe confesses, *Traditionem recentiorem & posteriorem, fient & particularem, nullo modo cum Scripturâ, vel cum Traditionibus prius à se explicatis comparandam esse.* *Stapleton. Relect. Controu. 5. q. 5. A. 2.*

unknowne to the
^a *Primitive Church*,
 and which frets
 upon the very
Foundation it selfe,
 by justling with it.
 So belike, he that
 hath but halfe an
 indifferent eye,
 may see this *Assi-*
sted Company have
 erred, and yet we

NUM. 27.
 A.C. p. 52.

must wink in obedience, and think them *Infallible*.
 But *A. C.* would have me consider againe, *That it is as easie to take the Tradition of the present Church in the two fore-named senses, as the present Scriptures printed, and approved by men of this Age.* For in the first sense, The very *Scriptures* (saith he) considered as printed, and approved by men of this Age, can be no more then of *Humane Credit*. But in the second sense, as printed and approved by men assisted by *God's Spirit* for true Copies of that which was first written, then we may give *Infallible Credit* to them. Well. I have considered this too. And I can take the *Printing*, and *Approving* the Copies of *Holy-Writ* in these two senses. And I can, and do make a difference betweene Copies printed and approved by meere *morall men*, and men assisted by *Gods Spirit*. And yet for the *Printing* onely, a skilfull, and an able *morall man* may doe better service to the Church, then an illiterate man, though assisted in other things by *God's Spirit*. But when I have considered all this, what then? The *Scripture* being put in writing, is a thing visibly existent; and if any error be in the Print, 'tis easily corrigible by former Copies. *Tradition* is not so easily observed,

^b Ut §. 18. Num.
 4. Ex S. Aug.
 L. 32. cont. Fa-
 sum. o. 16.

nor

nor so safely kept. And howsoever, to come home to that which *A. C.* inferres upon it, namely, *That the Tradition of the present Church may be accepted in these two senses*: And if this be all that he will inferre (for his penne here is troubled, and forsakes him, whether by any checke of Conscience, or no, I know not) I will, and you see, have granted it already without more adoe, with this *Caution*, That every Company of men assisted by Gods Spirit, are not assisted to this height, to be *Infallible by Divine Authority*.

A. C. p. 53.

For all this *A. C.* will needes give a needlesse Prooofe of the Businesse: Namely, *That there is the Promise of Christs, and his Holy Spirits continuall presence, and assistance*, S. Luke 10. 16. Mat. 28. 19, 20. Ioh. 14. 16. not only to the Apostles, but to their Successors also, the lawfully sent Pastors, and Doctors of the Church in all Ages. And that this Promise is no lesse, but rather more expressly to them in their Preaching by word of mouth, then in writing, or reading, or printing, or approving of Copies of what was formerly written by the Apostles. And to all this I shall briefly say, That there is a Promise of Christs and the Holy Spirits continuall presence, and assistance. I do likewise grant most freely, that this Promise is on the part of Christ, and the Holy Ghost, most really and fully performed. But then this Promise must not be extended further then 'twas made. It was made of *Continuall presence, and assistance*, That I grant; And it was made to the *Apostles*, and their *Successors*; That I grant too. But in a different Degree. For it was of *Continuall, and Infallible Assistance to the Apostles*; But to their Successors of *Continuall, and fitting assistance, but not Infallible*. And therefore the lawfully sent Pastors and Doctors of the Church in all Ages, have had, and shall have *Continuall Assistance*; but by *A. C.*s. leave, not *Infallible*, at least, not *Divine and In-*

NUM. 28.

A. C. p. 53.

fallible, either in writing, reading, printing, or approving Copies. And I believe *A. C.* is the first, that durst affirme this; I thought he would have kept the Popes Prerogative intire, that He only might have been *Infallible*; And not He neither, but in *Cathedrâ* late down and well advised. *And well Advised*: Yes, that's

right. * But he may be late, and not well Advised, even in *Cathedrâ*. And now, shall we have all the *Lawfully sent Pastors*, and *Doctors* of that Church in all ages *Infallible* too? Here's a deale of *Infallibility* indeed, and yet error store. The truth is, the *Iesuites* have a

Moneths minde to this *Infallibility*. And though *A. C.* our of his bounty is content to extend it to all the *lawfully sent Pastors* of the Church: yet to his owne Society questionlesse he meanes it chiefly. As did the *Apolo- gist* to whom *Casaubon* replies, to *Fronto Ducæus*. The

words of the † *Apolo- gist* are. Let day and night——life and death be joyned together, and then there will be some hope, that Heresie may fall upon the person of a *Iesuite*. Yea marry, this is something indeed. Now we know where *Infallibility* is to be found. But for my present Occasion, touching the *Lawfully sent Pastors* of the

Church &c. I will give no other Confutation of it, then that *M. Fisher* and *A. C.* (if they be two men) are *lawfully sent Pastors and Doctors* of the Church; at least I am sure, they'll assume they are, and yet

* Nam multa sunt Decretales hæreticæ, sicut dicit Ocham. Et firmiter hoc Credo, sed non licet dogmatizare Oppositum, quoniam sunt determinata, nisi manifestè constet &c. Ia. Almain. in 3. Sent. D. 24. q. unicâ. Conclus. 6. Dub. 6. sine. and Aphon. à Castro also both sayes and prooves, *Cælestinum Papam errasse, non ut privatum Personam, sed ut Papam. L. 1. advers. Har. c. 4.* and the Glosse Confesses, *Eum errare posse in C. 24. q. 1. C. A. Resp. ergo.*

† Nam in fide quidem Iesuitam errare non posse, atq; adeo esse hoc unicum ^{ad vñt} ad vñt, ceteris, quæ solent à Poëtis plurima commemorari, posthac annumerandam, si nescis, mi *Fronto*, & puto nescire, docebo te, ab *Apolo- gista* doctus, hoc ipsum disertis verbis affirmante. Sic illo cap. 3. Ejus exemplaris quod ad *Severiss.* Regem fuit missum paginâ. 119. Iungantur in unum, ait, dies cum nocte, tenebræ cum luce, calidum cum frigido, sanitas cum morbo, vita cum morte: & erit tum spes aliqua posse in caput *Iesuitæ* hæresin cadere. *Iñ. Casaubon. Ep. ad Front. Ducæum. Lond. 1611.*

yet they are not *Infallible*; which, I think, appears plaine enough in some of their errors manifested by this Discourse, and elsewhere. Or if they do hold themselves *Infallible*, let them speake it out, as the Apologist did.

As for the *Three Places* of Scripture, which NUM. 29.
A. C. cites, they are of old alledged, and well knowne A. C. p. 53.
 in this Controversie. The *First* is in *S. Luke* 10. S. Luk. 10. 16.
 where *Christ* saith, *He that beareth you, beareth me.* This
 was absolutely true in the *Apostles*, who kept them-

selves to that, which was revealed by *Christ*. But it was to be but *Conditionally* true in their *Successors*, *He that beareth you, beareth me.* That is so long, and so *farre*, as you *speake my words*, and not your own. For *where* the Command is for *Preaching*, the *Restraint* is added: *Go* (saith *Christ*) *and teach all Nations.* But you may not preach all things what you please; but *all things which I have commanded you.* The *Publication* is yours, the *Doctrine* is mine: And where the *Doctrine* is not mine, there your *Publication* is beyond, or short of your *Commission*. The *Second Place* is in *S. Matth. 28.* There *Christ* sayes againe *I am with you al-*

wayes unto the end of the world. Yes; most certaine it is, *present by his Spirit*; For else in *bodily presence* Hee continued not with his *Apostles*, but during his
 abode

a Per quod docet quicquid per Sanctos Apostolos dicitur, acceptandum esse, quia qui illos audit, Christum audit, &c. S. Cyrillus. Et Dominus dedit Apostolis suis potestatem Evangelii, per quos & Veritatem, id est, Dei Filium cognovimus &c. Quibus & dixit Dominus, Qui vos audit &c. Iraneus prefat. in L. 3. advers. Har. sine.

b Dicit ad Apostolos, ac per hoc ad Omnes Praepositos, qui Apostolis vicaria Ordinatione succedunt. S. Cyprian. L. 4. Epist. 9. But S. Cyprian doth not say, that this speech of our Saviours was equaliter dictum, alike and equally spoken and promised to the Apostles, and the succeeding Bishops. And I believe A. C. will not dare to say in plaine and expresse termes, That this speech, He that beareth you beareth me, doth as amply belong to every Romane Priest, as to S. Peter, and the Apostles. No, a great deale of Difference will become them well.

** Bec yee followers of me, even as I am of Christ. 1 Cor. 11. 1. and 1 Thes. 1. 6.*

c And so Vener. Beda exprelly both for hearing the word, and for contemning it. For neither of these (saith hee) belong only to them which saw our Saviour in the flesh; but to all hodie quoque; but with this limitation; if they heare, or despise Evangelii verba: not the Preachers owne. Beda, in S. Luke 10. 15. 16.

d S. Mat. 28. 20.

e S. Mat. 28. 19.
 20.

abode on Earth. And this Promise of his *spirituall* presence was to their *Successors* ; else, why to the end of the world ? The Apostles did not , could

not live so long. But then to the * *Successors*, the Promise goes no further , then *I am with you alwayes*; which reaches to continuall assistance, but not to *Divine*. and *Infallible*. Or if he think me mistaken, let him shew mee any *One Father* of the Church, that extends the sense of this Place to *Divine* and *Infallible Assistance*, granted hereby to all the Apostles *Successors*. Sure I am, Saint † *Gregory* thought otherwise. For hee saies plainly, *That in those*

Gifts of God which concern other mens salvation (of which Preaching of the Gospell is One) the Spirit of Christ, the Holy Ghost doth not alwayes abide in the Preachers , bee they never so lawfully sent Pastors , or Doctors of the Church. And if the Holy Ghost doth not alwayes abide in the Preachers , then most certainly he doth not abide in them to a Divine Infallibility alwayes.

S. Iohn 14. 16. The *Third Place* is in S. Iohn 14. where Christ sayes *The Comforter the Holy Ghost shall abide with you for ever, Most true againe.* For the *Holy Ghost* did abide with

* *Iste Consolator non auferetur à Vobis, sicut subtrahitur Humanitas mea per mortem, sed eternaliter erit Vobiscum, hic per Gratiam, in futuro per Gloriam.* Lyra. in S. Iohn 14. 16. You see there the Holy Ghost shal be present by *Consolation* and *Grace*, not by *Infallible Assistance*.

here's no Promise of *Divine Infallibility* made unto them

* *Rabanus Maur.* goes no further, then that to the End some will alwayes bee in the world fit for Christ by his Spirit and Grace to inhabit : *Divinà mansione & in habitatione digni.* R. d. in S. Mat. 28. 19, 20. *Pergatis habentes Dominum Protectorem, & Ducem.* saith S. Cyprian. 4. Epist. 1. But he doth not say, *How farre* forth, And *loquitur Fidelibus sicut uni Corpori.* S. Chrysost. Homil. in S. Matth. And if S. Chrysost. enlarge it so farre, I hope A. C. will not extend the Assistance given or promised here to the whole Body of the Faithfull, to an *Infallible*, and *Divine Assistance* in every of them, as well as in the *Pastors* and *Doctors*.

† *In illis donis quibus salus aliorum queritur (quæ sunt Præphetiæ, & interpretationes Scripturæ &c.) Spiritus Sanctus nequaquam semper in Predicatoribus permanet.* S. Greg. L. 2. c. 29. prin. 1. lit. Basil. 1551.

them. And for that Promise which is made, and expressly of *Infallibility*, Saint *Iohn* 16. (though not cited by *A. C.*) That's confined to the *Apostles* onely, for the settling of them in all Truth. And yet not simply all : For there are some Truths (saith

^a Saint *Augustine*) which no mans Soule can comprehend in this life. Not simply all : But ^b all those Truths, quæ non poterant portare, which they were not able to beare, when Hee Conversed with them.

Not simply all ; but all that was necessary for the Founding, propagating, establishing, and Confirming the Christian Church. But if any man take the boldnesse to enlarge this Promise in the fullnesse of it, beyond the persons of the *Apostles* themselves, that will fall out which Saint ^c *Augustine* hath in a manner prophesied : Every Heretick will shelter himselfe, and his Vanities under this Colour of *Infallible Veritie*.

^a *Omniem veritatem : Non arbitror in hac vita in cujusquam mente compleri : &c. S. Augustin. in S. Ioh. Tract. 96. versus fin.*

^b *Spiritus Sanctus &c. qui eos doceret Omnem Veritatem, quam tunc, cum iis loquebatur, portare non poterant. S. Ioh. 16. 12. 13. & S. Augustin. Tract. 97. in S. Ioh. prim.*

^c *Omnes vel insipientissimi Heretici, qui se Christianos vocari volunt, audacias figmentorum suorum, quas maxime exhorret sensus humanus, hac Occasione Evangelicæ sententiæ colorare conentur. &c. S. Augustin. T. 97. in S. Ioh. circa med.*

I told you a * little before, that *A. C.* his Penne was troubled, and failed him: Therefore I will helpe to make out his Inference for him, that his Cause may have all the strength it can. And (as I conceive) this is that hee would have. The Tradition of the present Church is as able to worke in us Divine and *Infallible Faith*, That the Scripture is the Word of God : As that the Bible (or Bookes of Scripture) now printed, and in use, is a true Copie of that, which was first written, by the Penne-men of the Holy Ghost, and de-

NUM. 30.

* Num. 26.

A. C. p. 52.

livered to the Church. 'Tis most true, the Tradition of the present Church is a like operative, and powerfull in, and over both these workes : but neither Divine, nor Infalible in either. But as it is the first morall Inducement to perswade, that Scripture is the Word of God; so is it also the first, but morall still, that the Bible wee now have, is a true Copie of that which was first written. But then as in the former, so in this latter for the true Copie, The last Resolution of our Faith cannot possibly rest upon the naked Tradition of the present Church, but must by, and with it goe higher to other Helpes, and Assurances. Where I hope A. C. will confesse, wee have greater helpes to discover the truth, or falshood of a Copie, then wee have meanes to looke into a Tradition. Or especially to sift out this Truth, that it was a Divine and Infalible Revelation, by which the Originals of Scripture were first written : That being farre more the Subj. & of this Inquiry, then the Copie, which according to Art, and Science may be examined by former preceding Copies close up to the very Apostles times.

NUM. 31.
A.C.p.53.

But A. C. hath not done yet ; For in the last place hee tells us, that Tradition, and Scripture, without any vicious Circle, doe mutually confirme the Authority either of other. And truly for my part, I shall easily grant him this, so hee will grant mee this other : Namely, That though they doe mutually, yet they doe not equally confirme the Authority either of other. For Scripture doth infallibly confirme the Authority of Church Traditions truly so called : But Tradition doth but morallly and probably confirme the Authority of the Scripture. And this is manifest by A. C's. owne Similitude, For (saith he) 'tis as a Kings Embassadors word of mouth, and
His

His Kings Letters beare mutuall witnesse to each other. Iust so indeed. For *His Kings Letters of Credence* under hand and seale, confirme the Embassadors Authority *Infalibly* to all that know Seale, and hand: But the Embassadors word of mouth confirms *His Kings Letters* but onely *probably*. For else, Why are they called *Letters of Credence*, if they give not him more Credit, then hee can give them? But that which followes I cannot approve, to wit, *That the Lawfully sent Preachers of the Gospell are Gods Legats, and the Scriptures Gods Letters, which hee hath appointed his Legates to deliver, and expound.* So farre 'tis well, but here's the sting. *That these Letters doe warrant, that the People may heare, and give Credit to these Legats of Christ, as to Christ the King himselfe.* Soft, this is too high a great deale. No * Legate was ever of so great Credit as the King Himselfe. Nor was any Priest, never so lawfully sent, ever of that Authority, that Christ himselfe; No sure, *For yee call mee Master, and Lord, and yee doe well; for so I am, saith our Saviour, S. Iohn 13.* And certainly, this did not suddenly drop out of A. C's Penne. For hee tould us once before, *That this Company of men which deliver the present Churches Tradition, (that is the lawfully sent Preachers of the Church) are assisted by Gods Spirit to have in them Divine and Infalible Authority, and to bee worthy of Divine and Infalible Credit, sufficient to breed in us Divine, and Infalible Faith.* Why, but is it possible these men should goe thus farre to defend an Error, bee it never so deare unto them? They as Christ? Divine, and Infalible Authority in them? *Sufficient to breed in us Divine, and Infalible Faith?* I have often heard some wise men say,

* Will A.C. maintaine, that any Legate à Latere, is of as great Credit, as the Pope himselfe?

S. Iohn. 13. 13.

A. C. p. 52.

That the *Iesuite* in the Church of *Rome*, and the *Pre-cise party* in the *Reformed Churches* agree in many things, though they would seeme most to differ. And surely this is one : For both of them differ extremely about *Tradition*. The one in magnifying it, and exalting it into *Divine Authority* ; The other vilifying, and depressing it almost beneath *Humane*. And yet even in these different wayes, both agree in this consequent : *That the Sermons and Preachings by word of mouth, of the lawfully sent Pastors and Doctors of the Church are able to breed in us Divine and Infallible Faith;*

* For this *A. C.* sayes expressly of Tradition p. 52. And then he addes, that the Promise for this was no lesse, but rather more Expressly made to the lawfully sent Pastors and Doctors of the Church in all ages in their teaching by word of mouth, then in writing, &c. p. 53.

† For the freeing of factious and silenced Ministers, is termed, the *Restoring of Gods Word to its Liberty*: In the Godly Author of the late *News from Ipswich* p. 5.

Nay are the * *very word of God*. So *A. C.* expressly. And no lesse then so, have some accounted of their owne *factious words* (to say no more) then as the † *Word of God*. I ever tooke *Sermons* (and so doe still) to be most necessary *Expositions*, and *Applications*

of *Holy Scripture*, and a great ordinary meanes of *saving knowledge*. But I cannot thinke them, or the *Preachers* of them *Divinely Infallible*. The *Ancient Fathers* of the Church preached farre beyond any of these of either *faction* ; And yet no one of them durst thinke himselfe *Infallible*, much lesse, that whatsoever hee preached was the *Word of God*. And it may be Obserued too, That no men are more apt to say, That all the *Fathers were but Men*, and might *Erre*, then they that thinke their owne *preachings are Infallible*.

NUM. 32.

The next thing (after this large Interpretation of *A. C.*) which I shall trouble you with, is, That this method, and manner of proving *Scripture to be the Word of God*, which I here use, is the same, which the

the Ancient Church ever held, namely, *Tradition*, or *Ecclesiasticall Authority* first; and then all other *Arguments*, but especially *internall*, from the *Scripture* it selfe. This way the Church went in *S. Augustine's*

^a Time. He was no enemy to *Church-Tradition*; yet when hee would prove, that the Authour of the *Scripture* (and so of the whole knowledge of Divinity, as it is *supernaturall*) is *Deus in Christo*, God in Christ; he takes this as the All-sufficient way, and gives *four* proofes, all *internall* to the *Scripture*: First, *The Miracles*. Secondly, *That there is nothing carnall in the Doctrine*. Thirdly, *That there hath been such performance of it*. Fourthly, *That by such a Doctrine of Humility, the whole world almost hath beene converted*. And whereas *ad muniendam Fidem*,

for the Defending of the Faith, and keeping it entire, there are two things requisite, *Scripture*, and *Church-Tradition*; ^b *Vincent. Lirinens.* places *Authority of Scriptures* first; and then *Tradition*. And since it is apparent, that *Tradition* is first in order of time, it must necessarily follow, that *Scripture* is first in order of Nature, that is, the chiefe, upon which Faith rests, and resolves it selfe. And your owne Schoole confesses this was the way ever. The Woman of ^a *Samaria* is a knowne Resemblance, ^a *S. Ioh. 4.*

but allowed by your selves: For ^b *quotidiè*, daily with them that are without, Christ enters by the woman, that is the Church, and they believe by that fame which she gives, &c. But when they come to heare Christ him selfe, they believe his words, before the words of the Woman. For when

^a And *S. Aug.* him selfe *L. 13. contr. Faustum c. 5.* proves by an *Internall Argument* the fulfilling of the *Prophecs*. *Scriptura* (saith he) *qua fides suam rebus ipsis probat qua per temporum successiones hac impleri, &c.* And *Hen. à Gand. Par. 1. Sum. A. 9. q. 3.* cites *S. Aug.* Book de vera Religione. In which Book, though these *Four Arguments* are not found in *Termes* together, yet they fill up the scope of the whole Book.

^b *Duplici modo muniiri fide &c. Primo Divinae Legis Autoritate, tum deinde Ecclesia Catholica Traditione, cont. Har. c. 1.*

^b *Hen. à Gand. Sum. Par. 1. A. 10. q. 1. Sic quotidiè apud illos qui foris sunt, intrat Christus per mulierem, i. Ecclesiam, & credunt per istam samariam, &c. Gloss. in S. Ioh. cap. 4.*

^c Ibid. *Plus verbis Christi in Scripturâ credit, quàm Ecclesia testificanti. Quia propter illam jam credit Ecclesia. Et si ipsa quidem contraria Scriptura diceret, ipsi non crederet, &c. Primam fidem tribuamus Scripturis Canonicis, secundam sub ista, Definitionibus & Consuetudinibus Ecclesiæ Catholice, post istas studiosis viris non sub pœna perfidiæ, sed proterviæ, &c. Walden. Doct. Fid. To. 1. L. 2. Art. 2. c. 23. Nu. 9.*

^d *In sacrâ Scripturâ Ipse immediatè loquitur fidelibus. Ibid.*

^e *S. Iohn 10. 4.*

they have once found Christ, ^e they do more believe his words in Scripture, then they do the Church, which testifies of him; because then propter illam, for the Scripture they believe the Church: And if the Church should speake contrary to the Scripture, they would not believe it. Thus the Schoole taught then; And thus the Glosse commented then; And when men have tyred themselves, hither they must come. The Key, that lets men in to the Scriptures, even to this knowledge of them, That they are the Word of God, is the Tradition of the Church: but when they are in, ^d They heare Christ himselfe immediately speaking in Scripture to the Faithfull: ^e And his Sheepe doe not onely heare, but know his voice. And then here's no vicious Circle indeed of prooving the Scripture by the Church, and then round about, the Church by the Scripture. Onely distinguish the Times, and the Conditions of men, and all is safe. For a Beginner in the Faith, or a Weakling, or a Doubter about it, begins at Tradition, and proves Scripture by the Church: But a man strong and growne up in the Faith, and understandingly conversant in the Word of God, proves the Church by the Scripture; And then upon the matter, we have a double Divine Testimony, altogether Infallible, to confirme unto us, That Scripture is the Word of God. The first is the Tradition of the Church of the Apostles themselves, who delivered immediately to the world, the Word of Christ. The other, the Scripture it selfe, but after it hath received this Testimony. And into these we doe, and may safely Resolve
our

our Faith. ^a *As for the Tradition of after Ages, in, and about which Miracles and Divine Power were not so evident, we believe them (by Gandavo's full Confession) because they doe not preach other things then those former*

(the Apostles) left in scriptis certissimis, in most certaine Scripture. And it appeares by men in the middle ages, that these writings were vitiated in nothing, by the concordant consent in them of all succeeding, to our owne time.

And now by this time it will be no hard thing to reconcile the Fathers, which seeme to speake differently in no few places, both one from another, and the same from themselves, touching Scripture and Tradition; And that as well in this Point, to prove Scripture to be the Word of God, as for concordant exposition of Scripture in all things else.

When therefore the Fathers say,

^b *We have the Scripture by Tradition, or the like, either They meane the Tradition of the Apostles themselves delivering it, and there, when it is knowne to be such, we may resolve*

our Faith. Or if they speake of the Present Church, then they meane, that the Tradition of it, is that by which we first receive the Scripture, as by an according Meanes to the Prime Tradition. But because it is not simply Divine, we cannot resolve our Faith into it, nor settle our Faith upon it, till it resolve it selfe into the Prime Tradition of the Apostles, or the Scripture, or both; and there we rest with it. And you cannot shew an ordinary consent of Fathers: Nay can you, or any of your Quarter, shew any one Father of the
Church,

^a *Quod autem credimus posterioribus, circa quos non apparent virtutes Divinae, hoc est, Quia non predicant alia, quam quae illi in Scriptis certissimis reliquerunt. Quae constat per medios in nullo fuisse vitata ex consensione concordis in eis omnium succedentium usque ad tempora nostra.*
Henr. à Gand. *Sum. P. 1. A. 9. q. 3.*

Num. 33.

^b *Scripturas habemus ex Traditione. S. Cyril. Hier. Catech. 4. Multa quae non inveniuntur in Literis Apostolorum, &c. non nisi ab illis tradita & commendata creduntur. S. Aug. 2. de Baptismo. contra Donat. c. 7.*

Church, Greeke, or Latine, that ever said, *We are to resolve our Faith, that Scripture is the Word of God, into the Tradition of the present Church?* And againe, when the *Fathers* say, we are to relie upon Scrip-

ture ^aonely, they are never to bee understood with Exclusion of Tradition, in what causes soever it may be had, ^bNot but that the Scripture is abundantly sufficient, in, and to it self for all things, but because it is deepe: and maybe drawne into different senses, and so mistaken, if any man will pre-

^a *Non aliunde scientia Cœlestium. S. Hilari. L. 4. de Trin. Si Angelus de Cœlo annuntiaverit praterquam quod in Scripturis, &c. S. Aug. L. 3. cont. Petil. c. 6.*

^b *Quum sit perfectus Scripturarum Canon, sibi q. ad omnia satis superq. sufficiat, &c. Vin. Lit. contra Hæres. c. 2. And if it be sibi ad omnia, then to this, To prove it self, at least after Tradition hath prepared us to receive it.*

sume upon his owne strength, and go single without the Church.

NUM. 34.

To gather up whatsoever may seeme scattered in this long Discourse to prove, *That Scripture is the Word of God*, I shall now in the Last Place put all together, that so the whole state of the *Question* may the better appeare.

Pun. 1.

First then I shall desire the Reader to consider, that every Rationall Science requires some Principles quite without its owne Limits, which are not pro-

^c *Omnis Scientia presupponit fidem aliquam. S. Prosper, in Psalm. 123. And S. Cyril. Hierosol. Catechesi 5. shewes how all things in the world do fide consistere. Therefore most unreasonable to deny that to Divinity, which all Sciences, nay all things challenge. Namely, some things to be presupposed, and believed.*

ved in that Science, but presupposed. Thus Rhetoricke presupposes Grammar, and Musicke Arithmeticke. Therefore it is most reasonable that ^cTheologie should be allowed to have some Principles also, which she proves not, but presupposes. And the chiefe of

these, is, *That the Scriptures are of Divine Authority.*

Pun. 2.

Secondly, that there is a great deal of difference in the Manner of confirming the Principles of Divinity, and those of any other Art, or Science whatsoever.

For

For the *Principles* of all other *Sciences* doe finally resolve, either into the *Conclusions* of some *Higher Science*; or into those *Principles* which are *per se nota*, known by their own light, and are the *Grounds* and *Principles* of all *Science*. And this is it, which properly makes them *Sciences*, because they proceed with such strength of *Demonstration*, as forces *Reason* to yeeld unto them. But the *Principles* of *Divinity* resolve not into the *Grounds* of *Naturall Reason* (For then there would be no roome for *Faith*, but all would bee either *Knowledge*, or *Vision*) but into the *Maximes* of *Divine Knowledge* *supernaturall*. And of this we have just so much light, and no more, then God hath revealed unto us in the *Scripture*.

Thirdly, That though the *Evidence* of these *Supernaturall Truths*, which *Divinity* teaches, appears

not so manifest as that of the *Naturall*; yet they are in themselves much more sure and infallible then they. For they proceed immediately from God, that *Heavenly Wisdom*, which being the fountain of ours, must needs infinitely precede ours, both in *Nature* and *excellence*. He that teacheth man knowledge, shall not be know?

† *Psal.* 94. And therefore, though

wee reach not the *Order* of their *Deductions*, nor can in this life come to the *vision* of them, yet wee yeeld as full, and firme *Assent*, not onely to the *Articles*, but to all the *Things* rightly deduced from them, as wee doe to the most evident *Principles* of *Naturall Reason*. This *Assent* is called *Faith*. And *Faith* being of things not seene, *Heb.* 11.

Heb. 11.1.

P

^a would

^a Si vis credere manifestis, invisibilibus magis quam visibilibus oportet credere. Licet dictum sit admirabile, verum est, &c. S. Chrysostom. *Him.* 46. ad Pop. And there he proves it. *Alia Scientie certitudinem habent ex Naturali Lumine Rationis Humanae, quae decipi potest: Hae autem ex Lumine Divinae Scientiae, quae decipi non potest.* *Tho.* p. 1. q. 1. A. 5. c.

† *Psal.* 94. 10. Our old English Translation reads it, Shall not he punish? That is, shall not he know when, and why, and how to punish?

* Si sit Ratio convincens, & propter eam quis credat, aliàs non credaturus, tollitur meritum fidei. Biel. 3. D. 25. q. unic. *fi ne. Non est dicendus credere, cujus iudicium subigitur, aut cogitur, &c.* Stapl. Triplicat. contra Whitaker. cap. 6. p. 64.
 b Fides non fit in nobis nisi volentibus, Tolet. in S. Ioh. 16. Amos. 33. Et qui voluerunt, crediderunt. S. Aug. Serm. 60. de verb. Dom. c. 5. Fides Altus est, non solius Intellectus, sed etiam Voluntatis, qua cogi non potest. Imò magis Voluntatis quam Intellectus, quatenus illa Operationis principium est, & Assensum (qui proprie Actus fidei est) sola elicit. Nec ab Intellectu Voluntatis, sed à Voluntate Intellectus in Actu fidei determinatur. Stapl. Triplic. cont. Whitak. c. 6. p. 64. Credere enim est Actus Intellectus determinatus ad unum ex Imperio Voluntatis. Tho. 2. 2. q. 4. A. 1. c. Non potest dari aliquis Assensus fidei, quicumque ille sit, qui non dependet in suis Causis mediata vel immediata ab actu Voluntatis. Alm. in Serm. D. 24. Conclus. 6. Dub. 4.
 Ar Aug. says: Fidei locus esse Cor.
 Tr in S. Ioh. Where the Heart
 is | whole soule, which equally
 coi | s both the Will and the Un-
 der | And so doth Biel also, in 3.
 Se | j. q. unic. Art. 1. F.

would quite loose its honour; nay it selfe, if it met with sufficient Grounds in *Natural Reason*, whereon to stay it selfe. For Faith is a mixed Act of the *Will* and the *Understanding*, and the *Will* inclines the *Understanding* to yeeld full approbation to that whereof it sees not full prooffe. Not but that there is most full prooffe of them; but because the maine Grounds which prove them, are concealed from our view, and folded up in the *unrevealed Counsell of God*, God in Christ resolving to bring mankind to their last happinesse by Faith, and not by knowledge, that so the weakest among men may have their way to blessednesse open. And certaine it is, that many weak men believe themselves into Heaven, and many over-estimating Chri-

tians loose their way thither, while they will believe no more then they can clearely know. In which pride, and vanity of theirs they are left, and have these things hid from them, S. Matth. 11.

S. Mat. I. 1. 25.

Pun. 4.

Fourthly, That the Credit of the Scripture, the Booke in which the Principles of Faith are written, (as of other writings also) depends not upon the subservient *Inducing Cause*, that leads us to the first knowledge of the *Authour*, which leader here is the Church; but upon the *Author* himself, and the Opinion we have of his sufficiency, which here is the *Holy Spirit of God*, whose Pen-men the *Prophets* and *Apostles* were. And therefore the *Mysteries of Divinity* contained

in

in this Booke; As the Incarnation of our Saviour; The Resurrection of the dead, and the like, cannot finally bee resolved into the sole Testimony of the Church, who is but a Subservient Cause, to lead to the knowledge of the Authour, but into the wisdom and Sufficiency of the Authour, who being Omnipotent, and Omniscient, must needs bee Infalible.

Fifthly, That the Assurance we have of the Pen-
men of the Scriptures, the Holy Prophets, and Apo-
stles, is as great, as any can be had of any Humane
Authours of like Antiquity. For it is morally as evi-
dent to any Pagan, that S. Matthew and S. Paul
writ the Gospel, and Epistles which beare their
Names, as that Cicero, or Seneca wrote theirs. But
that the Apostles were divinely inspired, whilst they writ
them, and that they are the very Word of God expres-
sed by them, this hath ever beene a matter of Faith in
the Church, and was so, even while the Apostles
themselves^a lived, and
was never a matter of
Evidence and Know-
ledge, at least as Know-
ledge is opposed to
Faith. Nor could it
at any time then bee
more Demonstratively
proved then now.

I say, not Scientifically, not Demonstratively. For,
were the Apostles living, and should they tell us,
that they spake, and writ the very Oracles of God:
yet this were but their owne Testimony of themselves,
and so not alone able to enforce Beliefe on others.
And for their Miracles, though they were very
Great Inducements of Beliefe, yet were neither they

Pun. 5.

^a The Apostles indeed they knew, for they had cleare Revelation: They to whom they preached, might believe, but they could not know without the like Revelation. So S. Ioh. 19. 35. He that saw, knowes that he sayes true, that you, which saw not, might believe. Deus in Prophetis (& sic in Apostolis) quos immediate illuminabat, causabat evidentiam. Iaco. Almain. in 3. Sent. Dif. 24. q. unica. Conclus. 6. But for the residue of men, 'tis no more, but as Thomas hath it. Oportet quod credatur Authoritati eorum, quibus Revelatio facta est. Tho. p. 1. q. 1. A. 8. ad 8.

^b *Non est evidens vel ista esse vera miracula: vel ista fieri ad illam Veritatem comprobendam.* L. Almain, in 3. Sent. D. 24. q. unic. Concl. 6. Therefore the Miracles which Christ and his Apostles did, were fully sufficient to beget Faith to Assent, but not Evidence to Convince.

^c *Cantos nos fecit Sponsus, quia & Miraculis decipi non debemus.* S. Aug. T. 13. in S. Ioh. And he that sayes we ought not to be deceived, acknowledges that we may be deceived even by Miracles. And Arguments which can deceive, are not sufficient to Convince. Though they be sometimes too full of efficacy to pervert, And so plainly Almain, out of Ockham, *Nunquam acquiritur Evidentia per Medium quod de se generat falsum assensum, sicut verum.* la. Alma. in 3. Sent. Di. 24. q. unic. Conc. 6. And therefore that Learned *Romane* Catholik, who tels us, the Apostles Miracles made it evident, that their doctrine was true and Divine, went too farre. Credible they made it, but not Evident. And therefore he is after forced to confesse, That the soule sometime assents not to the Miracles, but in great timidity, which cannot stand with cleere Evidence. And after againe, That the soule may renounce the Doctrine formerly confirmed by Miracles, unless some inward, and supernaturall Light be given, &c. And neither can this possibly stand with Evidence. And therefore Bellarmine goes no farther then this: *Miracula esse sufficientia, & efficacia ad novam fidem persuadendam.* L. 4. de Notis Eccles. c. 14. §. 1. To induce and perswade, but not to Convince. And Thomas will not grant so much, for he sayes expressly: *Miraculum non est sufficiens Causa inducens Fidem.* Quia evidentium unum & idem Miraculum, quidam credunt, & quidam non. Tho. 2. 2. q. 6. A. 1. c. And Ambros. Catharin. in Rom. 10. 15. is downe-right at *Nulla fides est habenda signo.* *Examinanda sunt, &c.* Anastasius Nicanus Episcopus, apud Baron. ad An. 360. num. 21, *Non sunt necessaria signa vere fidei, &c.* Suarez, defens. Fidei Catho. L. 1. c. 7. Nu. 3.

^d Deut. 13. 1, 2, 3. 2. Thess. 2. 9. S. Marc. 13. 22.

^e *Operatio Virtutum alteri datur.* 1. Cor. 12. 10. (To one and another he faith, not to al.) *Demonia fugare, Mortuos suscitare, &c.* dedit quibusdam Discipulis suis, quibusdam non dedit. (That is to doe Miracles.) S. Aug. Serm. 22. de Verbis Apost. c. 5.

† S. Ioh. 10. 41.

other of the Prophets, did any, neither were any wrought by S. Iohn the Baptist, † S. Ioh. 10. So, as Credible Signes they were, and are still of as much force to us, as 'tis possible for things on the credit of Relation to be: For the Witnesses are many, and such as spent their lives in making good the Truth, which they saw. But that the Workers of them were Divinely and

Evident and Con-
vincing Prooves,
^b alone and of
themselves. Both
because, There
may bee coun-
terfeit Miracles:
And because true
ones are neither
Infallible nor In-
separable Markes
of Truth in Do-
ctrine. Not Infalli-
ble: For they
may be Marks of
false Doctrine in
the highest de-
gree. ^c Deut. 13.
Not proper, and
Inseparable: For
^e all which wrote
by Inspiration, did
not confirm their
Doctrine by Mi-
racles. For we do
not finde that
David, or Selo-
mon, with some

and *Infallibly* inspired in that which they Preacht,

and writ was still to the *Hearers* a matter of *Faith*, and no more evident by the light of *Humane Reason* to men that lived in those *Dayes*, then to us now. For had that beene *Demonstrated*, or beene cleare (as Prime Principles are) in its owne light, both they and we had apprehended all the Mysteries of *Divinity* by *Knowledge*, not by *Faith*. But this is most apparent was not. For had the *Prophets*, or *Apostles* been ordered by God to make this *Demonstrative*, or *Intuitively* by Discourse, or vision appeare as cleare to their Auditors, as to themselves it did, that Whatsoever they taught was *Divine*, and *Infallible Truth*, all men which had the true use of Reason, must have beene forced to yeeld to their Doctrine.

^a *Esay* could never have beene at *Domine quis*? *Lord* ^a *Esay* 53. 1.

who hath believed our Report? *Esay* 53. Nor ^b *Jeremy* at ^b *Ier.* 20. 7.

Domine, factus sum, *Lord I am in derision daily*; *Ier.* 20. Nor could any of *S. Pauls* Auditors have mocked at him (as some of them did) ^{*} *Act.* 17. for *Preaching the Resurrection*, if they had had as full a view as *S. Paul* himselfe had in the *Assurance*, which God gave of it in, and by the *Resurrection of Christ.* *vers.* 31. But the way of

Knowledge was not that which God thought fittest for mans Salvation For *Man* having sinned by *Pride*, God thought fittest to humble him at the very root

† Here it may be observed how warily *A.C.* carries himselfe. For when hee hath said, *That a cleare Revelation was made to the Apostles*, which is most true; And so the Apostles knew that which they taught *simpliciter à priori*, not *Demonstratively* from the Prime Cause, God himselfe. Then hee addes p. 51. *I say, cleare in attestante.* That is the Revelation of this Truth was cleare in the Apostles that witnessed it. But to make it knowledge in the Auditors, the same, or like Revelation, and as cleare must be made to them. For they could have no other *knowing* Assurance; *Credible* they might, and had. So *A.C.* is wary there, but comes not home to the Business: And so might have held his peace. For the Question is not, what cleare Evidence the Apostles had? but what Evidence they had, which heard them?

^{*} *Acts* 17. 32. And had *Zedechiah* and the people seene it as clearely as *Jeremy* himselfe did, that the word he spake was Gods word, and *Infallible*, *Ierusalem*, for ought we know, had not beene layd desolate by the *Chaldean*. But because they could not see this by the way of *knowledge*, and would not believe it by way of *Faith*, they, and that City perished together. *Ier.* 38. 17.

of the *Tree of Knowledge*, and make him deny his *understanding*, and submit to *Faith*, or hazard his happinesse. The *Credible Object* all the while, that is, the *Mysteries of Religion*, and the *Scripture* which containes them is *Divine* and *Infalible*, and so are the *Pen-men* of them *Revelation*.

* *Nemo pius, nisi qui Scripture credit.*
S. Aug. L. 26. cont. Faustum. c. 6. Now no Man believes the *Scripture*, that doth not believe that it is the *Word of God*. I say, which doth not believe, I doe not say, which doth not know. *Oportet quod Credatur Autoritati eorum quibus Revelatio facta est.* Tho p. 1. q. 1. A. 8. a. secundum. *Et de Luxu & Quæst. & c.* Quod vero Animam habemus, unde manifestum? Si enim Visibilibus credere velis, & de Deo, & de Angelis, & de mente, & de Anima dubitabis: & sic tibi omnia veritatis dogmata deperibunt. Et certe si manifestis credere velis, Invisibilibus magis quam Visibilibus credere oportet. Licet enim admirabile sit dictum, verum tamen, & apud mentem habentes valde certum, vel in confesso. Ex homil. 13. S. Chrysost. in S. Mat. To. 1. Edit. Fronto: Paris. 1636.

But we, and all our *Hearers*, and *Reasoners* of them, have neither **knowledge*, nor *vision* of the *Prime Principle* in, or about them, but **Faith* only. And the *Revelation*, which was cleare to them, is not so to us, nor therefore the *Prime Tradition* it selfe delivered by them.

Pun. 6.

Sixthly, That hence it may be gathered, that the *Assent*, which we yeeld to this maine Principle of *Divinity*, That the *Scripture* is the *Word of God*, is grounded vpon no *Compelling*, or *Demonstrative Ratiocination*, but relies upon the strength of *Faith*, more then any other Principle whatsoever. † For all other necessary *Poynts* of *Divinity*, may by undeniable *Discourse* bee inferred out of *Scripture* it selfe once admitted; but this, concerning the *Authority* of *Scripture* not possibly: But must either be prooved by *Revelation*, which is not now to bee expected: Or presupposed and granted as manifest in it selfe, like the *Principles of naturall knowledge*, which *Reason* alone will never Grant: Or by *Tradition* of the *Church*, both *Prime*, and *Present*, with all other *Rational Helpe*s, preceding, or accompanying the *internall*

† And this is the Ground of that which I said before, §. 15. Nu. 1. That the *Scripture* only, and not any unwritten *Tradition* was the *Foundation* of our *Faith*. Namely, when the *Authority* of *Scripture* is first yeelded unto.

Light

Light in Scripture it selfe; which though it give Light enough for Faith to believe, yet Light enough it gives not to bee a convincing Reason, and prooffe for knowledge. And this is it, which makes the very entrance into Divinity, inaccessible to those men, who standing high in the Opinion of their owne wisdom, will believe nothing, but that which is irrefragably proved from Rationall Principles. For as *S. Luke 9: 23.* a Deniall of a mans selfe, that he may be able to follow him. *S. Luke 9:* So as great a part as any of this Denyall of his Whole-selfe (for so it must bee) is the denyall of his Vnderstanding, and the composing of the unquiet search of this Grand Inquisitor into the Secrets of Him that made it, and the over-ruling the doubtfullnesse of it by the fervency of the^a Will.

Seventhly, That the knowledge of the Supreme Cause of all (which is God) is most remote, and the most difficult thing Reason can have to do with. The Quod sit, That there is a God, ^b bleare-eyed Reason can see. But the^c Quid sit, what that God is, is infinitely beyond all the fathoms of Reason. He is a Light indeed, but such as no mans Reason can come at for the Brightnes.^d *1 Tim. 6.*

^a *Intellectus Credentis determinatur per Voluntatem, non per Rationem. Tho. 2. 2. q. 2. A. 1. ad tertium.* And what power the Will hath in Case of mens Believing, or not Believing, is manifest, *Jer. 44.* But this is spoken of the Will compared with the Vnderstanding onely, leaving the Operations of Grace free over Both,

^b *Communis enim sententia est Patrum & Theologorum aliorum, demonstrari posse naturaliratione Deum esse, Sed à posteriori & per effectus. Sic Tho. p. 1. q. 2. A. 2. Et Damasc. L. 1. Orth. Fid. c. 3. & Almain. in 3. sent. D. 24 q. 1.* But what may be demonstrated by naturall reason, by natural light may the same be known, And so the Apostle him selfe, *Rom. 1. 20. Invisibilia Dei à Creatura mundi per ea quæ facta sunt, intellecta conspiciuntur.* And so Calvin most clearly, *L. 1. Inst. c. 5. §. 1. perire Oculos nequeunt, quin aspicere eum coguntur,* though Bellarmine would needes be girding at him *L. 4. de Grat. & Lib. Arbit. c. 2. Videtur autem & Ratio is quæ apparent attestari: Omnes enim homines de Deo (ut ille loquitur) habent existimationem, Arist. L. 1. de Cælo T. 22.*

^c *Damasc. L. 1. Ortho. Fid. c. 4.*

^d *1 Tim. 6. 16. Et ne Vestigium sic accedendi relinquit S. Aug. nisi augeas imaginatione cogitationis lucem solis innumerabiliter vel quid aliud &c. L. 8. de Trin. c. 2. Solus modus accedendi, Preces sunt. Boet. de Consola. Philos. L. 5. prosa. 3.*

If

^c *Præter Scientias Philosophicas, necesse est ut ponatur alia Scientia divinitus revelata de iis quæ hominis cap- tum excedunt.* Tho. p. 1. q. 1. A. 1.

^f And therefore *Biel* is expresse, That God could not re- veale any thing that is to come, *nisi illud esset à Deo præ- scitum seu prævisum* (i. e. unlesse God did fully compre- hend that which He doth reveale) *Biel. in 3. sent. D. 13. q. 2. A. 1.*

^g *Nullus Intellectus Creatus videndo Deum, potest cogno- scere Omnia quæ Deus facit, vel potest facere. Hoc enim esset Comprehendere ejus virtutem.* &c. Tho. p. 1. q. 12. A. 3. C.

Ad Argumentum : Quod Deus ut Speculum est : Et quod Omnia quæ fieri possunt, in eo resplendent. Respon- det Thom. Quod non est necessarium, quod videns specu- lum, omnia in speculo videat, nisi speculum visu suo com- prehendat. Tho. p. 1. q. 12. A. 8. ad 2. (Now no man can comprehend this Glasse which is God himselfe.)

^h *Deus enim est Speculum voluntarium revelans quæ & quot vult alicui beato : non est Speculum naturaliter re- presentans omnia.* Biel. Suppl. in 4. Sent. D. 49. q. 3. propo. 3.

ⁱ For if Reason well put to its search did not finde this out, how came *Arist.* to affirme this by rational diquif- sition, *ἡ ἀνθρώπου δὲ τὸν νοῦν &c.* Restat, ut mens sola extrinsecus accedat, eaque sola divina sit, nihil enim cum ejus Actione communicat Actio corporalis. *A. ut. l. 2. de gen. Anim. c. 3.* This cannot be spoken of the Soule, were it mortall, And therefore I must needs be of *Paulus* *Benius* his opinion, who sayes plainly, and proves it too, *Turpi- ter affixam à quibusdam Aristoteli Mortalitaris Anima Opinionem.* *Benius in Timæum Platonis Decad. 2a. L. 3.*

^k For if Reason did not dictate this also, whence is it that *Aristotle* disputes of the way and meanes of attain- ing it. *L. 1. Moral. c. 9.* And takes on him to proove That Felicity is rather an Honourable then a Com- mendable thing. c. 12. And after all this, he addes, *Deo beata tota vita est, hominibus autem eatenus, quatenus similitudo quadam ejusmodi Operationis ipsis in est.* *Arist. L. 10. Moral. c. 8.*

^l *S. Iohn 17. 3. Ultima Beatitudo hominis consistit in quadam supernaturali visione Dei. Ad hanc autem visi- oneis Homo pertingere non potest, nisi per modum Adscen- dentis à Deo Doctore, Omnis qui audit à Patre & didicit.* *S. Iohn 6. 45. Thom. 2. 2. q. 2. A. 3. in c.*

If any thing therefore bee attainable in this kinde, it must bee by

^c *Revelation*; And that must bee from *Him- selfe* : for none can Reveale, but ^f hee that Comprehends. And ^g none doth, or can compre- hend God, but *Himselfe*.

And when he doth Re- veale, yet He is no far- ther discernable, then

^h *Himself* pleases. Now since ⁱ Reason teaches,

that the Soule of man is immortal, and ^k cape- able of Felicity. And

since that Felicity con- sists in the Contemplation of the highest Cause, wch

again is God himselfe. And since Christ ther- in Confirms that Di-

ctate, that mans eternal Happines is to know

God, and Him whom he hath sent, *S. k Ioh. 17.*

And since nothing can put us into the way of attaining to that Con-

templation, but some Re- velation of Himselfe, and of the way to himselfe. I say,

since all this is so, It cannot reasonably be thought by any prudent man, that the All-wise God should create

create man with a Desire of *Felicity*; and then leave him utterly destitute of all *Instrumentall Helps* to make the *Attainment* possible: since * *God and Nature* do nothing, but for an end. And Helpe there can bee none sufficient, but by *Revelation*. And once grant mee that *Revelation* is necessary, and then I will appeale to Reason it selfe, and that shall prove abundantly one of these two. That either, there was never any such *Revelation* of this kinde from the worlds beginning to this day: And that will put the *frustrā* upon God in point of mans *Felicitie*: Or, that the *Scriptures* which wee now embrace, as the *Word of God*, is that *Revelation*. And that's it we Christians labour to make good against all *Atheisme*, *Prophanenesse*, and *Infidelity*.

* *Deus & natura nihil frustra faciunt. Arist. L. 1. de Caelo. T. 32 frustra autem est quod non potest habere suum usū Thom. ibid.*

Last of all, To prove that the *Booke of God* which we honour as His *Word*, is this necessary *Revelation* of God and his *Truth*, which must, and is alone able, to leade us in the way to our eternall *Blessednesse* (or else the world hath none) comes in a *Cloud of witnesses*. Some for the *Infidel*, and some for the *Believer*. Some for the *Weake* in *Faith*, and some for the *Strong*. And some for all. For then first comes in the *Tradition* of the *Church*, the present *Church*; so 'tis no *Hereticall*, or *Schismaticall* *Beliefe*. Then the *Testimony* of former *Agēs*; so 'tis no *New* *Beliefe*. Then the *consent* of *Times*; so 'tis no *Divided* or *partiall* *Beliefe*. Then the *Harmony* of the *Prophets*, and them fulfilled; so 'tis not a * *Devised*, but a *forespoken* *Beliefe*. Then the suc-
* 2 Pet. 1. 16.

Pur. 8.

Q

hath

hath preserved it's *Creede* entire through many generations. Then; *that there is nothing Carnall in the Doctrine*; so 'tis a *Chast* Beliefe. And all along it hath gained, kept, and exercised more power upon the minds of men, both learned, and unlearned, in the increase of vertue, and repressiō of vice, then any *Morall Philosophie*, or *Legall Policy* that ever was. Then comes the *inward Light and Excellency of the Text it self*; and so 'tis no *darke*, or *dazling* Beliefe. And 'tis an *Excellent Text*: For see the riches of *Naturall knowledge*, which are stored up there, as well as *Supernaturall*. Consider how things quite above *Reason* consent with things *Reasonable*. Weigh it well what *Majesty* lyes

there hid under *Humility*: ^a What *Depth* ther is with a *Perspicuity* unimitable: What ^b *Delight* it works in the Soule, that is devoutely exercised in it, how the ^c *Sublimest* wits finde in it enough to amaze them; while the ^c *simplest* want not enough to direct them. And then we shall not wonder, if (with the assistance of ^d *Gods Spirit*, who alone workes Faith and Beliefe of the Scriptures, and their Divine Authority, as well as other Articles) wee grow up into a most *Infallible Assurance*, such an *Assurance*, as hath made many lay downe their lives for this Truth: such, as that,

^{*} *Though an Angell from Heaven*

should Preach unto us another Gospell, we would not believe Him, or it. No; though wee should see as great, and as many *Miracles* done over againe to dissuade us from it, as were at first to win the world

to

^a *Quasi quidam survus est, planus, & Alnus, in quo & Agnus ambulet, & Elephas natet.* S. Greg. *Prefat. in Lib. Moralium.* c. 4.

^b *In Lege Domini voluntas ejus.* Psa. 1. 2. *Dulcor super mel & favum.* Psa. 18. 11. & passim.

^c *Multa dicuntur submissis & humi repletibus animis, ut accommodatiis per humana in Divina consurgant. Multa etiam figurate, ut studiosa mens, & quesitis exercetur utilius & uberius lateatur inventis.* S. Aug. de Mor. Ec. Cat. c. 17. *Sed nihil sub spirituali sensu continetur Fidei necessarium, quod Scriptura per Literalem sensum alicubi manifeste non tradat.* Tho. p. 1. q. 1. A 10 ad 1.

^d *Credimus &c. sicut ob alia multa certiora Argumenta (quam est Testimonium Ecclesie) tum propter hoc potissimum, quod Spiritus Sanctus nobis intus has esse Dei voces persuadeat.* Whitaker, *Disput. de Sa. Scrip. Controvers.* 1. q. 3. c. 8.

Gal. 1. 8.

to it. To which firmnesse of *Assent* by the Operation of *Gods Spirit*, the *Will* conferres as much, or more *strength*, then the *Vnderstanding*, *Clearnesse*, the whole *Assent* being an *Act* of *Faith*, and not of *Knowledge*. And therefore the *Question* should not have beene asked of mee by F. *How I knew*? But *Upon what Motives* I did believe *Scripture* to bee the *Word* of *God*? And I would have him take heed, lest hunting too close after a way of *Knowledge*, hee loose the way of *Faith*, and teach other men to loose it too.

So then the Way lyes thus (as farre as it appears *Pur. 9.* to me) *The Credit of Scripture* to bee *Divine* Resolves

finally into that *Faith*, which wee have touching *God Himselfe*, and in the same order. For as that, so this hath *Three* maine *Grounds*, to which all other are Reducible. The *First* is, the *Tradition of the Church*: And this leades us to a Reverend perswasion of it.

The *Second* is, *The light of Nature*: And this shewes us how necessary such a *Revealed Learning* is, and that

no other way it can be had: * Nay more, that all *Proofes* brought against any *Point of Faith*, neither are, nor can be *Demonstrations*, but soluble *Arguments*.

* Cum Fides infallibili veritati innitatur. Et ideo cum impossibile sit de vero demonstrari Contrarium: sequitur omnes Probationes quæ contra fidem inducuntur, non posse esse Demonstrationes, sed solubilia Argumenta. Tho. p. 1. q. 1. 8. c.

The *Third* is, *The light of the Text it selfe*; in *Conversing* wherewith wee meet with the † *Spirit of God* inwardly inclining our hearts, and sealeing the full *Assurance* of the sufficiency of all *Three* unto us. And then, and not before, wee are certaine, *That the Scripture is the Word of God* both by *Divine*, and by *Infalible* *Prooffe*. But our *Certainty* is by *Faith*, and so *voluntary*, not by *Knowledge* of such *Principles*, as in the light of *Nature* can enforce *Assent*, whether we will or no.

† Fidei ultima Resolutio est in Deum illuminantem. S. Aug. cont. Fund. c. 14.

Q 2

I have

I have said thus much upon this great Occasion, because this *Argument* is so much pressed, without due respect to Scripture. And I have proceeded in a *Syntheticall* way, to build up the *Truth* for the benefit of the *Church*, & the satisfaction of all men Christianly disposed. Whereas had I desired only to rid my hands of these *Captious Jesuites* (for certainly this *Question* was *Captiously* asked :) it had beene sufficient to have restored the *Question*, thus, How doe you know the *Testimony* of the *Church* (by which, you say, you know *Scripture* to be the *Word of God*) to be *Divine* and *Infallible* : If they proove it by *Scripture* (as all of them doe, and as *A. C.* doth) how doe they know that *Scripture* to be *Scripture* ? It is but a *Circular Assurance* of theirs, by which they found the *Churches Infallibility* upon the *Testimonie* of the *Scripture*; And the *Scriptures Infallibility* upon the *Testimony* of the *Church* : That is upon the Matter, the *Churches Infallibility* upon the *Churches Infallibility*. But I labour for edification, not for destruction. And now, by what I have here said, I will weigh my *Answer*, and his *Exception* taken against it.

A. C. p. 53. Et
vid. §. 16. N. 28.

F. The Bishop said, That the Books of Scripture are Principles to be Supposed, and needed not to be Proved.

§. 17.

B. Why, but did I say, That this Principle (The Books of Scripture are the *Word of God*) is to be supposed, as needing no Proof at all to a *Naturall man* ? Or to a man newly entring upon the *Faith* ? yea or perhaps to a *Doubter*, or *Weakling* in the *Faith* ? Can you think me so weake ? It seemes you doe. But sure I know, there is a great deale of difference betweene *Ethnickes* that deny, and deride the *Scripture*, and men that are Born in the *Church*. The first have a farther way
about

about to this *Principle*; The other in their very Christian Education sucke it in, and are taught so soone as they are apt to learne it, *That the Books*, commonly called *The Bible*, or *Scripture*, are the *Word of God*. And I dealt with you † as with a Christian, though in *Errour*, while you call *Catholike*. The Words before spoken by me were, *That the Scripture onely, not any unwritten Tradition, was the Foundation of Faith*. The *Question* betweene us, and you, is, *Whether the Scripture do containe all necessary things of Faith*? Now in this *Question*, as in all *Nature*, and *Art*, the *Subject*, the *Scripture* is and must be ^a supposed. The *Quere* betweene the *Romane-Catholikes* and the *Church of England*, being onely of the *Prædicate*, the thing uttered of it, Namely, whether it containe all *Fundamentals of Faith*, all *Necessaries for Salvation* within it? Now since the *Question* proposed in very forme of *Art*, proves not, but ^b supposes the *Subject*, I thinke I gave a satisfying Answer, That to you, and me, and in this *Question*, *Scripture* was a *Supposed Principle*, and needed no Proofoe. And I must tell you, that in this *Question* of the *Scriptures* perfect Continent, it is against all *Art*, yea and *Equity* too, in Reasoning to call for a Proofoe of That here, which must go unavoydably supposed in this *Question*. And if any man will be so familiar with *Impiety*, to *Question* it, it must be tryed in a preceding *Question*, and *Dispute* by it self. Yet here not you onely, but ^c *Bellarmino*, and others run quite out of the way to snatch at Advantage.

† *Dixi sicut ei congruebat, ad quem scribebam, &c. S. Aug. l. i. Retract. c. 13.*

^a Nor is it such a strange thing to heare that *Scripture* is such a *supposed Principle* among Christians. *Quod à Scriptura evidenter deducitur, est evidenter verum, suppositis Scripturis.* Bellarm. *L. 4. de Eccl. Milit. c. 3. §. 3.*

^b *De Subjecto enim queritur semper; non Subjectum ipsum.*

^c *L. 4. de verb. Dei. c. 4. §. Quarto necesse est.* And the suite here apud *A.C. p. 49.*

F. Against this I read what I had formerly written in my Reply against M. Iohn White :

Q₃

Wherein

Wherein I plainly shewed, that this Answer was not good, and that no other Answer could be made, but by admitting some Word of God unwritten, to assure us of this Point.

§. 18.
NUM. 1.

B. Indeed here you read out of a Booke (which you called your owne) a large Discourse upon this Argument. But surely I so untied the knot of the Ar-

* L. 3 §. 8.

^b Whereas Bellarm. sayes expressly, that in the Controversies betweene you and us: *Non agitur de Metaphysicis subtilitatibus, quæ sine periculo ignorari, & interdum cum laude oppugnari possunt, &c.* Bellarm. *Præfat. Operibus præfix. §. 3.*

^c His omnibus Questionibus præmittenda est Controversia de Verbo Dei. Neque enim disputari potest, nisi prius in aliquo Communi Principio cum Adversariis conveniamus. Convergit autem inter nos & omnes omnino Hæreticos, Verbum Dei esse Regulam fidei, ex qua de Dogmatibus judicandum sit, esse Commune Principium ab omnibus concessum, unde Argumenta ducantur, &c. Bellarm. *Præfat. Operibus præfix. §. ult.* And if it be Commune Principium ab omnibus concessum, then I hope it must be taken as a thing supposed, or as a *Præcognitum* in this Dispute betweene us.

gument, that I set you to your Book againe. For your selfe confesse, that against this you read what you had formerly written. Well! what ere you read there, certaine it is you do a great deale of wrong to M. Hooker^a, and my selfe, that because we call it a Supposed or Presumed Principle among Christians, you should fall by and by into such a ^b Metaphysicall Discourse to prove, That that which is a ^c *Præcognitum*, fore-knowne in Science, must be of such light, that it must be knowne of, and by it selfe alone; and that the Scripture cannot be so knowne to be the Word of God.

NUM. 2.

I will not now enter againe into that Discourse, having said enough already, how farre the Beame, which is very glorious (especially in some parts of Scripture) gives light to prove it selfe. You see neither Hooker, nor I, nor the Church of England (for ought I know) leave the Scripture alone to manifest it selfe, by the light, which it hath in it selfe. No; but when the present Church hath prepared, and led the way, like a preparing Morning-Light to Sun-shine;

shine; then indeed we settle for our *Direction*, ~~for~~ yet not upon the first opening of the *morning Light*, but upon the *Sun* it selfe. Nor will I make needlesse enquiry, how farre, and in what manner a *Præcognitum*, or Supposed Principle in any Science, may be proved in a *Higher*, to which that is subordinate; or accepted for a *Prime*. Nor how it may in *Divinity*, where *Præ*, as well as *Post-cognita*, things *fore*, as well as *after-knownne*, are matters, and under the manner of *Faith*, and not of Science strictly. Nor whether a *Præcognitum*, a presupposed Principle in Faith, which rests upon *Divine Authority*, must needs have as much, and equall *Light* to Naturall Reason, as Prime Principles have in Nature, while they rest upon Reason. Nor whether it may justly bee denied to have *sufficient Light*, because not equall.

Your owne Schoole † grants, That in us, which are the Subjects both of Faith and Knowledge, and in regard of the Evidence given in unto

us, there is lesse Light, lesse Evidence in the Principles of Faith, then in the Principles of Knowledge, upon which there can be no doubt. But I think the Schoole will never grant, That the Principles of Faith (even this in Question) have not *sufficient Evidence*. And you ought not to do, as you did, without any Distinction, or any Limitation, deny a *Præcognitum*, or Prime Principle in the Faith; because it answers not in all things to the Prime Principles in Science, in their Light, and Evidence; a thing in it self directly against Reason.

Well, though I do none of this, yet first I must tell you, that A. C. here steps in againe, and tels me, That though a *Præcognitum* in Faith need not be so clearely knowne, as a *Præcognitum* in Science, yet there must be this proportion betweene them, that, whether it be

† Colligitur apertè ex Tho. p. 1. q. 1. A. 5. ad 1. Et Articulorum Fidei veritas non potest nobis esse evidens absolutè. Bellar. L. 4. de Eccles. Aut. c. 3. S. 3.

in Science, or in Faith, the *Præcognitum*, or thing supposed as knowne, must be *prius cognitum*, first knowne, and not need another thing pertaining to that Faith, or Knowledge, to be knowne before it. But the Scripture (saith he) needs Tradition to goe before it, and introduce the knowledge of it. Therefore the Scripture is not to be supposed, as a *Præcognitum*, and a thing fore-knowne. Truly I am sorrie to see in a man very learned such wilfull mistakes. For *A. C.* cannot but perceive, by that which I have clearly laid downe* before, That I intended not to speake precisely of a *Præcognitum* in this Argument. But when I said, *Scriptures were Principles to be supposed*; I did not, I could not intend, They were *prius cognita*, knowne before Tradition; since I confesse every where, That Tradition introduces the knowledge of them. But my meaning is plaine; That the Scriptures are and must be

* §. 17. & 18.
N^o. 2.

† And my immediate Words in the Conference, upon which the Jesuite asked, *How I knew Scripture to be Scripture*? were (as the Jesuite himselfe relates it *apud A. C.* p. 48.) That the Scripture onely, not any unwritten Tradition, was the Foundation of our Faith. Now the Scripture cannot be the onely Foundation of Faith, if it containe not all things necessary to Salvation; Which the Church of Rome denying against all Antiquity, makes it now become a Question. And in regard of this, my Answer was, *That the Scriptures are and must be Principles supposed*, and *præcognita*, before the handling of this Question.

Principles supposed, before you can dispute this Question; † Whether the Scriptures containe in them all things necessary to Salvation. Before which Question it must necessarily be supposed and granted on both sides, *That the Scriptures are the Word of God*. For if they be not, 'tis instantly out of all Question, that They cannot include all Necessaries to Salvation. So 'tis a *Præcognitum*, not to Tradition (as *A. C.* would cunningly put upon the Cause) but to the whole Question of the Scriptures sufficiency. And yet if he could tie me to a *Præcognitum* in this very Question, and proveable in a Superiour Science; I thinke I shall go very neare to prove it in the next Paragraph. and intreat *A. C.* to confesse it too.

And

And now having told *A.C.* this, I must secondly follow him a little farther. For I would faine make it appeare as plainly, as in such a difficulty it can be made, what wrong he doth *Truth* and *himself* in this Case. And it is the common fault of them all. For when the *Protestants* answer to this *Argument* (which, as I have shew'd, can properly have no place in the Question betweene us about *Tradition*) † they which grant this as a *Præcognitum*, a thing fore-known (as also I do) were neither ignorant, nor forgetfull, That things presupposed, as already known in a Science, are of two sorts. For either they are plaine and fully manifest in their owne Light: or they are proved, and granted already, some former knowledge having made them Evident. This Principle then, *The Scriptures are the Oracles of God*, we cannot say is cleare, and fully manifest to all men simply, and in self-Light, for the Reasons before given. Yet we say, after *Tradition* hath beene our Introduction, the Soule that hath but ordinary Grace added to Reason, may discern Light sufficient to resolve our Faith, that the Sun is there. This Principle then being not absolutely, and simply evident in it selfe, is presumed to be taught us otherwise. And if otherwise, then it must be taught in and by some superiour Science, to which *Theologie* is subordinate. Now men may be apt to think out of Reverence, That Divinity can have no Science above it. But your owne Schoole teaches me that it hath. * *The sacred Doctrine of Divinity in this sort is a Science, because it proceeds out of Principles that are knowne by the light of a*

Num. 4.

† *Hook, L. 3.*
§. 8.

* *Hoc modo sacra Doctrina est Scientia; quia procedit ex Principiis notis Lumine superioris Scientiæ, quæ scilicet est Scientia Dei & Beatorum.* Tho. p. 1. q. 1. a. 2. And what sayes *A.C.* now to this of *Aquinas*? Is it not cleare in him, that this Principle, *The Scriptures are the Word of God, of Divine and most Infallible Credit*, is a *Præcognitum* in the knowledge of Divinity, and proveable in a superiour Science, namely, the Knowledge of God, and the Blessed in Heaven? Yes; so cleare, that (as I told you he would)

R

Superiour

A. C. confesses it, p. 51. But he adds: *That because no man ordinarily sees this Proofs, therefore we must go either to Christ, who saw it clearly: Or to the Apostles, to whom it was clearly revealed; or to them, who by Succession received it from the Prime Seers.* So now because Christ is ascended, and the Apostles gone into the number of the Blessed, and made in a higher Degree partakers of their knowledge; therefore we must now onely goe unto their Successors, and borrow light from the Tradition of the present Church. For that we must do; And 'tis so farre well. But that we must relie upon this Tradition, as Divine, and Infallible, and able to breed in us Divine, and Infallible Faith, as *A. C.* adds, p. 51, 52. is a Proposition, which in the times of the Primitive Church would have beene accounted very dangerous, as indeed it is. For I would faine know, why leaning too much upon Tradition may not mislead Christians, as well as it did the Jewes. But they, saith S. Hilarie, *Traditionis favore Legis precepta transgressi sunt: Can. 14. in S. Mat.* Yet to this height are They of Rome now growne, *That the Traditions of the present Church are infallible:* And by out-facing the Truth, lead many after them. And as it is *Jer. 5. 31. The Prophets prophesie untruths, and the Priests receive gifts, and my people delight therein, what will become of this in the end?*

† *Non creditur Deus esse Author hujus Scientia, quia Homines hoc testati sunt in quantum Homines nudo Testimonio Humano; sed in quantum circa eos effulsit virtus Divina. Et ita Deus is, & sibi ipsi in eis Testimonium perhibuit.* Hen. à Gand. *Sum. P. 1. A. 9. q. 3.*

Superiour Knowledge, which is the Knowledge of God, and the Blessed in Heaven. In this Superiour Science, this Principle, *The Scriptures are the Oracles of God*, is more then evident in full light. This Superiour Science delivered this Principle in full revealed Light to the Prophets, and Apostles. † *This Infallible Light of this Principle made their Authority derivatively Divine.* By the same Divine Authority they wrote, and delivered the Scripture to the Church. There-

fore from them immediately the Church received the Scripture, and that uncorrupt, though not in the same cleareness of Light, which they had. And yet since no sufficient Reason hath, or can be given, that

in any Substantiall thing it hath beene
* Corrupted, it remains firme at this day, and that proved in the most Supreme

Science; and therefore now to bee supposed (at least by all Christians) *That the Scripture is the Word of God.* So; my Answer is good, even in strictness,

* *Corrupti non possunt, quia in manibus sunt omnium Christianorum; Et quisquis hoc primitus ausus esset, multorum Codicum vetustiorum collatione confutaretur. Maxime, quia non una lingua, sed multis continetur Scriptura. Nonnulli autem Codicum mendositates, vel de Antiquioribus, vel de Lingua precedente emendantur.* S. Aug. *L. 32. cont. Faustum. c. 16.*

stri Anesse, *That this Principle is to be supposed in this Dispute.*

Besides, the *Jewes* never had, nor can have any other Proofs, *That the Old Testament is the Word of God*, then we have of the *New*. For theirs was delivered by *Moses*, and the *Prophets*; and ours was delivered by the *Apostles*, which were *Prophets* too. The *Jewes* did believe their Scripture by a *Divine Authority*: For so the *Jewes* argue themselves: ^a *S. Ioh. 9. We know that God spake with Moses.* ^b *And that therefore they could no more erre in following Moses, then they could in following God himselfe.* And our Saviour seems to inferre as much, ^c *S. Ioh. 5. where he expostulates with the Jewes thus: If you believe not Moses his Writings, how should you believe Me?* Now how did the *Jewes* know that God spake to *Moses*? How? why apparently, the same way that is before set downe. First by *Tradition*. So *S. d Chrysostome*: *We know why* By whose witness do you know? By the *Testimony of our Ancestors*. But he speaks not of their *immediate Ancestors*, but their *Prime*, which were *Prophets*, and whose *Testimony* was *Divine*; into which (namely their *Writings*) the *Jewes* did Resolve their Faith. And even that Scripture of the *Old Testament* was a ^e *Light*, and a *shining Light* too: And therefore could not but be sufficient, when *Tradition* had gone before. And yet though the *Jewes* entred this way to their Beliefe of the Scripture, they do not say, ^f *Audivimus*, *We have heard that God spake to Moses*, but *We know it*. So they Resolved their Faith higher, and into a more *inward Principle*, then an *Eare to their immediate Ancestors*, and their *Tradition*. And I would willingly learne of you, if you can shew it me, where ever any one *Jew* disputing with another about their *Law*, did put the other to

Num. 5.

^a S. Iohn 9. 29.

^b Maldonat. in S. Ioh. 9. Itaque non magis errare posse eum sequentes, quam si Deum ipsum sequerentur.

^c S. Ioh. 5. 47.

^d Hom. 57. in

S. Ioh. 9. ἡμεῖς οἶδαμεν: πρὸς αὐτὸν θεὸς ἡμεῖς ἀπορρήτων: φασὶ δὲ ἡμεῖς ἡμεῖς ἡμεῖς.

^e 2. S. Pet. 1. 19.

^f S. Chrys. ubi supra.

ὅτι ἐν εἰρήνῃ ἡμεῖς ἡκούσαμεν, &c. ἀλλὰ καὶ ὅτι οἶδαμεν.

prove, that the *Old Testament* was the *Word of God*. But they still supposed it. And when others put them to their Proofs, this way they went. And yet you say :

F. That no other Answer could be made, but by admitting some Word of God unwritten, to assure us of this Point.

§. 19.
NUM. I.

B. I thinke, I have shewed, that my Answer is good, and that no other Answer need be made. If there were need, I make no Question, but another Answer might be made to assure us of this Point, though we did not admit of any Word of God unwritten. I say, to assure us; and you expresse no more. If you had said, to assure us by *Divine Faith*, your Argument had beene the stronger. But if you speake of Assurance onely in the generall, I must then tell you (and it is the great advantage which the Church of Christ hath against Infidels) a man may be assured, may infallibly assured by Ecclesiasticall, and Humane Proofs. Men that never saw Rome, may be sure, and infallibly believe, That such a Citie there is, by Histori-
call, and acquired Faith. And if Consent of Humane Storie can assure me this, why should not Consent of Church-storie assure me the other, That Christ, and his Apostles delivered this Body of Scripture as the Oracles of God? For Jewes, Enemies to Christ, they beare witness to the *Old Testament*; and Christians

† Tantâ hominum, & temporum consensione firmatum. S. Aug. L. de Mor. Eccles. Cath. c. 29. Is Libri quoquo modo se habent, sancti tamen Divinarum Rerum pleni propè totius generis humani Confessione diffamantur, &c. S. Aug. de util. cred. c. 7. & L. 13. cont. Faust. c. 15.

through almost all Nations † give in evidence to both *Old* and *New*. And no Pagan, or other Enemies of Christianity, can give such a Worthy and Consenting Testimonie for any Authoritie upon which

which they rely, or almost for any Principle which they have, as the *Scripture* hath gained to it self. And as is the Testimony which it receives, above all * *Writings of all Nations* ; so here is assurance in a great measure, without any *Divine Authority*, in a Word written, or Unwritten. A great assurance, and it is Infallible too ; Only then we must distinguish *Infallibility*. For first a thing may be presented as an *infallible Object* of Beliefe, when it is true and remains so. For Truth *quà talis*, as it is Truth, can not deceive. Secondly, a thing is said to be Infalible, when it is not only true, and remains so, actually, but when it is of such invariable constancy, and upon such ground, as that no Degree of falshood at any time, in any respect can fall upon it. Certain it is, that by Humane Authority, Consent, and Proofs a man may be assured infallibly, that the *Scripture* is the Word of God, by an acquired Habit of Faith, *cui non subest falsum*, under which nor Error, nor falshood is : But he cannot be assured infallibly, by Divine Faith, *a cui subesse non potest falsum*, into which no falshood can come, but by a Divine Testimony: This Testimony is absolute in *Scripture* it selfe, delivered by the *Apostles* for the Word of God, and so sealed to our Soules by the operation of the *Holy Ghost*. That which makes way for this as an ^b *Introduction* and outward motive, is the *Tradition of the present Church* ; but that neither simply Divine, nor sufficient alone, into which we may resolve our Faith, but only as is † before expressed.

* *Super omnes omnium Gentium Literas. S. Aug. 11. de Civit. Dei c. 1.*

^a *Incertum esse non potest hoc esse Libros Canonicos. Wal. Doct. fid. l. 2. a. 2. c. 20.*

^b *Canus. Loc. l. 2 c. 8. scilicet Ecclesiam causam si nequa non.*

† *S. 16.*

And now to come close to the Particular. The time was, before this *miserable Rent* in the Church of Christ (which I thinke no true Christian can looke upon, but with a bleeding heart) that you and Wee were all of *One Beliefe* : That beliefe was tainted, in

NUM. 2.

† *Inter omnes penè
constat, aut certè
id quod satis est,
inter me & illos,
cum quibus nunc
agitur, convenit
hoc. &c. Sic in
aliâ Causâ cont.
Manichæos, S.
Aug. L. de Mor.
Eccl. Cath. c. 4.
* Vinolir. cont.
Hæres. c. 2.*

tract and corruption of times, very deeply. A Division was made; yet so, that both *Parts* held the Creed, and other Common Principles of Beliefe. Of these, this was one of the greatest, † *That the Scripture is the Word of God*; For our beliefe of all things contained in it, depends upon it. Since this Division, there hath beene nothing done by us to discredit this Principle. Nay, We have given it all honour, and ascribed unto it more sufficiency, even to the containing of all things necessary to salvation, with * *Satis superque*, enough and more then enough; which your selves have not done, do not. And for begetting and setting a Beliefe of this Principle, we goe the same way with you, and a better besides. The same way with you: Because we allow the Tradition of the present Church to be the first inducing Motive to embrace this Principle; onely we cannot goe so farre in this way as you, to make the present Tradition alwayes an *Infallible Word of God unwritten*; For this is to goe so farre in, till you be out of the way. For Tradition is but a Lane in the Church; it hath an end, not only to receive us in, but another after, to let us out, into more open, and richer ground. And We go a better way then you: Because after we are moved, and prepared, and induced by Tradition, we resolve our Faith into that Written Word, and God delivering it; in which we finde *materially*, though not in *Termes*, the very Tradition, that led us thither. And so we are sure by Divine Authority that we are in the way, because at the end we find the way proved. And doe what can be done, you can never settle the Faith of man about this great Principle, till you rise to greater assurance, then the Present Church alone can give. And therefore once againe to that known place of *S. Augustine* * The words of the Father

* *Contr. Epist.
Fund. c. 5.*

Father are, *Nisi commoveret, Vnlesse the Authority of the Church mooved me* : but not alone, but with other Motives; else it were not *commovere, to move together*. And the other Motives are *Resolvers*, though this be *Leader*. Now since we goe the *same way* with you, so farre as you go *eright* ; and a *better way* then you, where you go wrong ; we need not admit any other Word of God, then We doe. And this ought to remaine, as a *Presupposed Principle* among all Christians, and not so much as come into this *Question, about the sufficiency of Scripture betweene you, and us*. But you say that

F. From this the Lady called us, and desiring to beare, *Whether the Bishop would grant the Romane Church to be the Right Church? The B. granted, That it was.*

B. One occasion which mooved *Tertullian* to write his Booke *de Præscript. adversus Hæreticos*, was, That he* saw little or no Profit come by *Disputations*. Sure the Ground was the same then, and now. It was not to deny, that *Disputation* is an Opening of the *Vnderstanding*, a sifting out of *Truth* ; it was not to affirme, that any such *Disquisition* is in, and of it selfe unprofitable. If it had, *S. Stephen*^a would not have disputed with the *Cyrenians*, nor *S. Paul* with the ^b *Grecians* first, and then with the *Jewes*^c, and all *Comers*. No sure : it was some *Abuse* in the *Disputants*, that frustrated the good of the *Disputation*. And one *Abuse* in the *Disputants*, is a *Resolution* to hold their own, though it be by *unworthy means*, and *disparagement*^d of truth. And so I finde it here. For as it is true, that this *Question* was asked ; so it is altogether false, that it was asked

§. 20.
NUM. I.

* *Pamel. in Summar. Lib. -- Vides Disputationibus nihil aut parum profici.*

^a *Acts 6.9.*

^b *Acts. 9.29.*

^c *Acts 19.17.*

^d *Debilitatem generosa indoles conjecta in argutias, Sen. Ep. 48.*

* Here *A. C.* hath nothing to say, but that the *Leſuite* did not affirm, That the *Lady* asked this *Queſtion* in this or any other *precife forme*. No? why, the words preceding are the *Jeſuites* own. Therefore, if theſe were not the *Ladies* words, he wrongs her, not I him.

asked in this * *forme*, or ſo *Answered*. There is a great deal of Difference (eſpecially as *Romaniſts* handle the *Queſtion* of the Church) between *The Church*, and *A Church*; and there is ſome, betwene a

True Church and a *Right Church*: which is the vvord you uſe, but no man elſe that I know; I am ſure not I.

NUM. 2.

For *The Church* may import in our Language, *The only true Church*; and perhaps (as ſome of you ſeeme to make it) *the Root and the Ground of the Catho-like*. And this I never did grant of the *Romane Church*, nor ever meane to doe. But *A Church* can imply no more, then that it is a *member* of the *Whole*. And this I never did, nor ever will deny, if it fall not *abſolutely away from Chriſt*. That it is a *True Church* I granted alſo; but not a *Right* (as you impoſe upon me.) For *Ens* and *Verum*, *Being* and *True*, are convertible one with another; and every thing that hath a *Being*, is truly that *Being*, which it is, in truth of *Subſtance*. But this vvord *Right* is not ſo uſed, but is referred more properly to *perfection in Conditions*: And in this ſenſe, every thing that hath a true, and reall *Being*, is not by and by *Right* in the *Conſitions* of it. A man that is moſt diſhoneſt, and unworthy the name, a very *Thiefe* (if you will) is a *True man*, in the verity of his *Eſſence*, as he is a *Creature* endued with *Reason*; for this none can ſteale from him, nor he from himſelfe, but *Death*: But he is not therefore a *Right*, or an *up-right man*. And a *Church* that is exceeding corrupt, both in *Manners* and *Doctrines*, and ſo a diſhonour to the Name, is yet a *True Church* in the verity of *Eſſence*, as a *Church* is a *Company* of men, which profeſſe the Faith of *Chriſt*, and are Baptized into His Name:

Name: But yet it is not therefore a *Right Church*, either in *Doctrine*, or *Manners*. It may be you meant cunningly to slip in this word *Right*, that I might at un-
 wares grant it *Orthodox*. But I was not so to be caught;
 For I know well, that *Orthodox Christians* are keepers of
integrity, and followers of *right things* (so ^a *S. Augu-* ^a *Integritatis ce-*
stine) of which, the Church of *Rome* at this day is nei- ^b *stiles, & rella-*
 ther. In this sense then no *Right*, that is, no *Orthodox* ^c *festantes. De ve-*
 Church at *Rome*. ^c *ra Relig. c. 5.*

And yet no *Newes* it is, that I granted the *Romane* NUM. 3.
 Church to be a *True Church*. For so much ve- ^b *Hooker l. 3. §. 1. Junius l. de Ec.*
 ry learned Protestants^b have acknowledg- ^c *c. 17. Falluntur qui Ecclesiam ve-*
 ed before me; and the *Truth* cannot deny ^d *gant, qui a Papatus in ea est Rey-*
 it. For that Church, which receives the ^e *nold. Thes. 5. Negat tantum esse*
Scripture as a *Rule of Faith*, though but ^f *Catholicam, vel sanū ejus mem-*
 as a partiall and imperfect *Rule*; and ^g *brum.* Nay the very Separatists
 both the *Sacraments* as *Instrumentall* ^h *grant it. Fr Johnson in his Trea-*
Causés, and *Scales of Grace*, though they adde more, ⁱ *tise called, A Christian Plea,*
 and misuse these, yet cannot but be a *True Church* in ^j *Printed 1617. p. 123. &c.*
essence. How it is in *Manners* and *Doctrine*, I would you
 would looke to it with a single eye, ^k *Si tamen beno-*
 For if *Piety* and a ^l *ingeno Pietas &*
Peaceable mind be not joyned to a good understanding, nothing ^m *Pax quædam men-*
 can be knowne in these great things. ⁿ *tis accedat, sine*
^o *quâ de sanctis re-*
^p *bus nihil prorsus*
^q *intelligi potest. S.*
^r *Aug. de i. til.*
^s *Cred. c. 18.*

Here *A. C.* tells us, That the *Iesuite* doth not say, that NUM. 4.
 the *Lady* asked this *Question* in this, or any other precise forme *A. C. p. 53.*
 of words; But saith, the *Iesuite* is sure, her desire was to know
 of me, whether I would grant the *Romane Church* to be the right
 Church? And how was the *Iesuite* sure the *Lady* desired
 to heare this from me? Why, *A. C.* tells us that too. For *A. C. p. 54.*
 he addes, That the *Iesuite* had particularly spoken with her be-
 fore, and wished her to insist upon that *Poynt*.

Where you may see, and 'tis fit the *Clergie* ^d *And after A. C. saith againe*
 of *England* should consider with what ^e *p. 54. that the Lady did not aske*
 cunning *Adversaries* they have to deale, ^f *the Question, as if she meant to*
 who can finde a way to ^g *be satisfied With bearing what J*
 prepare their ^h *said.* So belike they take *Cau-*

S

Disciples

tion before hand for that too, That what ever we say (unlesse we grant what they would have) their Profelytes shall not be satisfied wth hit.

A.C.p.54.

† §.20. N.1.

* And though *Stavleton* to magnifie the Church of *Rome* is pleased to say, *Apud veteres pro eodem habitavit Ecclesia Romana & Ecclesia Catholica*: yet he is so modest as to give this Reason of it: *Quia ejus Communio erat evidenter & certissime cum totâ Catholica. Relect. Cons. q. 5. A. 3.* (Lo, The Communion of the *Romane* was then with the Catholike Church, not of the Catholike with it.) And *S. Cyprian* employed his Legates *Caldonius* and *Fortunatus*, not to bring the Catholike Church to the Communion of *Rome*, but *Rome* to the Catholike Church: *Elaborarent, ut ad Catholica Ecclesia unitati in fide Corporis membra componerent, &c.* Now the Members of this Rent and torne Body were they of *Rome* then in an open Schisme betweene *Cornelius* and *Novatian*. *S. Cyp. L. 2. Epist. 10.*

Disciples, and instruct them before hand upon what Poynts to insist, that so they may with more ease slide that into their hearts and

consci^{ences}, which should never come there. And this once known, I hope they will the better provide against it. But *A.C.* goes on, and tells us, That certainly by my Answer, the Ladies desire must needs be to heare from me, not whether the Church of *Rome* were a right Church &c. but whether I would grant that there is but one holy Catholike Church, and whether the *Romane* Church (that is, not only that which is in the City, or Diocesse of *Rome*, but all that agreed with it) be not it. About A Church, and The Church, I have said enough † before, and shall not repeat. Nor is there any need I should. For *A.C.* would have it The Church, The One, Holy, Catholike Church. But this cannot be granted, take the *Roman* Church, in what sense they please, in City, or Diocesse, or a Church that agree with it. Yet

howsoever before I leave this, I must acquaint the Reader with a perfect *Iesuitism*. In all the Primitive Times of the Church, a Man, or a Family, or a Nationall Church were accounted Right, and Orthodox, as they agreed wth the Catholike Church; But the Catholike was never then measured, or judged by Man, Family, or Nation. But now in the *Iesuites* new schole, The One, Holy, * Catholike Church must bee measured by that which is in the City or Diocesse of *Rome*, or of them which agreed with it, and not *Rome* by the Catholike. For so *A. C.* sayes

expresly, The Lady would know of me, not whether that were the

the Catholike Church to which Rome agreed; but whether that were not the Holy Catholike Church, which agreed with Rome. So upon the matter, belike the Christian Faith was committed to the Custody of the Romane, not of the Catholike Church; And a man cannot agree with the Catholike Church of Christ (in this new Doctrine of A. C.) unlesse he agree with the Church of Rome; but if he agree with that, all's safe, and he is as Orthodox, as he need be.

But A. C. is yet troubled about the forme of the Ladies Question. And he will not have it, *That She desired to know, whether I would grant the Romane Church to be the Right Church?* Though these be her words, according to the Jesuites owne setting downe, but he thinkes the Question was, *Whether the Church of Rome was not the Right Church?* not *Be not*, but *was not*. Was not? That is, *was not once or in time past the Right Church before Luther and others made a breach from it?* Why, truly A. C. needed not have troubled himselfe halfe so much about this. For let him take his Choise. It shall be all one to me, whether the Question were asked by *Be*, or by *Was*? For the Church of Rome neither *is*, nor *was* the Right Church, as the Lady desired to heare. A Particular Church, it *is*, and *was*, and in some times *right*, and in some times *wrong*, and then in some things *right*, and in some things *wrong*: But *The Right Church*, or *The Holy Catholike Church* it never was, nor ever can be. And therefore was not such before Luther, and Others either left it, or were thrust from it. A Particular Church it was; But then A. C. is not distinct enough here neither. For the Church of Rome both *was* and *was not* a Right, or Orthodox Church before Luther made a Breach from it. For the word *Ante*, *Before*, may looke upon Rome, and that Church a great way off, or long before; and then in the Prime

NUM. 5.

A. C. P. 54.

times of it, it was a most *Right* and *Orthodox Church*. But it may looke also nearer home, and upon the immediate times before *Luther*, or some *Ages* before that ;

* *Cum infiniti Abusi, Schismata quoq; & Hereses per totum nunc Christianum Orbem invalescant, Ecclesiam Dei legitimam indigere Reformatione nemini non apertum erit.* Pet. de Aliaco Card. Cameracensis *L. de Refor. Ecclesie*. And if Schismes and Heresies did then invade the whole Christian world, let *A. C.* consider how *Rome* escaped free. And I thinke *Cameracensis* was in this Propheticall. For sixty yeares and more before *Luther* was borne, and so before the great troubles which have since fallen upon all Christendome, he used these words in the Booke which himselve delivered up in the Councell of Constance: *Nisi celeriter fiat Reformatio, adeo diceretur quod licet magna sint, quae videmus, tamen in brevi incomparabiliter majora videbimus. Et post ista tonitrua tam horrenda, majora alia audiemus &c.* Cam. *L. de Refor. Eccle.* And it will hardly lincke into any mans judgement, that so great a man, as *Pet. de Aliaco* was in that Church, should speake thus, if he did not see some errors in the Doctrine of that Church, as well as in Manners. Nay *Cassander* though he lived and dyed in the Communion of the Church of *Rome*, yet found fault with some of her Doctrines. *Consulta. Artic. 21. & 22.* And *Pope Julius* the third Professed at *Bononia*, in *Sacramentorum Ecclesie ministerium innumerabiles Abusus irrepsisse*. *Elpenicus* in *Tit. 1.* and yet he was one of the Bishops nay the chiefe Legat in the Councell of *Trent*.

A. C. p. 54.

Right, what hindred it now to be ? Since that did not depart from the Protestant Church, but the Protestant Church from it. Truly, I neither suspected the Inference would be made, nor feare it, when it is made. For 'tis no Newes that any Particular Church, Romane, as well as another, may once have beene Right, and afterwards Wrong and in farre worse case. And so it was in Rome after the

† *S. Mat. 13. 25. enemy had sowed tares among the wheat. † S. Mat. 12. But whe-*

* For *A. C.* knowes well, what strange Doctrines are charged upon some Popes. And all *Bellarmines* labour, though great and full of art, is not able to wash them cleane. *Bellarmin. L. 4. de Rom. Pont. c. 8. &c. Et Papas quosdam graves errores seminasse in Ecclesia Christi luce clarius est. Et probatur à Iaco. Almain. Opusc. de Autho. Ecclesie. c. 10.* And *Cassander* speakes it out more plainly *Vitam Illi* (He speaks of the Bishops and Rectors

And then in those times
* *Rome* was a Corrupt and a tainted Church, farre from being *Right*. And yet both these times Before *Luther* made his Breach. So here *A. C.* should have beene more distinct. For the word *Before* includes the whole time before *Luther*, in part of which time that Church of *Rome* was *Right*, and in other part whereof it was wrong. But *A. C.* addes yet, That I suspected the *Lady* would inferre, if once that Church were

ther these Tares were
sowven, vvhile their Bishops slept ; or vvhether
* They themselves did
not helpe to sowv them,
is

is too large a Disquisition for this Place. So though it were once *Right*; yet the Tares which grow thick in it, are the Cause why 'tis not so now. And then, though that Church did not depart from the *Protestants Church*; yet if it gave great and just Cause for the *Protestant Church* to depart from the Errours of it, while it in some Particulars departed from the Truth of Christ, it comes all to one for this Particular, *That the Romane Church which was once right, is now become wrong, by embracing Superstition, and Error.*

in the Romane Church) à quibus hæc formatio accipenda esset, non ipsæ harum Superstitionum Auctores essent: vel corâ eorum in Animis hominum simplicium aliquando questus causâ autem. Cassand. consulta. Art. 21. v. sus. finem.

F. Farther he confessed, *That Protestants had made a Rent and Division from it.*

B. I confesse I could here be heartily ^a angry, but ^{S. 21.} N U M. I.

that I have resolved in handling matters of Religion to leave all gall out of my Ink; For I

^a Grave omnino crimen, sed defensionem longinquam non requirit, satis est enim negare; sicut pro Ecclesiâ olim. S. Aug. de Util. Cred. c. 5.

never granted, that the *Romane Church* either is, or was the *right Church*. 'Tis too true indeed, that there is a *miserable Rent* in the Church, and I make no Question but the best men doe most bemoane it^b; nor is he a *Christian*, that would not have *Vnity*, might he have it with *Truth*. But I never said, nor thought

^b Hanc quæ respectu hominum Ecclesiâ dicitur, observare, ejusq. Communionem colere debemus. Calv. Inst. 4. c. 1

that the *Protestants* made this *Rent*. The Cause of the *Schisme* is yours; for you thrust us from you; because we called for *Truth*, and *Redresse of Abuses*. For a *Schisme* must needs be theirs, whose the Cause of it is. The *Woe* runs

^c Rectè scias nos fecisse recedendo à vobis, &c. Lucif. L. de Non conveniendo cum Hæreticis. He speaks of the Arrians, and I shall not compare you with them, nor give any Offence that way. I shall onely draw the generall argument from it, thus: If the Orthodoxe did well in departing from the Arrians, then the Schisme was to be imputed to the Arrians; although the Orthodoxe did depart from them. Otherwise if the Orthodoxe had beene guilty of the Schisme, he could not have said, Rectè scias nos fecisse recedendo. For it cannot be that a man should do well in making a Schisme. There may be therefore a necessary separation, which yet incures not the blame of Schisme; And that is, when Doctrines are taught contrary to the Catholike Faith,

§. 7.

* S. Mat. 18. 7. full out of the mouth of * Christ, ever against him, that gives the Offence; not against him that takes it, ever. But you have, by this carriage, given me just cause, never to treat with you, or your like, but before a Judge, or a Iurie.

NUM. 2.

A.C.p. 55, 56.

But here A.C. tels me, I had no cause to be angry, either with the Jesuite, or my selfe. Not with the Iesuite, for he writ downe my words in fresh memory, and upon speciall notice taken of the Passage, and that I did say either *iisdem*, or *æquipollentibus verbis*, either in these, or equivalent words, That the Protestants did make the Rent, or Division from the Romane Church. What, did the Iesuite set downe my words in fresh memory, and upon speciall notice taken, and were they so few as these, The Protestants did make the Schisme; and yet was his memory so short, that he cannot tell, whether I uttered this *iisdem*, or *æquipollentibus verbis*? Well, I would A.C. and his Fellowes would leave this Art

* A.C.p. 57.

A.C.p. 55.

of theirs, and in Conferences (which *they are so ready to call for) impose no more upon other men, then they utter. And you may observe too, that after all this full Assertion, that I spake this *iisdem*, or *æquipollentibus verbis*, A.C. concludes thus; The Iesuite tooke speciall notice in fresh memory, and is sure he related, at least in sense, just as it was uttered. What's this, At least in sense just as it was uttered? Do not these two Enterfeire, and shew the Iesuite to be upon his shuffling pace? For if it were just as it was uttered, then it was in the very forme of words too, not in sense onely. And if it were but At least in sense, then when A.C. hath made the most of it, it was not just as 'twas uttered. Besides, at least in sense, doth not tell us in whose sense it was. For if A.C. meane the Iesuite's sense of it, he may make what sense he pleases of his owne words; but he must impose no sense of his upon my words.

words. But as he must leave my words to my selfe, so when my words are uttered, or written, he must leave their sense either to me, or to that *genuine Construction*, which an *Ingenious Reader* can make of them. And what my words of Grant were, I have before expressed, and their sense too.

Not with my selfe: That's the next. For *A. C.* NUM. 3.
A. C. p. 56. sayes, 'tis truth, and that the world knowes it, that the Protestants did depart from the Church of Rome, and got the name of Protestants, by protesting against it. No, *A. C.* by your leave, this is not truth neither; and therefore I had reason to be angry with my selfe, had I granted it. For, first, the Protestants did not depart: For departure is voluntary, so was not theirs. I say, not theirs, taking their whole Body and Cause together. For that some among them were peevish, and some ignorantly zealous, is neither to be doubted, nor is there Danger in confessing it. Your Body is not so perfect (I wot well) but that many amongst you are as pettish, and as ignorantly zealous, as any of Ours. You must not suffer for these; nor We for those; nor should the Church of Christ for either. Next, the Protestants did not get that Name by *Protesting* against the Church of Rome, but by *Protesting* (and that when nothing else would serve) † against her *Errours*, & *Superstitions*. Do you but remove them from the Church of Rome, and our *Protestation* is ended, and the *Separation* too. Nor is *Protestation* it selfe such an unheard of thing in the very heart of Religion. For the Sacraments both of the Old and New Testament are called by your owne Schoole, *Visible Signes protesting the Faith*. Now if the

† *Conventus fuit Ordinum Imperii Spirae. Ibi Decretum factum est, ut Editum Wormatiense observaretur contra Novatores (sic appellare placuit) & ut omnia in integrum restituantur (& sic nulla omnino Reformatio.) Contra hoc Editum solennis fuit Protestatio, Aprilis 16, An. Ch. 1529. Et hinc ortum perculgatum illud Protestantium nomen. Se. Calvis. Chron. ad. An. 1529.* This Protestation therefore was not simply against the *Romane Church*, but against the *Edict*, which was for the restoring of all things to their former estate, without any Reformation.

^a *Quibus homo
fidem suam pro-
testaretur.* Tho.
p. 3. q. 61. A. 3.
4. C.

NUM. 4.
A. C. p. 56.

Sacraments be *Protestantia*, Signes *Protesting*, why may not men also, and without all offence, be called *Protestants*, since by receiving the true *Sacraments*, and by refusing them which are corrupted, they doe but *Protest* the sincerity of their Faith against that Doctrinall Corruption, which hath invaded the great *Sacrament of the Eucharist*, and other Parts of Religion? Especially, since they are men^a which must protest their Faith by these visible Signes and Sacraments.

But *A. C.* goes on, and will needs have it, that the *Protestants* were the Cause of the *Schisme*. For (saith he) though the Church of Rome did thrust them from her by *Excommunication*, yet they had first divided themselves by obstinate holding, and teaching opinions contrary to the *Romane Faith*, and Practice of the Church, which to do, *S. Bernard* thinks is *Pride*, and *S. Augustine* *Madnesse*. So then, in his Opinion; First, *Excommunication* on their Part was not the Prime Cause of this Division; but the holding and teaching of contrary Opinions. Why but then in my Opinion, That holding and teaching was not the Prime Cause neither, but the Corruptions and Superstitions of Rome, which forced many men to hold, and teach the contrary. So, the Prime Cause was theirs still. Secondly, *A. C.*s. words are

^b I know *Bellarm.* quotes *S. Ierome*: *Scito Romanam Fidem, &c. supra §. 3. Num. 9.* But there *S. Ierome* doth not call it *Fidem Romanam*, as if *Fides Romana* and *Fides Catholica* were convertible; but he speaks of it in the Concrete. *Romana Fides*, i. *Romanorum Fides, qua laudata fuit ab Apostolo, &c. Ro. I. 8. S. Hieron. Apol. 3. cont. Ruffin.* That is that Faith which was then at Rome when *S. Paul* commended it. But the Apostles commending of it in the Romanes at one time passes no need of Assurance, that it shall continue worthy of Commendations among the Romanes through all times.

very considerable. For he charges the *Protestants* to be the Authours of the *Schisme* for obstinate holding and teaching Contrary Opinions. To what I pray? Why to the ^b*Romane Faith*. To the *Romane Faith*? It was wont to be the *Christian Faith*, to which contrary Opinions were so dangerous to the Maintainers. But all's *Romane* now with *A. C.* and the *Lesuite*. And then to countenance

countenance the Businesse, S. Bernard and S. Augustine are brought in, whereas neither of them speak of the *Romane*, and S. Bernard perhaps neither of the *Catholike*, nor the *Romane*, but of a *Particular Church*, or *Congregation*. Or if he speake of the *Catholike*, of the *Romane* certainly he doth not. His words are, *Quæ major superbia, &c.* What greater pride, then that one man should preferre his judgement before the whole *Congregation* of all the *Christian Churches* in the world. So *A. C.* as out of Saint Bernard. † But Saint Bernard not so. For these last words (of all the *Christian Churches* in the world) are not in Saint Bernard. And whether *Toti Congregationi* imple more in that Place then a *Particular Church*, is not very manifest. Nay I thinke 'tis plaine, that hee speakes both of, and to that *particular Congregation* to which he was then preaching. And I believe *A. C.* will not easily finde where *tota Congregatio*, the whole *Congregation* is used in S. Bernard, or any other of the Fathers, for the *whole Catholike Church of Christ*. And howsoever the meaning of S. Bernard be, 'tis one thing for a private man, *Iudicium suum præferre*, to preferre, and so follow his private Iudgement, before the *Whole Congregation*, which is indeed, *Lepra proprii Consilii* (as S. Bernard there calls it) the proud Leprosie of the Private Spirit. And quite another thing for an Intelligent man, and in some things unsatisfied, modestly to propose his doubts even to the *Catholike Church*. And much more may a whole *Nationall Church*, nay the whole *Body of the Protestants* doe it. And for S. Augustine, the Place alledged out of him is a knowne Place. And he speakes indeed of the *Whole Catholike Church*. And he * sayes (and hee sayes it truly) 'Tis a part of most insolent madness for any Man to dispute, whether that bee to bee

† *Quæ major superbia, quam ut unus homo toti Congregationi iudicium suum præferat, tanquam ipse solus Spiritum Dei habeat.* S. Bern. Serm. 3. de Re-
surr.

* *Similiter etiam siquid horum tota per Orbem frequentat Ecclesia: Nam & hinc quia ita faciendum sit disputare, Insolentissima Insan-
est.* S. Aug. Epist. 118. c. 5.

T

done,

A.C.p.56.

done, which is usually done in, and thorough the whole Catholike Church of Christ. Where first here's not a word of the *Romane Church*, but of that, which is *tota per Orbem*, all over the World, Catholike, which Rome never yet was. Secondly, A.C. applies this to the *Romane Faith*, whereas S. Augustine speaks there expressly of the *Rites and Ceremonies of the Church*, and

^a *Queris quid per quintam Feriam ultima hebdomadis Quadragesima fieri debet, An offerendum sit mane? &c.* S. Aug. Ibid.

^a particularly about the Manner of Offering upon *Maundy-Thursd.*, whether it be in the Morning, or after Supper, or both. Thirdly, 'tis manifest, by the words themselves, that S. Augustine speaks of no Matter of Faith there, *Romane*, nor Catholike. For *Frequentat*, and *Faciendum* are for Things done, and to be done, not for Things believed, or to be believed. So here's not One Word for the *Romane Faith* in either of these Places. And after this,

^b And so Bellarmine most expressly. But then he adds, *Univerſam Eccleſiam non poſſe errare, non ſolum in Credendo, ſed nec in Operando: & præſertim in Ritum & Cultu Divino.* L. 4. de Verb. Dei. c. 9. §. 4. And if this be true, what is it to Rome?

^c Euseb. L. 5. *Hiſt. Eccl.* c. 26, *Et Socrat.* L. 5. *Hiſt.* c. 22.

I hope you will the leſſe wonder at A.C.^s Boldneſſe. Laſtly, a right ſober man may without the leaſt Touch of Inſolency or Madneſſe, diſpute a Buſineſſe of Religion with the *Romane* either Church or Prelate, (As all men know ^c Irenæus did with Victor.) ſo it bee with Modeſty, and for the finding out, or Confirming of Truth, free from Vanity, and purpoſed Oppoſition againſt even a Particular Church. But in any other way to diſpute the Whole Catholike Church, is juſt that which S. Augustine calls it, *Inſolent Madneſſe*.

NUM. 5.

A.C.p.56.

But now were it ſo, that the Church of Rome were Orthodoxe in all things, yet the Faith, by the Jeſuite's leave, is not ſimply to be called the *Romane*, but the *Chriſtian* and the *Catholike Faith*. And yet A.C. will not underſtand this, but *Roman* and *Catholike*, w^hether Church or Faith,

Faith must be one and the same with him; and therefore inferres, That there can be no just Cause to make a Schisme or Division from the whole Church. For the whole Church cannot universally erre in Doctrine of Faith. That the whole Church cannot universally erre in the Doctrine of Faith, is most true, and 'tis granted by diverse † Protestants (so you will but understand its not erring, in Absolute Fundamentall Doctrines.) And therefore 'tis true also, that there can bee no just Cause to make a Schisme from the whole Church. But here's the Jesuite's Cunning. The whole Church, with him, is the Romane, and those parts of Christendome, which subject themselves to the Romane Bishop. All other parts of Christendome are in Heresie, and Schisme, and what A. C. pleases. Nay soft. For another Church

† *Questio est, An Ecclesia totalis totaliter considerata, i. pro omnibus simul Electis, dum sunt Membra Militantis Ecclesie, possint errare, vel in totâ fide, vel in gravi aliquo fidei puncto? Et respondemus simpliciter, ea esse impossibile.* Keckerm. Syst. Theol. p. 387. Edit. Hannoveriae. An. 1602. Calvinus & ceteri Hæretici concedunt Ecclesiam absolutè non posse discere; Sed dicunt intelligi debere de Ecclesia Invisibili. Bellarm. L. 3. de Eccles. Milit. c. 13. §. 1. But this Exception of Bellarmine's, that the Protestants, whom, out of his Liberality, he calls Hereticks, speake of the Invisible Church, is merely frivolous. For the Church of the Elect is in the Church of them that are Called, and the Invisible Church in the Visible. Therefore if the whole Church of the Elect cannot erre in Fundamentals, the whole Visible Church, in which the same Elect are, cannot erre. Now that the Invisible Church of the Elect is in the Visible, is manifest out of S. Aug. *Ipsa est Ecclesia, qua intra sagenam Dominicam cum malis piscibus natat.* S. Aug. Epist. 48. *Grana sunt inter illam paleam, quando Area, cum videretur tota, palea putabatur.* S. Aug. in Psal. 121. And this is proved at large by Hocker. L. 3. Eccles. Pol. §. 1. For els the Elect or Invisible Church is tyed to no duty of Christianity. For all such Duties are required of the Church, as 'tis Visible, and performed in the Church, as 'tis Visible. And Dr. Field speakes as plainly, we hold it impossible, that the Church should ever by Apostase and Misbeliese, wholly depart from God, &c. So we hold, that it never falls into Heresie, so that Bellarmine is as much to be blamed for idle and needlesse busying himselfe to prove, That the Visible Church never falls into Heresie, which we most willingly grant. Field. L. 4. de Eccles. c. 2. Taking the Church for all the Believers now living, and in things necessary to be knowne expressly. Ibid. And Bellarmine himselfe adds; Calvinus dicit hanc Propositionem [Ecclesia non potest errare] veram esse si intelligatur cum duplici restrictione. Prima est, si non proponat Dogmata extra Scripturam, &c. (And indeed Calvin doth say so, L. 4. Instit. c. 8. §. 13.) Secunda est, si intelligatur de solâ Ecclesiâ Universali, non autem de Representativâ. Bellar. L. 3. de Eccles. Milit. c. 14. §. 2. And I hope it is as good and a better Restriction in Calvin: To say the Catholike Church cannot erre, if it keepe to the Scripture: then for Bellarmine to say: The particular Church of Rome cannot erre, because of the Pope's residing there, or the Pope cannot erre, if he keepe his chaire, which yet he affirms. L. 4. de Regm. Pont. c. 4. §. 2.

may separate from *Rome*, if *Rome* will separate from *Christ*. And so farre as it separates from *Him* and the *Faith*, so farre may another Church sever from it. And this is all that the *Learned Protestants* doe or can say: And I am sure all that ever the *Church of England* hath either said, or done. And that the *whole Church* cannot erre in *Doctrines* absolutely *Fundamentall*, and *Necessary* to all mens *Salvation* (besides the *Authority* of these *Protestants*, most of them being of *prime ranke*) seemes to me to be cleare by the *Promise of Christ*,
S. Matth. 16. That the gates of Hell shall not prevaile against it. Whereas most certaine it is, that the *Gates of Hell* prevaile very farre against it, if the *Whole Militant Church* universally taken, can Erre, from, or in the *Foundation*, But then this *Power of not Erring* is not to be conceived, as if it were in the Church *primò & per se*, Originally, or by any power it hath of it selfe: For the Church is constituted of Men, and *Humanum est errare*, all men can erre. But this *Power* is in it, partly by the vertue of this *Promise of Christ*: and partly by the *Matter* which it teacheth, which is the unerring *Word of God*, so plainly and manifestly delivered to her, as that it is not possible she should universally fall from it, or teach against it in things *absolutely necessary* to *Salvation*. Besides, it would be well waighed, whether to believe or teach otherwise, will not impeach the *Article of the Creed* concerning the *Holy Catholike Church*, which we professe we believe. For the *Holy Catholike Church* there spoken of, containes not onely the *whole Militant Church* on earth, but the

† *Ecclesia hic tota accipienda est, non solum ex parte quâ peregrinatur in terris, &c. verum etiam ex illa parte quâ in cœlis, &c. S. Aug. Enchir. c. 56.*

whole Triumphant also in Heaven. For so † *S. Augustine* hath long since taught me. Now if the *whole Catholike Church* in this large extent be

Holy, then certainly the *whole Militant Church* is *Holy*,

as well as the *Triumphant*, though in a far lower degree, in as much as all * Sanctification, all Holinesse is imperfect in this life, as well in *Churches*, as in *Men*. *Holy* then the whole *Militant Church* is. For that which the *Apostle* speakes of *Abraham*, is true of the *Church*, which is a *Body Collective* made up of the *spirituall seed of Abraham*. Rom. 11. *If the root be holy, so are the branches*. Well then the whole *Militant Church* is *Holy*, and so we believe. Why but, will it not follow then That the whole *Militant Church* cannot possibly erre in the *Foundations of the Faith*, That she may erre in *Superstructures* and *Deductions* and other by, and *unnecessary Truths*, if her *Curiosity*, or other weaknesse carry her beyond, or cause her to fall short of her *Rule*, no doubt need be made. But if She can erre either *from* the *Foundation*, or *in* it, She can be no longer *Holy*, and that *Article of the Creed* is gone For if She can erre quite *from* the *Foundation*, then She is nor *Holy*, nor *Church*, but becomes an *Infidell*. Now this cannot be. For † all *Divines Ancient*, and *Moderne*, *Romanists*, and *Reformers*, agree in this, That the whole *Militant Church of Christ* cannot fall away into generall *Apostacy*. And if She erre in the *Foundation* that is in some one or more *Fundamentall Poynts of Faith*, then Shee may bee a *Church of Christ* still, but not *Holy*, but becomes *Hereticall*; And most certain it is that, no * *Assembly* (be it never so generall) of such *Hereticks*, is, or can be *Holy*. Other *Errors* that are of a meaner alay take not *Holinesse* from the *Church*; but these that are dyed in *graine* cannot consist with *Holinesse*, of

* *Nemo ex toto Sanctus. Optat. L. 7. contra Paganos.*

Rom. 11. 16.

† *Dum Christus orat in Excelsis, Navicula (id est Ecclesia) turbatur fluctibus in profundo &c. sed quia Christus orat, non potest mergi. S. Aug. Serm. 14 de Verb. Domi. c. 2. Et Bellar. L. 3 de Eccle. Milit. c. 13. Praesidio Christi fulcitur Ecclesiae perpetuitas. ut inter turbulentas agitationes, & formidabiles motus, &c. salva tamen maneat. Calv. L. 2. Instit. c. 15. §. 3. Jp. 4 Symboli dispositione admonemur perpetuam residere in Ecclesia Christi remissionem Peccatorum. Calv. L. 4. Instit. c. 1. §. 17. Now remission of sins cannot be perpetuall in the Church, if the Church it selfe be not perpetuall. But the Church it selfe cannot be perpetuall, if it fall away.*

* *Spiritus Sanctificationis non potest inveniri in Hereticorum mentibus. S. Hierom. in Ierem. 10.*

which Faith in Christ is the very *Foundation*. And therefore if we will keepe up our *Creed*, the whole *Militant Church* must be *still Holy*. For if it be not so *still*, then there may be a time, that *Falsum* may subesse *Fidei Catholice*, that falshood, and that in a high degree, in the very *Article*, may be the Subject of the *Catholike Faith*, which were no lesse then *Blasphemy* to affirme. For we must *still* believe the *Holy Catholike Church*. And if She be not *still Holy*, then at that time when She is not so, we believe a Falshood under the *Article of the Catholike Faith*. Therefore a very dangerous thing it is to cry out in generall termes, *That the whole Catholike Militant Church can Erre*, and not limit nor distinguish in time, that it can erre indeed, for *Ignorance* it hath, and *Ignorance* can *Erre*. But *Erre* it cannot, either by falling totally from the *Foundation*, or by *Hereticall Error* in it. For the *Holinesse* of the Church consists as much, if not more, in the *Verity of the Faith* as in the *Integrity of Manners* taught and Commanded in the *Doctrine of Faith*.

NUM. 6.
A. C. p. 56.

Now in this Discourse A. C. thinkes he hath met with me. For he tells me, that I may not only safely grant, that Protestants made the Division that is now in the Church, but further also, and that with a safe Confidence, as one did, was it not you? saith he, That it was ill done of those, who did first made the Separation, Truly I doe not now remember, whether I said it or no. But because A. C. shall have full satisfaction from me, and without any *Ter-giversation*, if I did not say it then, I do say it now, and most true it is, That it was ill done of those, who e're they were, that first made the separation. But then A. C. must not understand me of *Actuall* only, but of *Causall* separation. For (as I said * before) the Schisme is theirs, whose the Cause of it is: And he makes the Separation, that gives the first just Cause of it; not he that makes an

* S. 21. Nu. 1.

Actuall

Actuall Separation upon a just Cause preceding. And this is so evident a Truth, that A.C. cannot deny it; for he sayes 'tis *most true*. Neither can he deny it in this sense, in which I have expressed it; For his very Assertion against us (though false) is in these Terms, *That we gave the first Cause*; Therefore he must meane it of *Causall*, not of *Actuall Separation* only.

But then A.C. goes on and tells us, *That after this Breach was made, yet the Church of Rome was so kinde and carefull to seeke the Protestants; that She invited them publikely with safe conduct to Rome, to a Generall Councell, freely to speak what they could for themselves.* Indeed I thinke the Church of Rome did carefully seeke the Protestants; But I doubt it was to bring them with- in their Net. And she invited them to Rome; A very safe place if you marke it, for them to come to, Iust as the Lion (in the *Apolo- gue*) invited the Fox to his own Den.

Yea but there was *safe Conduct* offered too? Yes, *Conduct* perhaps, but not *safe*, or *safe* perhaps for going thither, but none for coming thence. *Vestigia nulla retrorsum*. Yea, but it should have been to a *Generall Councell*? Perhaps

so. But was the *Con- duct safe*, that was given for com- ming to a Councell, which they cal *Ge- nerall*, to some o- thers before them? No sure, *John Hus*, and *Jerome of Prage* burnt for all their *safe conduct*. And so long as the le-

^a *Olim quod vulpes egroti causa Leoni Respondit, referam, Quia me vestigia terrent Omnia te adversum spectantia, nulla retrorsum.* Horat. L. 1. Ep. 1. ex *Ætop.*

^b Though I cannot justify all which these two men said, yet *safe Conduct* being given, that Publike Faith ought not to have beene violated.

^c *Affirmant uno consensu omnes Catholici, debere Hæreticis servari fidem, sive salvis conductis concedatur jure communi sive speciali.* Bec. *Dis. Theol. de Fide Hæreticis servanda.* c. 12. §. 5. But for all this Bagot (*Affirmant uno consensu omnes Catholici*) Becanus shuffles pitifully, to defend the Councell of Constance. For thus he argues: *Fides non est violata Hussio. Non à Patri- bus. Illi enim fidem non dederunt. Non ab Imperatore Sigismun- do. Ille enim adit fidem, sed non violavit.* Ibid. §. 7. But all men know that the Emperor was used by the Fathers at Constance to bring Huss thither. *Sigismundus Hussum Constantiam vocat, & missis Literis publicâ fide cavet, mense Octob. Ann. 1414. &c.* Edit. in 160. Et etiamsi Primò graviter tulit Hussi in carceratio- nem, tamen cum dicerent Fidem Hæreticis non esse servandam,

Iesuites

non modo remisit Offensionem, sed & primus acerbè in eum pronuntiavit it. Ibid. This is a mockery. And *Becanus* his Argument is easily returned upon himselfe. For if the Fathers did it in cunning, that the Emperor should give safe conduct, which themselves meant not to keepe, then they broke faith. And if the Emperor knew, they would not keepe it, then he himselfe broke faith, in giving a safe conduct, which he knew to be invalid. And as easie it is to answer what *Becanus* addes to save that Councils Act could I stay upon it.

Fides Hæreticis data servanda non est, sicut nec Tyrannis, Piratis & cæteris publicis prædombus. &c. Simanca, Instit. Tir. 46. S. 51. And although *Becanus* in the place above cited §. 13. confidently denies, that the Fathers at *Constance* decreed, *No faith to be kept with Hereticks*, and cites the words of the Council self. 19. yet there the very words themselves have it thus: *Posse Concilium eos punire &c. etiamsi de salvo conductu confisi ad locum venerint Judicii &c.* And much more plainly *Simanca, Instit. Tir. 46. S. 52.* *Iure igitur Hæretici quidam gravissimo Concilii Constantiensis Judicio legitimè flammâ concremati sunt, quamvis promissa illis securitas fuisset.* So they are not onely Protestants which charge the Council of *Constance* with this. Nor can *Becanus* say as he doth, *Affirmant uno consensu omnes Catholici, fidem Hæreticis servandam esse.* For *Simanca* denies it. And hee quotes others for it which *A. C.* would be loth should not be accounted *Catholikes*. But how faithfully *Simanca* sayes the one, or *Becanus* the other, let them take it betweene them, and the Reader be judge. In the meane time the very Title of the Canon of the Council of *Constance* Sess. 19. is this, *Quod non obstantibus salvo conductibus Imperatoris, Regum, &c. possit per Indicem competentem de Hæretica præstare inquiri.*

^d For so much *A. C.* confesses p. 45. For if they should give way to the altering of one, then why not of another, and another, and so of al? And the *Trent Fathers* in a great point of Doctrine being amazed, and not knowing what to answer to a Bishop of their owne, yet were resolved not to part with their common error. *Certum tamen erat Doctrinam eam non probare, sed quam antea didicissent firmiter tenere &c. Hist. Con. Trid. L. 2. p. 277. Edit. Leyd. 1622.*

Iesuites write and maintaine, That Faith given is not to be kept with Hereticks: And the Church of Rome leaves this lewd Doctrine uncensured (as it hath hitherto done, and no exception put in of force and violence.) *A. C.* shall pardon us, that we come not to Rome, nor within the reach of *Romane Power*, what freedom of Speech so ever bee promised us. For to what end Freedom of Speech on their part, ^d since they are resolved to alter nothing? And to what end Free-

dome of speech on our part, if after speech hath beene free, life shall not?

NUM. 8.

A. C. p. 57.

And yet for all this, *A. C.* makes no doubt, but that the *Romane Church* is so farre from being Cause of the continuance of the Schisme, or hinderance of the Re-union, that it would yet give a free bearing with most ample safe Conduct, if any hope might be given, that the Protestants would sincerely seeke nothing but Truth, and Peace. Truly *A. C.* is very Resolute

Resolute for the *Romane Church*, yet how far he may undertake for it, I cannot tell. But for my part, I am of the same Opinion for the *continuing* of the *Schisme*, that I was for the *making* of it. That is, that it is ill, very ill done of those, whoever they be, *Papists*, or *Protestants*, that give *just Cause* to continue a *Separation*. But for *free-hearings*, or *safe Conduets*, I have said enough till that Church do not only *say*, but *doe* otherwise. And as for *Truth* and *Peace*, they are in every mans mouth with you, and with us; But lay they but halfe so close to the *hearts* of men, as they are common on their *tongues*, it would soone be better with *Christendome*, then at this day it is, or is like to be. And for the *Protestants* in generall, I hope they seeke both *Truth* and *Peace*, sincerely. The *Church of England*, I am sure doth, and hath taught me to † *pray for both*, as I most heartily doe. But what *Rome* doth in this, if the world will not see, I will not Censure.

† Beseeching God to inspire continually the Universal Church With the Spirit of truth, unity, and concord. &c. In the Prayer for the Militant Church. And in the third Collect on Good-friday.

And for that, which *A.C.* addes, *That such a free bearing is more then ever the English Catholikes could obtaine, though they have often offered, and desired it, and that but under the Princes word: And that no Answer bath, nor no good Answer can be given.* And he cites *Campion* for it. How farre, or how often this hath beene asked by the *English Romanists*, I cannot tell, nor what Answer hath beene given them. But surely *Campion* was too bold, and so is *A.C.* too, to say * *Honestum responsum nullum*, no good Answer can be given. For this, I thinke is a very good Answer; That the *Kings* and the *Church of England* had no Reason to admit of a Publike Dispute with the *English Romish Clergie*, till they shall be able to shew it under the *Seale*, or *Powers of Rome*; That that Church will submit to a *Third*, who may be an *Indifferent Judge* betweene us and them; or to such a *Generall Councell* as is after * mentioned. And this is an Honest

NUM. 9.
A.C. p. 57:

* *Campion. prefat. Rationibus prefixa.*

* §. 26. Num. 13

and I thinke a full Answer. And without this all *Disputation* must end in *Clamour*; And therefore the more publike, the worfe. Because as the *Clamour* is the greater, so perhaps will be the *Schisme* too.

F. Moreover he said, he would ingenuously acknowledge, That the *Corruption of Manners in the Romish Church*, was not a sufficient Cause to justify their *Departing from it*.

§. 22.

*. §. 21. N. 6.

B. I would I could say, you did as ingenuously repeat, as I did Confesse For I never said, That *Corruption of Manners* was, or was not a sufficient Cause to justify their *Departure*. How could I say this, since I did not grant, that they did *Depart*, otherwise then is * be. fore expressed? There is difference between *Departure*, and *causelisse Thrusting from you*; For out of the Church is not in your Power (God beethanked) to thrust us: Think on that. And so much I said expressly then, That which I did ingenuously confesse, was this, That *Corruption in Manners only*, is no sufficient Cause to make a *Separation in the Church*;^a Nor is it. It is a Truth agreed on by the *Fathers*, and received by *Divines* of all sorts, save by the *Cathari*, to whom the *Donatist*, and the *Anabaptist* after accorded. And against whom^b Calvin disputes it strongly. And *S. Augustine* is plaine: There are bad fish in the Net of the Lord, from which there must be ever a Separation in heart, and in manners; but a corporall separation must be expected at the Sea shore, that is, the end of the world. And the best fish that are, must not teare and breake the Net, because the bad are with them. And this is as ingenuously Confessed for you, as by me. For if *Corruption in Manners* were a just Cause of *Actuall Separation* of one Church from another, in that Catholike Body of Christ, the Church of *Rome* hath given as great

^a Modo ea que ad Cathedram pertinent recta precipiant S. Hier. Ep. 236.

^b L. 4. Institut. c. 1. §. 13. &c.

^c Ep. 48. A malis piscibus corde semper & moribus separantur. &c. Corporalem separationem in litore maris, hoc est, in fine seculi expectant.

Great cause as any, since (as * Stapleton grants) there is scarce any sinne that can be thought by man (Heresie only excepted) with which that Sea hath not been foully stained, especially from eight hundred yeares after Christ. And he need not except *Heresie*, into which ^a Biel grants it possible the *Bishops* of that Sea may fall. And [†] Stella, and *Almaine* grant it freely, that some of them did fall, and so ceased to be *Heads* of the Church, and left Christ (God be thanked) at that time of his *Vicars* defection, to looke to his *Cure* himselve.

* *Vix ullum peccatum (sola Heresi excepta) cogitari potest, quo illa Sedes turpiter maculata non fuerit, maxime ab An. 800. Relict. C. cont. 1. 9. 5. art. 3.*

^a *Biel in Can. Miss. Lect. 23.*
[†] *Stel. in S. Luc. c. 22 Almain. in 3. Sent. d. 24. q. 1. fine. Multa sunt Decretales hereticae &c. And so they erred as Popes.*

F. But (saith he) beside Corruption of Manners, there were also Errors in Doctrine.

B. This I spake indeed. And can you prove, that I spake not true in this? But I added (though here againe you are pleaded to omit it) That some of the errors of the Roman Church were dangerous to salvation. For it is not every light Error in Disputable Doctrine, and Points of curious Speculation, that can bee a just Cause of Separation in that Admirable Body of Christ, which is his * Church, or of one Member of it from another. For hee gave his Naturall Body to bee rent and torne upon the Crosse, that his Mysticall Body might be One. And [†] Augustine inferres upon it; That he is no way partaker of Divine Charity, that is an enemy to this Unity. Now what Errors in Doctrine may give just Cause of Separation in this Body, or the Parts of it one from another, were it never so easie to determine (as I thinke it is most difficult) I would not venture to set it downe in particular, least in these times of Discord, I might bee thought to open a Doore for Schisme; which surely I will never doe, unlesse it be to let it out.

* Eph. 1. 23.

[†] *S. Aug. Ep. 50. Et iterum Columba non sunt qui Ecclesiam dissipant. Accipiores sunt, Milvi sunt: Non laniat Columba. &c. S. Aug. tract. 5. in S. Iohn.*

A.C.p.55.

But that there are *Errors in Doctrine*, and some of them such, as most manifestly endanger salvation, in the Church of Rome, is evident to them that will not shut their Eyes. The prooffe whereof runnes through the *Particular Points*, that are betweene us; and so is too long for this *Discourse*. Now here A.C. would faine have a Reason given him, *Why I did endeavour to shew what Cause the Protestants had to make that Rent or Division, if I did not grant that they made it.* Why truly in this reasonable demand I will satisfie him. I did it partly because I had granted in the generall, that *Corruption in Manners* was no sufficient cause of Separation of one *Particular Church* from another, and therefore it lay upon me, at least to Name in generall what was: And partly because he, and his *Partie* will needes have it so, that we did make the Separation; And therefore though I did not grant it, yet amisse I thought it could not be, to Declare by way of Supposition, that if the Protestants did at first Separate from the Church of Rome, they had reason so to doe: For A. C. himselfe confesses, *That Error in Doctrine of the Faith is a just Cause of Separation; so just, as that no Cause is just, but that.* Now had I leasure to descend into *Particulars*, or will to make the Rent in the Church wider, 'tis no hard matter to proove, that the Church of Rome hath erred in the *Doctrine of Faith*, and dangerously too: And I doubt I shall afterwards descend to *Particulars*, A.C. his Importunity forcing me to it.

A.C.p.56.

F. Which when the Generall Church would not Reforme, it was lawfull for Particular Churches to Reforme themselves.

B. Is

B. Is it then such a strangething, that a Particular Church may reforme it selfe, if the Generall will not? I had thought, and do so still, That in Point of Reformation of either Manners, or Doctrine, it is lawfull for the Church since Christ, to doe as the Church before Christ did, and might do. The Church before Christ consisted of *Iewes* and *Profelytes*: This Church came to have a Separation, upon a most ungodly Policie of *Ieroboam's*, so that it never peeced together againe. ^a3. Reg. 12. 27. To a Common Councell, to reforme all, they would not come. Was it not lawfull for *Judah* to reforme her selfe, when *Israel* would not joyne? Sure it was, or els the Prophet deceives me, that sayes expressly, ^b Though *Israel* transgreſſe, yet let not *Judah* sinne. And *S. Hierome* ^c expounds it of this very particular sinne of *Hereſie*, and *Errour in Religion*. Nor can you say, that ^d *Israel* from the time of the Separation was not a Church; for there were true Prophets in it, ^e *Elias*, and ^f *Elizeus*, and others, and ^g thousands that had not bowed knees to *Baal*. And there was salvation for these; which cannot be in the Ordinary way, where there is no Church. And God threatens ^h to cast them away, to wander among the Nations, and be no Congregation, no Church: therefore he had not yet cast them away in *Non Ecclesiam*, into No-Church. And they are expressly called the People of the Lord in *Iehu's* time, and so continued long after. Nor can you plead, that *Judah* is your part, and the Ten Tribes ours (as some of you doe) for if that bee true, you must grant that the Multitude and greater number is ours: And where then is Multitude, your numerous Note of the Church. For the Ten Tribes

^b Hof. 4. 15.^c Super Hæreticis prona intelligentia est. S. Hier. Ibid.^d Non tamen cessavit Deus & populum hunc arguere per Prophetas. Nam ibi extiterunt Magni illi & insignes Prophetæ Elias & Elizeus, &c. S. Aug. L. 17. de Civit. Dei. c. 22. Multi religiosè intra se Dei cultum habebant, &c. De quo numero eorumvè Posteris septem illa millia fuisse statuo, qui in Persecutione sub Achabo Deum sibi ab Idololatriâ immunes reservârunt, nec genua ante Baal flexerunt. Fran. Monceus L. 1. de Vir. Aureo, c. 12.^e 3. Reg. 17 sub Achabo.^f 4. Reg. 3. sub Iehoram filio Achabi.^g 3. Reg. 19. 18.^h Hof. 9. 17.ⁱ 4. Reg. 9. 6.

were more then the *two*. But you cannot plead it. For certainly if any *Calves* be set up, they are in *Dan*, and in *Bethel* : They are not ours.

NUM. 2.

Besides, to reforme what is amisse in *Doctrine*, or *Manners*, is as lawfull for a *Particular Church*, as it is to *publiss* and *promulgate* any thing that is *Catholike* in either. And your Question, *Quo Jndice?* lies alike against both. And yet I thinke it may be proved, that the *Church of Rome*, and that as a *Particular Church*, did *promulgate* an *Orthodoxe Truth*, which was not then *Catholically* admitted in the Church; namely, *The Procession of the Holy Ghost from the Sonne*. If she erred in this Fact, confesse her Errour; if she erred not, why may not another *Particular Church* doe as shee did? A learned *School-man* of yours saith she may :

† Non oportuit ad hac eos vocare, quum
Authoritas fuerit publi:andi apud Eccle-
siam Romanam, precipue cum unicuique
etiam particulari Ecclesie liceat, id quod
Catholicum est, promulgare. Alo. Mag.
in 1. Dist. 11. A. 9.

† The Church of Rome needed not to
call the *Grecians* to agree upon this
Truth, since the Authority of *publiss-
ing* it was in the Church of Rome, es-
pecially since it is lawfu^r for every
particular Church to *promulgate* that

which is *Catholike*. Nor can you say, he m anes *Catbo-
like*, as fore-determined by the Church in generall; for
so this Point, when *Rome* added *Filioque* to the Creed
of a Generall Councell, was not. And how the
Grecians were used in the after-Councell (such as it
was) of *Florence*, is not to trouble this Di^spute; But
Catbo-like stands there, for that which is so in the *na-
ture of it*, and *Fundamentally*. Nor can you justly say,
That the Church of Rome did, or might do this, by the
Pope's Authority over the Church. For suppose he
have that, and that his Sentence be *Infallible*, (I say,
suppose both, but I give neither) yet neither his *Autho-
rity*, nor his *Infallibility* can belong unto him, as the
particular *Bishop* of that Sea, but as the * *Ministeriall*
Head

* Non errare, con-
venit Papa, ut est
Caput. Bell. L.
A. de Rom. Pont.
c. 3.

Head of the whole Church. And you are all so lodged in this, that [†] *Bellarmino* professes he can neither tell the *year* when, nor the *Pope* under whom this *Addition* was made. A *Particular Church* then, if you judge it by the *Schoole of Rome*, or the *Practice of Rome*, may publish any thing that is *Catholike*, where the whole Church is *silent*; and may therefore *Reforme* any thing that is not *Catholike*, where the whole Church is *negligent*, or will not.

But you are as jealous of the honour of *Rome*, as Num. 3^d

^a *Capellus* is, who is angry with *Baronius* about certaine *Canons* in the second *Milevitane Councell*, and saith, That he considered not of what consequence it was, to grant to *Particular Churches* the Power of making *Canons of Faith*, without consulting the *Romane Sea*, which (as he saith, and you with him) was never *lawful*, nor ever done. But suppose this were so, my Speech was not, *Not consulting*, but in Case of *Neglecting*, or *Refusing*: Or when the difficulty of *Time* and *Place*, or other *Circumstances* are such, that a

^b *Generall Councell* cannot be called, or not convene. For that the *Romane Sea* must be consulted with, before any *Reformation* be made. First, most certaine it is, *Capellus* can

never proove. And secondly as certaine, that were it proved, and practised, we should have no *Reformation*: For it would be long enough, before the *Church* should be cured, if that *Sea* alone should be her *Physitian*, which in truth is her *Disease*.

[†] *L. 2. de Christo. c. 21. §. Quando assem.* So you cannot finde Records of your own Truths, which are farre more likely to be kept: but when Errors are crept in, we must bee bound to tell the place, and the time, and I know not what, of their Beginnings, or els they are not Errors. As if some Errors might not want a Record, as well as some Truth.

^a *Omnino rectè, nisi excepisset, &c. Nec consideravit quansi referat concedere Ecclesiis particularibus jus condendurum Canonum de Fide, inconsultà Romanà Sede, quod nunquam licuit, nunquam factum est, &c. Capell. de Appellat. Eccl. Africane, c. 2. Num. 12.*

^b *Rex constituitur se vocasse Concilium tertium Toletanum; Quia decursis retro temporibus Hæresis imminens in tota Ecclesia Catholica agere Synodica Negotia denegabat, &c. Concil. Toletan. tertium, Can. 1.*

Now

Num. 4.

Now if for all this you will say still, That a *Provinciall Councell* will not suffice, but we should have borne with Things, till the time of a *Generall Councell*. First, 'tis true, a *Generall Councell*, free and entire, would have beene the best Remedy, and most able for a *Gangrene* that had spread so farre, and eaten so deepe into *Christianity*. But what? Should we have suffered this *Gangren* to endanger life and all, rather then bee cured in time by a *Physitian* of a weaker knowledge, and a lesse able Hand? Secondly, We live to see since, if we had stayed and expected a *Generall Councell*, what manner of one we should have had, if any. For that at *Trent* was neither *generall*, nor *free*. And for the *Errours* which *Rome* had contracted, it confirmed them, it cured them not. And yet I much doubt, whether ever that *Councell* (such as it was) would have beene called, if some *Provinciall* and *Nationall Synods* under *Supreme* and *Regall Power*, had not first set upon this great worke of *Reformation*; Which I heartily wish had in all places beene as *Orderly* and *Happily* pursued, as the Worke was *right Christian* and *good* in it selfe. But humane frailty, and the *Heats* and *Distempers* of men, as well as the *Cunning* of the *Divell*, would not suffer that. For even in this sense also, *The wrath of man doth not accomplish the will of God*, S. *Iames* 1. But I have learned not to reject the Good, which God hath wrought, for any Evill, which men may fasten to it.

S. *Iames* 1. 20.

Num. 5.

And yet if for all this, you thinke 'tis better for us to be blinde, then to open our owne eyes, let me tell you, very *Grave* and *Learned Men*, and of your owne *Party*, have taught me, That where the *Univerſall Church* will not, or for the *Iniquities* of the *Times*, cannot obtaine and settle a *free generall Councell*, 'tis lawfull, nay sometimes necessary to reforme grosse Abuses

Abuses by a Nationall, or a Provinciall. For, besides
Alb. Magnus, whom I quoted^a before, *Gerson*, the ^a §. 24. Nu. 2.
 Learned and Devout Chancellour of *Paris* tels us

plainly: ^b That he will not deny, but
 that the Church may be reformed by
 parts. And that this is necessary, and
 that to effect it, Provinciall Councils
 may suffice; And, in some things, Dio-
 cesan. And againe, ' Either you
 should reforme all Estates of the Church
 in a Generall Councell, or command
 them to be reformed in Provinciall
 Councils. Now *Gerson* lived about

^b *Nolo tamen dicere, quin in multis par-
 tibus possit Ecclesia per suas partes refor-
 mari. Imò hoc necesse esset, sed ad hoc
 agendum sufficerent Concilia Provincia-
 lia, &c. Gerlon, tract. de Gen. Concil.
 unius obedientie. parte 1. p. 222. F.*

^c *Omnes Ecclesie status aut in Generali
 Concilio reformetis, aut in Conciliis Pro-
 vincialibus reformari mandetis. Gerlon,
 Declarat. Defectuum Virorum Eccle-
 siasticorum. par. 1. pag. 209. B.*

two hundred yeares since. But this Right of Provinci-
 all Synods, that they might decree in Causes of Faith, and
 in Cases of Reformation, where Corruptions had crept
 into the Sacraments of Christ, was practised much above
 a thousand yeares ago by many, both Nationall and
 Provinciall Synods. For the ^d Councell at Rome under
 Pope Sylvester An. 324. condemned Photinus and Sa-
 bellius. (And their Heresies were of high Nature
 against the Faith.) The ^e Councell at Gangra about the
 same time condemned Eustathius for his condemning
 of Marriage as unlawfull. The ^f first Councell at Car-
 thage, being a Provinciall, condemned Rebaptization
 much about the yeare 348. The ^g Provinciall Councell
 at Aquileia in the yeare 381. in which S. Ambrose was
 present, condemned Palladius and Secundinus for em-
 bracing the Arrian Heresie. The ^h second Councell of
 Carthage handled and Decreed the Beliefe and Preach-
 ing of the Trinity; And this a little after the yeare 424.

^d *Concil. Rom. 2.
 sub Sylvestro.*

^e *Concil. Gang.
 an. 1.*

^f *Con. Carth. 1.
 Can. 1.*

^g *Con. Aquilensis.*

^h *Con. Carth. 2.
 Can. 1.*

The ⁱ Councell of Milevis in Africa, in
 which S. Augustine was present,
 condemned the whole Course of
 the Heresie of Pelagius, that great and

ⁱ *Quadam de causis fidei, unde nunc Que-
 stio Pelagianorum imminet, in hoc Cetera
 sanctissimo primitus tractentur, &c. Au-
 rel. Carthaginensis in Prefat. Conc. Mi-
 levis. apud Caranzam.*

X

bewitching

^a *Con. Auran-*
can. 2. Can. 1, 2,
&c.

^b *Con. Tolet. 3.*

^c *Que omnia in*
aliis Symbolis
explicite tradita
non sunt. Conc.
Tolet. 4. Can. 1.

^d *Statuimus, ut saltem semel in Anno à*
Nobis Concilium celebretur, ità tamen,
ut si Fidei Cula est, aut qualibet alia
Ecclesie communis, Generalis Hispanie
& Gallicie Synodus celebretur, &c. Conc.
Tolet 4. Can. 3.

bewitching *Heresie*, in the year 416. The ^asecond Council at *Orang*, a *Provinciall* too, handled the great Controversies about *Grace* and *Free will*, and set the Church right in them, in the year 444. The ^bthird Council at *Toledo* (a *Nationall* one) in the year 589. determined many things against the *Arrian Heresie* about the very *Prime Articles of Faith*, under fourteene severall *Anathema's*. The fourth Council at *Toledo* did not onely handle *Matters of Faith* for the *Reformation* of that People, 'but even added also some things to the Creed, which were not expressly delivered in former Creeds. Nay the *Bishops* did not onely practise this, to Condemne *Heresies* in *Nationall* and *Provinciall Synods*, and so *Reforme* those severall Places, and the Church it selfe by parts: But They did openly challenge this as their *Right and Due*, and that without any leave asked of the *Sea of Rome*. For in this *Fourth Council of Toledo*

^d They Decree, That if there happen a Cause of Faith to be settled, a *Generall*, that is, a *Nationall Synod* of all *Spaine* and *Gallicia* shall be held thereon And this in the year

647. Where you see, it was then *Catholike Doctrine* in all *Spaine*, that a *Nationall Synod* might be a *Competent Iudge* in a Cause of Faith. And I would faine know, what *Article of the Faith* doth more concerne all *Christians* in generall, then that of *Filioque*? And yet the Church of *Rome* her selfe made that Addition to the Creed without a *Generall Council*, as I have shewed ^e already. And if this were practised so often, and in so many places, why may not a *Nationall Council* of the Church of *England* doe the like? as Shee did. For, Shee cast out the *Pope's Usurpation*, and

^e §. 24. Nu. 2.

and as much as in her lay, restored the King to his right. That appears by a ^a Booke subscribed by the Bishops in Henry the eight's time. And by the ^b Records in the Arch-bishop's Office, orderly kept and to be seene. In the Reformation which came after, our ^c Princes had their parts, and the Clergie theirs. And to these Two principally the power and direction for Reformation belongs. That our Princes had their parts, is manifest by their Calling together of the Bishops, and others of the Clergie, to consider of that which might seeme worthy Reformation. And the Clergie did their part: For being thus called together by Regall Power, they met in the Nationall Synod of sixty two. And the Articles there agreed on, were afterwards confirmed by Acts of State, and the Royall Assent. In this Synod the Positive Truths which are delivered, are more then the Polemicks. So that a meere Calummie it is, That we professe only a Negative Religion. True it is, and we must thanke Rome for it, our Confession must needs containe some Negatives. For, we cannot but deny that Images are to be adored. Nor can we admit Maimed Sacraments. Nor grant Prayers in an unknowne tongue. And in a corrupt time, or place, 'tis as necessary in Religion to deny falshood, as to assert, and vindicate Truth. Indeed this latter can hardly be well and sufficiently done, but by the former; an Affirmative Verity being ever included in the Negative to a Falshood. As for any Error which might fall into this (as any other Reformation) if any such can be found, then I say, & 'tis most true: Reformation, especially in Cases of Religion, is

^a The Institution of a Christian man: printed An. 1534.

^b In Synodo Londinensi Sess. 8. Die Veneris. 29. Ianuarii. An. 1562.

^c And so in the Reformation under Hezekiah, 2. Chron. 29 & under Iosiah, 4. Reg. 23. And in the time of Reccaredus King of Spaine, the Reformation there proceeded thus: *Quum gloriosissimus Princeps omnes Regiminis sui Pontifices in unum conuenire mandasset, &c. Concil. Tolet. 3. Can. 1. Cum conuenissemus Sacerdotes Domini apud urbem Toletanam, ut Regis imperiis atque iussis communiti, &c. Concil. Tolet. 4. in princ. apud Caraniam.* And both these Synods did treat of Matters of Faith.

so difficult a worke, and subject to so many Pretensions, that 'tis almost impossible but the *Reformers* should step too farre, or fall too short, in some smaller things or other, which in regard of the farre greater benefit comming by the *Reformation* it selfe, may

well be passed over, and borne withall. But if there have beene any wilfull, and grosse errors, not so much in Opinion, as in Fact, († *Sacriledge* too often pretending to reforme *Superstition*) that's the Crime of the *Reformers*, not of the *Reformation*; and they are long since

† *Quisquis occasione hujus Legis, quam Reges terra Christo servientes ad emendandam vestram impietatem promulgaverunt, res proprias vestram cupide appetit, displicet nobis. Quisquis denique ipsas res pauperum, vel Basilicas Congregationum, &c. non per Institutum, sed per Avaritiam tenet, displicet nobis. S. Aug. Epist. 48. versus finem.*

gone to God to answer it, to whom I leave them.

NUM. 6.

But now before I go off from this Point, I must put you in remembrance too, That I spake at that time (and so must all that will speak of that Exigent) of the *Generall Church* as it was for the most part forced under the Government of the *Romane Sea*. And this you understand well enough; For in your very next words you call it the *Romane Church*. Now I make no doubt, but that as the *Universall Catholike Church* would have reform'd her selfe, had she beene in all parts freed of the *Romane Yoke*: so while she was for the most in these *Westerne* parts under that yoke, the *Church of Rome* was, if not the *Onely*, yet the *Chiefe Hindrance* of *Reformation*. And then in this sense, it is more then cleare, That if the *Romane Church* will neither *Reform*,

* And this a *Particular Church* may doe; but not a *Schisme*. For a *Schisme* can never be peaceable, nor orderly, and seldome free from *Sacriledge*. Out of which respects, (it may be) as well as for the grievousnesse of the Crime, *S. Aug.* calls it *Sacrilegium Schismatis*. L. 1. de Bapt. cont. Donat. c. 8. For usually they go together.

nor suffer *Reformation*, it is lawfull for any other *Particular Church* to *Reform* it selfe, so long as it doth it peaceably and orderly, and keeps it selfe to the *Foundation*, and free from * *Sacriledge*.

F. I

F. I asked *Quo Iudice*, did this appeare to bee so? Which *Question* I asked, as not thinking it equity that Protestants in their own Cause should be Accusers, Witneses, and Iudges of the *Romane Church*.

B You doe well to tell the reason now, why you asked this *Question*; For you did not discover it at the *Conference*: if you had, you might then have received your Answer. It is most true: No man in common equity ought to be suffered to be Accuser, Witnesse, and Iudge in his owne Cause. But is there not as little reason, and equity too, that any man that is to be accused, should be the Accused, and yet Witnesse, and Iudge in his owne Cause? If the first may hold, no man shall be Innocent; and if the last, none will be Nocent. And what doe we here with (in their owne Cause against the *Romane Church*?) Why? Is it not your owne too, against the *Protestant Church*? And if it be a Cause common to both, as certaine it is, then neither Part alone may be Iudge: If neither alone may judge, then either they must be judged by a *Third which stands indifferent to both, and that is the *Scripture*, or if there be a jealousie or Doubt of the sense of the *Scripture* they must either both repaire to the *Exposition of the Primitive Church*, and submit to that; or both call, and submit to a *Generall Councell*, which shall be lawfully called, and fairely, and freely held with indifferency to all parties; And that must judge the Difference according to *Scripture*, which must be their Rule as well as Private Mens.

And here after some lowd Cry against the Pride and Insolent madnesse of the Protestants, A. C. addes, That the *Church of Rome* is the Principall, and Mother Church: And that therefore, though it be against commonequity, that

§. 25.
NUM. 1.

* §. 21. Num. 9.

NUM. 2.
A. C. p. 58.

Subjects, and Children should be Accusers, Witnesses, Judges, and Executioners against their Prince, and Mother in any case: yet it is not absurd, that in some Cases, the Prince, or Mother may Accuse, Witnesse, Judge, and if need be, execute Justice, against unjust and rebellious Subjects, or evill Children. How farre forth Rome is a Prince over the whole Church, or a Mother of it will come to be shewed at after. In the meane time, though I cannot grant her to be either, yet let's suppose her to be both. *A.C.* Argument may have all the strength it can have. Nor shall it force me (as plausible as it seeme) to weaken the just power of Princes over their Subjects, or of Mothers over their Children, to avoid the shocke of this Argument. For though *A.C.* may tell us 'tis not absurd in some Cases; yet I would faine have him name any one Moderate Prince that ever thought it just, or shooke it upon him to be Accuser, and Witnesse, and Judge in any Cause of moment against his Subjects, but that the Law had Libertie to Judge betweene them. For the great Philosopher tells us, * That the Chiefe Magistrate is Custos juris, the Guardian and keeper of the Law, and if of the Law, then both of that equity and equality which is due unto them that are under him. And even Tiberius himselfe, in the Cause of Silanus, when Dolabella would have flatter'd him into more power then in wisdom he thought fit then to take to himselfe, he put him off thus. No, † the Lawes grow lesse where such Power enlarges. Nor is absolute Power to be used, where there may be an orderly proceeding by Law. And for * Parents, 'tis true, when Children are young, they may chastise them without other Accuser or Witnesse, then themselves; and yet the children are to give them reverence. And 'tis presumed that naturall affection will prevaile so far with them, that they will not punish them too much. For all experience tells us (almost to the losse of Education) they punish

ἡ τὴν δὲ δ' ἀρχαὶν φύ-
λας τῶν δικαίων; ὅτι
δὲ τὴν δ' ἀρχαίων; ὅτι
ἡ τὴν δ' ἀρχαίων; ὅτι

† Minui jura
quoties gliscat
Potestas, nec u-
dendum Imperio,
ubi Legibus agi
possit. Tacit. L. 3
e. Annal.

* Heb. 12. 9,

they * *punish* them too little, even when there is cause. Yet when Children are growne up, and come to some full use of their owne Reason, the Apostles Rule is † *Colos. 3. Parents, provoke not your Children.* And if the Apostle prevaile not with froward Parents, there's a Magistrate, and a Law to relieve even a sonne against unnaturall Parents: as it was in the Case of T. Manlius against his over Imperious Father. And an expresse Law there was among the *Jewes* Deut. 21. when Children were growne up and fell into great extremities, that the Parents should then bring them to the Magistrate, and not be too busie in such cases with their own Power. So suppose Rome be a Prince, yet her Subjects must be tryed by Gods Law, the Scripture: And suppose her a Mother; yet there is, or ought to be Remedy against her for her Children that are growne up, if she forget all good Nature, and turne Stepdame to them.

Well; the Reason why the *Iesuite* asked the Question, *Quo Iudice?* Who should be Iudge? He says was this; Because there's no equity in it, that the Protestants should be Iudges in their owne Cause. But now upon more Deliberation A. C. tells us (as if he knew the *Iesuites* minde as well as himselfe, as sure I thinke he doth) That the *Iesuite* directed this Question chiefly against that speech of mine, That there were Errors in Doctrine of Faith, and that in the Generall Church, as the *Iesuite* understood my meaning. The *Iesuite* here tooke my meaning right. For I confesse I said there were Errors in Doctrine, and dangerous ones too in the Church of Rome. I said likewise that when the Generall Church

* God used Samuel as a Messenger against Eli for his overmuch indulgence to his sonnes. 1 Sam. 3. 13. And yet Samuel himselfe committed the very same fault concerning his own sonnes. 1 Sam. 8. 3. 5. And this Indulgence occasioned the Change of the Civill government, as the former was the losse of the Priesthood.

† Coloss. 3. 21.

* *Crimini ei Tribunus inter cetera dabat, quod filium juvenem. nullius probri compertum, extorrem urbe, domo, penatibus, foro, luce, congressu equalium prohibitu, in opus servile, prope in carcerem, atq; in ergastulum dederit.* Liv. dec. 1. l. 7.

Deut. 21. 19.

NUM. 3.

A. C. p. 57.

Church could nor, or would not Reforme such, it was Lawfull for Particular Churches to Refrme themselves. But then I added, That the Generall Church (not universally taken, but in these Western parts) fell into those Errours, being swayed in these latter Ages by the predominant Power of the Church of Rome, under whose Government it was for the most part forced. And all men of understanding know how oft, and how easily an Over-potent Member carries the whole with it, in any Body, Naturall, Politick, or Ecclesiasticall.

NUM. 4.
A.C.p. 57.

Yea but A. C. telles us, That never a y Competent Iudge did so censure the Church; And indeed, that no Power on Earth, or in Hell it selfe, can so farre p...e against the Generall Church as to make it Erre generally in any one Point of Divine Truth, and much lesse to teach any thing by its full Authority to be a Matter of Faith, which is contrary to Divine Truth expressed, or involved in Scriptures rightly understood. And that therefore no Reformation of Faith can be needfull in the Generall Church, but only in Particular Churches. And for prooffe of this he cites S. Mat. 16. and 28. S. Luk. 22. S. John 14. and 16. In this troublesome and quarrelling Age, I am most unwilling to meddle with the Erring of the Church in generall. The Church of England is content to passe that over. And though *She tels us, That the Church of Rome hath Erred even in matters of Faith; yet of the Erring of the Church in generall She is modestly silent. But since A. C. will needs have it: That the whole Church did never generally Erre in any one Point of Faith, he should doe well to Distinguish, before he be so peremptory. For if he mean no more then that the whole Vniversal Church of Christ cannot universally Erre in any one Point of Faith simply necessary to all mens salvation, he fights against no Adversary, that I know, but his owne fiction. For the most

* Art. 19.

* Learned

† Learned Protestants grant it. But if he meane, that the whole Church cannot erre in any one Point of Divine Truth in generall; which though by sundry Consequences deduced from the Principles, is yet

a Point of Faith, and may proove dangerous to the Salvation of some, which believe it, and practise after it, (as his words seeme to import) especially, if in these the Church shall presume to determine without

her proper Guide, the Scripture, as *Bellarm. sayes She may, and yet not erre. Then perhaps it may be said, and without any wrong to the Catholike Church, that the Whole Militant

Church hath erred in such a Point of Divine Truth and of Faith. Nay A. C. confesses expressly in his very next words, That the Whole Church may at some time not know all Divine Truths, which afterwards it may learne by study of Scripture, and otherwise. So then in A. C.^s judgement, the Whole Militant Church may at some time not know all Divine Truths. Now that which knows not all, must be ignorant of some; and that which is ignorant of some, may possibly erre in one Point or other; The rather because he confesses the knowledge of it must be got by Learning; and Learners may mistake and erre, especially where the Lesson is Divine Truth out of Scripture, out of Difficult Scripture. For were it of plain and easie Scripture that he speakes, the Whole Church could not at any time be without the knowledge of it. And for ought I yet see, the Whole Church Militant hath no greater warrant against Not erring in, then against Not knowing of the Points of Divine Truth. For in S. Ioh. 16.

There is as large a Promise to the Church of knowing all Points of Divine Truth, as A. C. or any Iesuite can

† Si demus errare non posse Ecclesiam in rebus ad salutem necessariis, hic sensus non est: Ideo hoc esse, quia abdicat à omni suâ sapientiâ, à Spiritu Sancto doceri se per Verbum Dei patitur. Calv. L. 4. Inst. c. 8. §. 13. And this also is our sense. Vide sup. §. 21. Nu. 5.

* Nostra sententia est, Ecclesiam absolute non posse errare, nec in rebus absolute necessariis, nec in aliis quæ credenda vel facienda nobis proponit, si ve habeantur expresse in Scripturis, si ve non. Bellar. L. 3. de Eccl. Mil. c. 14. §. 5.

A. C. p. 58.

S. Ioh. 16. 13.

Y

produce

produce for Her Not erring in any. And if She may be ignorant, or mistaken in learning of any Point of Divine Truth, Doubtlesse in that *state of Ignorance* she may both Erre, and teach her Error, yea and teach that to be *Divine Truth*, which is not : Nay perhaps teach that as a *Matter of Divine Truth*, which is contrary to *Divine Truth*; Always provided it be not in any Point simply *Fundamentall*, of which the *Whole Catholike Church* cannot be Ignorant, and in which it cannot Erre, as hath * before beene proved.

* S. 21. Nu. 5.

Nu m. 5.

A. C. p. 57.

A. C. p. 57.

A. C. p. 53.

A. C. p. 58. & 73

* Staple, Relect.
pref. ad Lectore.

† Bellar. L. 2.
de Concil. c. 2.

S. Mat. 16. 18.

As for the Places of *Scripture* which A. C. cites to proove that the *Whole Church* cannot Erre Generally in any one Point of Divine Truth, be it *Fundamentall* or not, they are known Places all of them, and are alledged by A. C. three severall times in this short Tract, and to three severall purposes. Here to proove, That the *Univerfall Church* cannot erre. Before this to prove, that the *Tradition of the present Church* cannot Erre. After this to prove, that the *Pope* cannot Erre. He should have done well to have added these Places a fourth time, to proove that *Generall Councils* cannot Erre. For so doth both * *Stapleton* and † *Bellarmino*. Sure A. C. and his fellowes are hard driven, when they must fly to the same Places for such different purposes. For A *Pope* may Erre, where a *Councell* doth not. And a *Generall Council* may Erre, where the *Catholike Church* cannot. And therefore it is not likely that these Places should serve alike for all. The first Place is *Saint Matthew 16*. There *Christ* told *Saint Peter*, and we believe it most assuredly, That *Hell Gates* shall never be able to prevaile against his Church. But that is, That they shall not prevaile to make the *Church Catholike* Apostatize, and fall quite away from *Christ*, or Erre in *absolute Fundamentals*, which amounts to as much. But the Promise reaches not

to

to this, that the Church shall never Erre, no not in the lightest matters of Faith. For it will not follow: Hell Gates shall not prevaile against the Church; Therefore *Hellish Divells* shall not tempt, or assault, and batter it. And thus Saint^a *Augustine* understood the place. *It may fight* (yea and bee wounded too) *but it cannot be wholly overcome.* And *Bellarmino* himselfe applies it to proove, * That the Visible Church of Christ cannot *deficere*, Erre so, as quite to fall away. Therefore in his judgement, this is a true, and a safe sense of this Text of Scripture. But as for not Erring at all, in any Point of Divine Truth, and so making the Church absolutely *Infallible*, that's neither a true, nor a safe sense of this Scripture. And tis very remarkable, that whereas this Text hath beene so much beaten upon by Writers of all sorts, there is no one Father of the Church for twelve hundred yeares after Christ (the Counterfeit or Partiall Decretalls of some Popes excepted) that ever concluded the *Infallibility* of the Church out of this Place: but her Non deficiency, that hath beene, and is justly deduced hence. And here I challenge A. C. and all that partieto shew the contrary, if they can. The next Place of Scripture is Saint Mat-
theew 28. The Promise of Christ that hee will bee with them to the end of the World. But this in the generall voyce of the * *Fathers of the Church* is a promise of Assistance and Protection, not of an *Infallibility* of the Church. And † *Pope Leo* himself enlarges this presence and providence of Christ to all those things w^{ch} he committed to the execution of his Ministers. But no word of *Infallibility* is to be found there. And indeed since Christ according to his Promise is present with his Ministers in all these

^a *Pugnare potest, Expugnari non potest S. Aug. L. de Symb. ad Catecum. c. 6.*

* *Bellar L. 3. de Eccl. Milit. c. 12. §. 1. & 2.*

S. Mat. 28. 21.

* *S. Hil. in Psal. 124. Prosp. L. 2. de Vocat. Gent. c. 2.*

Leo. Ser. 2. de Resur. Dom. c. 3 & Ep. 31. Isidor. in Iosu. 12.

† *In omnibus qua Ministris suis commissi exequenda. S. Leo. Epist. 91. c. 2.*

S. Luke 22. 32.

* Bellar. L. 4. de
Ro. Pont. c. 3. S.
Est igitur certia.
Hec understood
the place of both
S. Peter and his
Successors.

† *Que Expositio falsa est, Primò quia &c.*
Bell. *ibid.* §. 2. And he sayes tis false be-
cause the Parisians expounded it of the
Church only. *Volunt enim pro sola Eccle-*
sia esse oratum. *Ibid.* §. 1.

A. C. p. 57.
S. Iohn. 14. 16. 17.
S. Iohn 16. 13.

things ; and that one and a Chiefe of these *All* is the preaching of his Word to the People. It must follow That *Christ* should be *present* with all his *Ministers* that Preach his word, to make them *Infallible*, which daily Experience tells us, is not so. The third Place urged by A. C. is S. Luke 22. Where the Prayer of Christ will effect no more then his *Promise* hath performed; neither of them implying an *Infallibility* for, or in the Church against all *Errours* whatsoever. And this almost all his *owne side* confesse is spoken either of S. *Peters* person only, or of him, and his *Successors*, * *& both*. Of the Church it is not spoken, and therefore cannot prove an *unerring Power* in it. For how can that Place prove the Church cannot Erre, which speakes not at all of the Church? And 'tis observable too, that when the *Divines of Paris* expounded this Place, that Christ here prayed for S. *Peter*, as he represented the *Whole Catholike Church*, and obtained for it that the Faith of the Catholike Church *nunquam deficeret*, should never so erre, as quite to fall away; † *Bellarmino* is so stiffe for the Pope, that he sayes expressly, *This Exposition of the Parisians is false*, and that this Text cannot be meant of the *Catholike Church*. Not be meant of it? Then certainly it ought not to be alledged as Prooffe of it, as here it is by A. C. The fourth Place named by A. C. is S. Iohn 14. And the consequent Place to it S. Iohn 16 These Places containe an other Promise of Christ concerning the comming of the *Holy Ghost*. Thus: *That the Comforter shall abide with them forever. That this Comforter is the Spirit of Truth. And That this Spirit of Truth will lead them into all Truth.* Now this Promise as it is applied to the Church consisting of all Believers which are and have beene since Christ appeared

appeared in the Flesh, including the Apostles, is ^a absolute, and without any Restriction. For, the Holy Ghost did lead them into all Truth, so that no Errour was to be found in that Church. But as it is applicable to the whole Church Militant in all succeeding times, so the Promise was made with a Limitation,^b namely, that the Blessed Spirit should abide with the Church for ever, and lead it into all Truth; but not simply into all Curious Truth, no not in or about the Faith, but into all Truth necessary to Salvation. And against this Truth the Whole Catholike Church cannot erre, keeping her self to the Direction of the Scripture, as Christ hath appointed her. For in this very Place where the Promise is made, That the Holy Ghost shall teach you all things, 'tis added, that He shall bring all things to their remembrance. What? simply all things? No: But all things which Christ had told them, S. Job. 14. So there is a Limitation put upon the words by Christ himselfe. And if the Church will not erre, it must not ravell Curiously into unnecessary Truths, which are out of the Promise, nor follow any other Guide then the Doctrine which Christ hath left behinde him to governe it. For if it will come to the End, it must keepe in the Way. And Christ who promised the Spirit should lead, hath no where promised that it shall follow its Leader into all Truth, and at least infallibly, unlesse you will Limit, as before. So, no one of these Places can make good A. C^s. Assertion, That the Whole Church cannot erre Generally in any one Point of Divine Truth. In Absolute Foundations she cannot: in Deductions and Superstructures she may.

^a Field. L. 4. de Eccles. c. 2. free from all error and ignorance of Divine things

^b And Theoderet proceeds farther, and sayes, Neque divini Prophetæ, neque mirabiles Apostoli omnia præciverunt. Quæcumq; enim expediebant, ea illis significavit gratia Spiritus. Theod. in 1. Tim. 3. v. 14, 15.

S. Ioh. 14. 26.

S. 21. Num. 5.

NUM. 6.

Now to all that I have said concerning the Rights which Particular Churches have to Reforme themselves, when the Generall Church cannot for Impediments, or will not for Negligence, which I have proved at large

^a §. 24. N. 32. &c. *A.C.* p. 57.

^b Si de modica *Questione* Disceptatio esset, nonne oporteret in Antiquissimas recurrere Ecclesias, in quibus Apostoli conversati sunt, & ab iis de presenti *Questione* sumere quod certum & liquidum est? Quid autem si neg, Apostoli quidem Scripturas reliquissent nobis, nonne oportebat Ordinem sequi Traditionis? &c. Irenæus. L. 8. advers. Hæres. c. 4.

before, All the Answer that *A. C.* gives, is, First, *Quo Iudice?* Who shall be Iudge? And that shall bee the *Scripture*, and the ^b*Primitive Church*. And by the Rules of the one, and to the Integrity of the other, both in Faith, and Manners, any Particular Church may safely *Reforme* it selfe.

Nu. 7.

A. C. p. 58.

§. 25. Nu. 4.

A. C. p. 58.

Secondly, That no Reformation in Faith can be needfull in the *Generall Church*, but only in *Particular Churches*. In which Case also (he saith) *Particular Churches* may not take upon them to Iudge and Condemne others of Errours in Faith: Well, how farre forth Reformation even of Faith may be necessary in the *Generall Church*, I have expressed^c already. And for *Particular Churches*, I do not say, that they must take upon them to Iudge or Condemne others of Errour in Faith. That which I say, is, They may *Reforme themselves*. Now I hope, to *Reforme themselves*, and to *Condemne others*, are two different Workes, unlesse it fall out so, that by *Reforming themselves*, they do by consequence *Condemne* any other, that is guilty in that Point, in which they *Reforme themselves*; and so farre to Iudge and Condemne others, is not onely lawfull, but necessary. A man that lives religiously, doth not by and by sit in Iudgement, and *Condemne* with his mouth all *Prophane Livers*. But yet while he is silent, his very Life *condemnes* them. And I hope in this Way of *Judicature*, *A. C.* dares not say 'tis unlawfull for a particular Church or man to *Condemne* another. And farther, whatsoever *A. C.* can say to the contrary, there are diverse Cases, where *Heresies* are knowne, and notorious, in which it will be hard to say (as he doth) That one *Particular Church* must not Iudge or Condemne another,

another, so farre forth at least, as to abhorre and protest against the *Hereſie* of it.

Thirdly, If one Particular Church may not Iudge or Condemne another, what muſt then be done, where Particulars need Reformation? What? Why then A. C. tels us, That *Particular Churches muſt in that Caſe (as Irenæus intimateth) have recourſe to the Church of Rome, which hath more powerfull Principality, and to her Biſhop, who is chiefe Paſtour of the whole Church, as being S. Peter's Succeſſour, to whom Chriſt promiſed the keyes, S. Matth. 16. for whom he prayed that his Faith might not faile, S. Luke 22. And whom he charged to ſeed and governe the whole Flocke, S. Iohn 21. And this (A. C. tels us) he ſhall never reſuſe to doe in ſuch ſort, as that this neglect ſhall be a juſt Cauſe for any Particular Man, or Church, under Pretence of Reformation in Manners, or Faith, to make a Schiſme or Separation from the Whole Generall Church.*

NUM. 8.

A. C. p. 58.

† And after hee ſaith, p. 58. that the Biſhop of Rome is, and ought to bee the Iudge of particular Churches in this Caſe.

Well; firſt you ſee where A. C. would have us. If any Particular Churches differ in Points of Divine Truth, they muſt not Iudge, or Condemne each other, (ſaith he) No, take heed of that in any caſe; That's the Office of the *Univerſall Church*. And yet he will have it, That *Rome, which is but a Particular Church, muſt and ought Iudge all other Particulars.*

NUM. 9.

Secondly, he tels us this is ſo; *Because the Church of Rome hath more Powerfull Principality, then other Particular Churches, and that her Biſhop is Paſtour of the Whole Church.* To this I anſwer, that it is moſt true indeed; the Church of Rome hath had, and hath yet, more Powerfull Principality, then any other Particular Church. But ſhe hath not this Power from Chriſt. The *Romane Patriarch*, by Eccleſiaſticall Conſtitutions, might perhaps have a Primacy of Order; But for Principality of Power, the Patriarchs were as even, as equall

NUM. 10.

^a *Summa Potestas Ecclesiastica non est data solum Petro, sed etiam aliis Apostolis. Omnes enim poterant dicere illud S. Pauli: Sollicitudo omnium Ecclesiarum, &c. 2. Cor. 11. 28. Bellar. L. 1. de Rom. Pont. c. 9. §. Responsiones Pontificatum.* Where then is the difference between S. Peter and the rest? In this, saith Bellarmin. *Ibid. Quia haec Potestas data est Petro, ut Ordinario Pastori, cui perpetuo succederetur, Aliis vero, tanquam Delegatis, quibus non succederetur.* This is handsomely said to men easie of beliefe. But that the Highest Power Ecclesiasticall confested to be given to the other Apostles, as well as to S. Peter, was given to S. Peter onely, as to an Ordinary Pastour, whose Successours should have the same Power, which the Successours of the rest should not: have, can never bee proved out of Scripture. Nay (I will give them their own Latitude) it can never be proved by any Tradition of the whole Catholike Church. And till it be proved, Bellarmine's handsome Expression cannot be believed by me. For S. Cyprian hath told me long since, that *Episcopatus Vnus est*, (for as much as belongs to the *Calling*) as well as *Apostolatus. L. de simp. Pralato.*

^b §. 25. Nu. 12.

^c *Lib. 1. de Rom. Pont. c. 9. §. Augustinus Epistola.*

^d *S. Aug. Epist. 162. In Romanam Ecclesiam semper Apostolica Cathedra viguit Principatus.*

^e *Quia Opinio invaluit fundatam esse hanc Ecclesiam à S. Petro; Itaque in Occidente Sedes Apostolica Honoris causa vocabatur. Calv. L. 4. c. 6. §. 16.*

equall, as the ^a Apostles were before them. The Truth is, this more Powerfull Principality the Romane Bishops ^b got under the Emperours after they became Christian; and they used the matter so, that they grew big enough to oppose, nay to depose the Emperours, by the same power which they had given them. And after this, other Particular Churches, especial-

ly here in the West, submitted themselves to them for succour and Protections sake. And this was one maine Cause which swelled Rome into this more Powerfull Principality, and not any Right given by Christ to make that *Prelate, Pastour of the whole Church.* I know Bellarmine makes much adoe about it, and will needs fetch it out of ^d S. Augustine, who sayes indeed, That in the Church of Rome there did alwaies flourish the Principality of an Apostolicke Chaire: Or, if you will, the Apostolicke Chaire, in relation to the West and South parts of the Church, all the other foure Apostolicke Chaires being in the East. Now this no man denies, that understands the state and story of the Church. And

^e Calvin confesses it expressly. Nor is the Word *Principatus* so great, nor were the Bishops of those times so little, as that *Principes* and *Principatus* are not commonly given them

them both by the ^a Greeke and the Latine Fathers of this great and Learnedest Age of the Church made up of the fourth and fift hundred yeares, alwaies understanding Principatus of their Spirituall Power, and within the Limits of their severall Jurisdictions, which perhaps now and then they did occasionally exceed. And there is not one word in S. Augustine, That this Principality of the Apostolike Chaire in the Church of Rome was

then, or ought to be now exercised over the whole Church of Christ, as Bellarmine insinuates there, and as A. C. would have it here. And to prove that S. Augustine did not intend by Principatus here to give the Romane Bishop any Power out of his owne Limits (which God knowes were farre short of the whole Church)

I shall make it most manifest out of the very same Epistle. For afterwards (saith S. Augustine) when the pertinacy of the Donatists could not be restrained by the African Bishops only, they gave them leave to be heard by forraigne Bishops. And after that he hath these words.

‘And yet peradventure Melciades the Bishop of the Romane Church, with his Colleagues, the Transmarine Bishops, non debuit, ought not usurpe to himselfe this Iudgment which was determined by seventy African Bishops; Tigistanus sitting Primat! And what will you say if he did not usurpe this Power?

For the Emperour being desired, sent Bishops Iudges, which should sit with him, and determine what was just upon the whole Cause. In which Passage there are very

Z

many

^a *Princeps Ecclesie S. Hilar. l. 8. de Trin. Prin.* And he speaks of a Bishop in general. *Greg. Naz. anz. Orat. 17. Ascribuntur Episcopo divites, sicut, uti ag. Imperium, Thronus, & Principatus ad regim n Animarum. Et tamen ego hujusmodi Imperium.* And he also speaks of a Bishop. *Greg. Nazian. Orat. 20.* Nor were these any Titles of pride in Bishops then. For S. *Greg. Nazianz.* who challenges these Titles to himselfe, *Orat. 17.* was so devout, so mild, and so humble, that rather then the Peace of the Church should be broken, he freely resigned the Great Patriarchate of Constantinople, and retired, and this in the First Council of Constantinople, and the Second General.

^b *Pergant ad Fratres & Collegas nostros transmarinarum Ecclesiarum Episcopos, &c. S. Aug. Ep 162.*

^c *An forè non debuit Romane Ecclesie Melciades Episcopus cum Collegis transmarinis Episcopis illud sibi usurpare iudicium quod ab Afris septuaginta, ubi Primas Tigistanus presedit, fuerit terminatum? Quid quod nec ipse usurpavit: Rogatus quippe Imperator, Iudices misit Episcopos, qui cum eo sederent, & de tota illa causa, quod justum videretur, statuerent, &c. S. Aug. Ibid.*

many things *Observeable*. As first, that the *Romane Prelate* came not in, till there was *leave* for them to go to *Transmarine Bishops*. Secondly, that if the *Pope* had come in without this *Leave*, it had been an *Usurpation*. Thirdly, that when he did thus come in, not by his owne *Proper Authority*, but by *Leave*, there were other *Bishops* made *Judges* with him. Fourthly, that these other *Bishops* were appointed, and sent by the *Emperour*, and his *Power*; that which the *Pope* will least of all indure. Lastly, least the *Pope* and his *Adherents* should say this was an *Usurpation* in the *Emperour*, **S. Augustine* tells us a little before, in the same *Epistle* still, that this doth chiefly belong ad *Curam ejus*, to the *Emperours Care* and charge, and that *He* is to give an *Account* to *God* for it. And *Melciades* did sit and *Judge* the *Businesse* with all *Christian Prudence* and *Moderation*. So at this time the *Romane Prelate* was not received as *Pastour* of the whole *Church*, say *A.C.* what he please. Nor had he any *Supremacy* over the other *Patriarchs*: And for this were all other *Records of Antiquity* silent, the *Civill Law* is prooffe enough, (And that's a *Monument* of the *Primitive Church*.)

* *Ad cuius Curam de quâ rationem Deo redditurus est, res illa maxime pertinebat. S. Aug. Epist. 162.*

† *Nam contra horum Antistitum (de Patriarchis loquitur) Sententia non esse locum Appellationi à Majoribus nostris constitutum est. Cod. L. 1. Tit. 4. L. 29. ex editione Gothofredi. Si non rata habuerit utraque Pars, que iudicata sunt, tunc Beatissimus Patriarcha Dioceseos illius, inter eos audiat, &c. Nulla parte ejus Sententia contradicere valente. Ambros. Collat. 9. Tit. 15. C. 22.*

* *Et ille (scilicet Patriarcha) secundum Canones, & Leges præbeat finem: And there hee cites the Novell its selfe. S. Greg. L. 11. Indict. 6. Epist. 54.*

The Text there is, † *A Patriarchâ non datur Appellatio*. From a *Patriarch* there lies no *Appeale*. No *Appeale*. Therefore every *Patriarch* was alike *Supreme* in his owne *Patriarchate*. Therefore the *Pope* then had no *Supremacie* over the whole *Church*. Therefore certainly not then received as *Univerſall Paſtour*. And *S. Gregory* himſelfe ſpeaking of *Appeales*, and expreſſly citing the *L* *ves* themſelves, ſayes plainly, * *at the Patriarch is to put a ſin* and to thoſe *Causes*,

Causes, which come before him by Appeale from Bishops and Archbishops: but then he adds,

^a That where there is nor Metropolitan, nor Patriarch of that Diocesse, there they are to have recourse to the Sea Apostolike, as being the Head of all Churches.

^a Si dictum fuerit, quod nec Metropolitanum habeat, nec Patriarcham: dicendum est, quod à Sede Apostolica, qua omnium Ecclesiarum Caput est, causa audienda est, &c. S. Greg. Ibid.

Where first this implies plainly, That if there bee a Metropolitan, or a Patriarch in those Churches, his Iudgement is finall; and there ought to be no Appeale to Rome. Secondly, 'Tis as plaine, That in those Ancient times of the Church-Government, Britaine was never subject to the Sea of Rome.

For it was one of the ^b Sixe Diocesses of the West Em-

^b Notitia Provinciarum Occidentalium, per Guidum Pancirolum, l. 2. c. 48.

pire, and had a Primate of its owne: Nay ^c Iohn Capgrave, one of your owne, and Learned for those times, and long before him William of Malmesburie tell us, That Pope Urbane the second, at the Councell held at Bari in Apulia,

^c Hunc cunctis Liberalium Artium disciplinis eruditum pro Magistro teneamus, & quasi Comparem, velut alterius Orbis Apostolicum & Patriarcham, &c. Io. Capgravius de Vitis Sanctorum, in vita S. Anselmi. Et Guil. Malmesburiensis, de Gestis Pontificum Anglorum. p. 223. Edit. Francof. 1601.

accounted my Worthy Predecessour S. Anselme, as his owne Compeere, and said, he was as the Apostolike, and Patriarch of the other world. (So he then termed this Iland.) Now the Britains having a Primate of their owne (which is greater then a

Metropolita) yea a ^d Patriarch, if you will, He could not be Appealed from, to Rome, by S. Gregorie's owne Doctrine. Thirdly, it will

^d Ibi (Cantuaria id est) prima Sedes Archiepiscopi habetur, qui est totius Anglia Primas & Patriarcha. Guil. Malmesburiensis in Prolog. Lib. I. de Gestis Pontificum Anglorum. p. 195.

be hard for any man to proove, there were any Churches then in the World, which were not under some either Patriarch, or Metropolitan. Fourthly, if any such were, 'tis gratis dictum, and impossible to be proved, that all such Churches, where ever seated in the world, were obliged to depend on Rome. For

* *Præterea & qui sunt in totis Episcopis, in Barbarico, Episcopi à Sanctissimo Throno Sanctissima Constantinopolitana Ecclesia Ordinantur. Codex Canonum Ecclesie universæ. Can. 206.* And *Iustellus* proves it there at large, that by *in Barbarico*, in that Canon, is meant *In Selo Barbarorum*. Annot. Ibid.

manifest it is, that the *Bishops* which were *Ordained* in places without the *Limits* of the *Romane Empire* (which places they commonly called **Barbarous*) were all to be *Ordained*, and therefore most probable to be governed by

the *Patriarch of Constantinople*. And for *Rome's* being the *Head* of all Churches, I have said enough to that in diverse parts of this *Discourse*.

NUM. II.

And since I am thus fallen upon the *Church of Africk*, I shall borrow another reason from the *Practice* of that Church, why by *Principatus*, *S. Augustine* neither did, nor could meane any *Principality* of the Church, or *Bishop of Rome* over the *Whole Church of Christ*. For as the *Acts of Councils* and *Stories* go, the *African Prelates* finding that all succeeding *Popes* were not of *Melciades* his temper, set themselves to assert their owne *Liberties*, and held it out stoutly against *Zozimus*, *Boniface the first*, and *Cælestine the first*, who were successively *Popes of Rome*. At last it was concluded in the *sixt Council of Carthage* (wherein were assembled two hundred and seventeene *Bishops*, of which *S. Augustine* himselfe was one) that they would not give way to such a manifest incroachment upon their *Rights* and *Liberties*, and thereupon gave present notice to *Pope Cælestine* to forbear sending his *Officers* amongst them, † least he should seeme to induce the swelling pride of the world into the Church of Christ. And this is said to have amounted into a *formall Separation* from the Church of *Rome*, and to have continued for the space of somewhat more then one hundred yeares; Now that such a *Separation* there was of the *African Church* from *Rome*, and a *Reconciliation* after, stands upon the *Credit* and *Authority* of

† *Ne fumosum typhum seculi in Ecclesiam Christi videatur inducere, &c. Epist. Conc. Afric. ad Papam Cælestinum primum. Apud Nicolin. To. I. Concil. p. 844.*

of two publike Instruments extant both, among the Ancient Councils. The one is an * *Epistle from Boniface the second, in whose time the Reconciliation to Rome is said to be made by Eulalius then Bishop of Carthage, but the Separation, Instigante Diabolo, by the Temptation of the Devil.* The other is an ^b *Exemplar Precū, or Copie of the Petition of the same Eulalius, in which he damnes and curses all those his Predecessors which went against the Church of Rome. Amongst which Eulalius must needs Curse S. Augustine; And Pope Boniface accepting this Submission, must acknowledge that S. Augustine and the rest of that Council deserved this Curse, and dyed under it, as violating Rectæ Fidei Regulam, the Rule of the Right Faith (so the Exemplar Precum beginnes) by refusing the Popes Authority. I will not deny, but that there are divers Reasons given by the Learned Romanists, and Reformed Writers for and against the Truth and Authority of both these Instruments. But because this is too long to be examin'd here, I wil say but this, and then make my use of it to my present purpose, giving the Church of Rome free leave to acknowledge these Instruments to be true, or false, as they please. That which I shall say, is this: These Instruments are let stand in all Editions of the Councils and Epistles Decretal. As for Example in the Old Edition by Isidor, Anno. 1524. And in another Old Edition of them Printed Anno. 1530. And in that which was published by P Crabbe, Anno. 1538. And in the Edition of Valentinus Ioverius, Anno. 1555 And in that by Surius, Anno. 1567. And in the Edition at Venice by Nicolinus, Anno. 1585. And in all of these without any Note, or Censure upon them. And they are in the Edition of Binius too, Anno. 1618. but there's a Censure upon them to keepe a quarter it may be with * *Baronius, who was the first (I think) that ever quarrelled them, and he doth**

* *Epist. Bonifacii 2. apud Nicol. To. 2. Concil. p. 544.*

^b *Exemplar. Precū apud Nicolin. Ibid. p. 525.*

* *Baron. Annal. An. ad. 419. Num. 93.94.*

† *Valde mihi
illa Epistola
suspecta sunt.*
*Bellar. L. 2. de
R. Pont. c. 25. §
Respond. pri-
mum. Sed si for-
re illa Epistola
vera sunt, nihil
enim affirmo &c.*
Ibid. §. ult.

it tartly. And since † *Bellarmino* followes the same way but more doubtfully. This is that which I had to say. And the Use which I shall make of these Instruments, whether they be true or false, is this. They are either true or false, that is of necessity. If they be false, then *Boniface the Second*, and his Accomplices at Rome, or some for them are notorious Forgers, and that of Records of great Consequence concerning the Government and Peace of the whole Church of Christ, and to the perpetual Infamie of that Sea, and all this foolishly and to no purpose. For if there were no such Separation, as these Records mention of the *Africane Churches* from the *Romane*, to what end should *Boniface*, or any other counterfeit an Epistle of his owne, and a Submission of *Eulalius*? On the other side, if these Instruments be true (as the sixth Councell of *Carthage* against all other Arguments makes me incline to believe they are, in Substance at least, though perhaps not in all Circumstances) then 'tis manifest, that the Church of *Africke* separated from the Church of Rome; That this Separation continued above one hundred yeares; That the Church of *Africke* madethis Separation in a Nationall Councell of their owne, which had in it two hundred and seventeene Bishops: That this Separation was made (for ought appeares) only because they at Rome were too ready to entertaine Appeales from the

Church of *Africke*, as appeares in the Case of * *Apianus*, who then appealed thither; That *S. Augustine*, *Eugenius*, *Fulgentius*, and all those Bishops, and other Martyrs which suffered in the *Wandalike Persecution*; dyed in the time of this Separation, That if this Separation were not just, but a Schisme, then these Famous Fathers of the Church dyed (for ought appeares)

* And so the Councell of *Carthage* sent word to *Pope Celestine* plainly, that in admitting such Appeales, he brake the Decrees of the Councell of *Nice*. *Epist. Concil. Africa. ad Celestinum. c. 105.*
Apud Nicolin. Tom. 1. Concil. p. 844.

appeares) in *Actuall* and *unrepented Schisme*, † and out of the Church. And if so, then how comes *S. Augustine* to be, and be accounted a *Saint* all over the Christian world, and at *Rome* it selfe? But if the *Separation* were just, then is it farre more lawfull for the *Church of England* by a *Nationall Councell* to cast off the *Popes Usurpation* (as * *She* did) then it was for the *African Church* to separate; Because then the *African Church* excepted only against the *Pride of Rome* † in Case of *Appeales*, and two other *Canons* lesse materiall; But the *Church of England* excepts (besides this Grievance) against many *Corruptions in Doctrine* belonging to the *Faith*, with which *Rome* at that time of the *African Separation* was not tainted. And I am out of all doubt, that *S. August.* and those other *Famous men* in their generations, durst not thus have separated from *Rome*, had the *Pope* had that powerfull *Principality* over the whole *Church of Christ*; And that by *Christ's* owne Ordinance, and Institution, as *A. C.* pretends he had.

† *Planè ex Ecclesie Catholicae albo Ex-pungenda fuisse Sanctorum Africanorum Martyrum Agmina qui in persecutione Vandalica pro Fide Catholica &c.* Baron. Ann. 419. Num. 93. Et Binius. In Notis ad Epist. Bonifacii 2. ad Eulaliū.

* §. 24. Num. 5.

† *Bel. l. 2. de Re Pont. c. 25. §. 2.*

A. C. p. 58.

I told you a little * before, that the *Popes* grew under the *Emperors*, till they had over-grown them And now lest *A. C.* should say, I speake it without prooffe, I will give you a briefe touch of the *Church-story* in that behalfe: And that from the beginning of the *Emperors* becomming *Christians*, to the time of *Charles the Great*, which containes about five hundred yeares. For so soone as the *Emperors* became *Christian*, the Church (which before was kept under by persecutions) began to be put in better order For the calling and Authority of *Bishops* over the Inferiour Clergie, that was a thing of knowne use, and benefit for Preservation of *Unity* and *Peace* in the Church. And so much

NUM. 12.

* §. 25. Num. 20.

* *S. Jerome*

† Quod autem postea Unus electus est qui ceteris praeponeretur, in Schismatis remedium factum est, ne unusquisque ad se trahens Christi Ecclesiam rumperet. Nam & Alexandria à Marco Evangelista Presbyteri semper unum ex selectum in excellentiori gradu collocatum, Episcopum nominabant, &c. S. Hieron. in Epist. ad Evagrium. So even according to S. Hieron. Bishops had a very ancient and honourable descent in the Church from S. Marke the Evangelist. And about the end of the same Epistle, he acknowledges it. Traditionem esse Apostolicam. Nay more then so, He attests plainly, That *Ubi non est Sacerdos non est Ecclesia*, S. Hieron. advers. Luciferian. And in that place most manifest it is that S. Jerom by *Sacerdos* means a Bishop. For he speaks de *Sacerdote qui potestatem habet Ordinandi*, which in S. Jeromes owne Judgement no meere Priest had, but a Bishop only. S. Hier. Epist. ad Evagrium. So even with him, no Bishop, and no Church.

* Non enim Respub. est in Ecclesia: sed Ecclesia in Repub. Optat. L. 3.

° Conc. Caved. Can. 9. & Actio 16.

† S. Jerome tels us. Though being none himselfe hee was no great friend to Bishops. And this was to settled in the mindes of men from the very Infancy of the Christian Church, as that it had not been to that time contradicted by any. So that then there was no Controversie about the Calling; all agreed upon that. The only Difficulty was to accommodate the Places and Precedencies of Bishops, among themselves, for the very Necessity of Order and Government. To doe this, the most equall and impartiall way was, That as the Church is in the Commonwealth, not the Commonwealth in it (as * Optatus telles us.) So the Honours of the Church should follow the Honours of the State And so it was insi-

nuated, if not Ordered (as appeares) by the Canons of the Councils of Chalcedon and Antioch. And this was the very fountaine of Papall Greatnesse, the Pope having his Residence in the great Imperiall City. But Precedency is one thing, and Authority is another. It was thought fit therefore, though (as S. Cyprian speaks) *Episcopatus unus est*; the Calling of a Bishop be one and the same, that yet among Bishops there should be a certaine Subordination, and Subjection. The Empire therefore being cast into severall Divisions (which they then called *Dioceses*) every *Dioecesse* contained severall *Provinces*, every *Province* severall *Bishopricks*. The Chiefe of a *Dioecesse* (in that larger sense) was called *Ἐπίσκοπος*, and sometimes a *Patriarch*. The Chiefe of a *Province*, a *Metropolitane*. Next the Bishops in their severall *Diocesses* (as

† S. Cyprian. L. de Simp. Pralat.

(as we now use that word) Among *These* there was effectually subjection respectively grounded upon Canon, and Positive Law in their severall Quarters. But over them none at all. All the Difference there, was but *Honorary*, not *Authoritative*. If the Ambition of some particular persons did attempt now and then to breake these Bounds, it is no marvel. For no Calling can sanctifie all that have it. And *Socrates* telles us, That in this way the *Bishops of Alexandria and Rome* advanced themselves to a great height *πέρα τῆς ἱερουσύνης*, even beyond the quality of *Bishops*. Now upon view of *Story* it will appeare, that what advantage accrewed to *Alexandria*, was gotten by the violence of *Theophilus*, Patriarch there. A man of exceeding great Learning, and of no lesse violence; and he made no little advantage, out of this, That the *Empresse Eudoxia* used his helpe for the casting of *S. Chrysostome* out of *Constantinople*. But the *Roman Prelates* grew by a steddly and constant watchfulness upon all Occasions to increase the Honour of that *Sea*. Interposing and *assuming to themselves to be *Vindices Canonum* (as *S. Gregory Naz.* speaks) Defenders and Restorers of the Canons of the Church, which was a faire pretence, and took extremely well. But yet the world tooke notice of this their aime. For in all Contestations between the *East* and the *West*, wh^{ch} were nor smal, nor few, the *Western Bishops* objected *Levity* to the *Eastern*; And they again *Arrogancy* to the *Bishops of the West*, as† *Bilius* observes, and upon very warrantable testimonies. For all this, the *Bishop of Rome* continued in good Obedience to the *Emperor*, enduring his Censures and Iudgements: And being chosen by the *Clergy* and *People of Rome*, he accepted from the *Emperor* the Ratification of that choise. Insomuch that about the yeare 579 when all *Italy* was on fire with the *Lombards*, and **Pelagius* the second constrained through

* *ὡς λέγουσι* ut *ant* sive se *justat* esse. *Greg. Naz. Carm. de vita sua* p. 26.

† *Orientalibus* & *Occidentibus* arrogantia invicem objecta est. *Bilius. Annot. in S. Gregor. Naz. Vitam. Num. 153. Quid opus est Occidentalis superciliosus S. Basil. &c.*

* *Hac una fuit causa quare Pelagius injussu Principis Pontifex creatus sit, quum extra urbem missi quispiam non possent &c. Postea itaque ad placandum Imperatorem Gregorius Diaconus. &c. Platina in vita Pelagii 2. & Onuph. ibid.*

† Onuph. *In Plat.*
in vita Bonif. 3.

the necessity of the times contrary to the Example of his Predecessors to entere upon the Popedom without the Emperors leave, S. Gregory then a Deacon was shortly after sent on Embassy to excuse it. About this time brake out the Ambition of † Iohn Patriarch of Constantinople affecting to be *Univerfall Bishop*. He was countenanced in this by *Mauricius* the Emperor, but sowerly opposed by *Pelagins* and S. Gregory. Info-

^a *In hac ejus superbia quid aliud nisi propinqua jam Antichristi esse tempora designatur. S. Greg. L. 4. Epist. 78.*

† It may be they will say S. Gregory did not inveigh against the Thing, but the Person. That *Iohn* of Constantinople should take that upon him, which belonged to the Pope. But it is manifest by S. Gregorius owne text, that he speaks against the Thing it self, that neither the Bishop of Rome, nor any other, ought to take on him that Title. *Cura totius Ecclesie & Principatus S. Petro committitur, & tamen Univerfalis Apostolus non vocatur. S. Greg. L. 4. Epist. 76.* (Therefore neither is his successor, *Univerfall Bishop*.) *Nunquid ego hac in re propriam causam defendo? nunquid specialem injuriam vindico? & non magis causam Omnipotentis Dei & Univerfalis Ecclesie?* where he plainly denies, that he speaks in his owne Cause, or in the Cause of his See. *Per Venerandam Chalcedonensem Synodum hoc Nomen Rō. Pontifici oblatum est, sed nullus eorum unquam hoc singularitatis Vocabulum assumpsit, nec uti consensit, ne dum privatum aliquid daretur Vni, honore debito Sacerdotes privarentur Univerfi, &c.* Where he plainly says, the *Romane Bishops* rejected this Title. *Ibid.* And yet for all this, *Pope Gregory the seventh* delivers it as one of his Decretes in a Councell held at Rome about the yeare 1076. *Quod solus Romanus Pontifex jure dicatur Univerfalis Baron. ad An. 1076. N. 31. & 32.*
* *Ab his a Cordibus Christianorum Nomen istud Blasphemie. S. Greg. L. 4. Epist. 76. In isto scelerato vocabulo consentire, nihil est aliud quam si dem perdere. S. Greg. L. 4. Epist. 83.*

much, that S. Gregory saies plainly, That this *Priave* of his shewes that the times of *Antichrist* were neare. So as yet (and this was now upon the point of six hundred yeares after Christ) there was no *Univerfall Bishop*, No One Monarch over the whole *Militant Church*. But *Mauricius* being deposed and murthered by *Phocas*; *Phocas* conferred upon † *Boniface the third* that very honour, which two of his Predecessors had declaimed against as **Monstrous* and *Blasphemous*, if not *Antichristian*. Where, by the way either these two Popes, *Pelagius* and S. Gregory erred in this waighty businesse about an *Univerfall Bishop* over the whole Church. Or if they did not Erre, *Boniface*, and the rest which after him tooke it upon them, were

in their very Predecessors judgment, *Antichristian*.
But

But to proceed. * *As yet the right of Election or Ratification of the Pope continued in the Emperor.* But then the Lombards grew so great in *Italie*, and the *Empire* was so infested with *Saracens*; and such changes hapned in all parts of the world, as that neither for the present, the *Homage of the Pope* was usefull to the *Emperor*; nor the *Protection of the Emperor* availeable for the *Pope*. By this meanes the *Bishop of Rome* was left to play his owne game by himselfe. A thing which as it pleased him well enough; So both he, and his Successors made great Advantage by it. For being growne to that Eminence by the *Emperor*, and the greatnesse of that City and Place of his abode, He found himselfe the more free, the greater the tempest was, that beat upon the other: And then first,

† *He set himselfe to alienate the hearts of the Italians from the Emperor.* Next he Opposed himselfe against him. And about the yeare seven hundred and ten, *Pope Constantine the first* did also first of all openly confront *Philippicus the Emperor* in defence of Images. As * *Onuphrius* relates us. After him *Gregory the second*, and the third tooke up his example, and did the like by *Leo Isaurus*. By this time the *Lombards* began to pinch very close and to vex on all sides not *Italy* only, but

Rome too. This drives the *Pope* to seeke a new Patron. And very fitly he meetes with *Charles Martell* in *France*, that famous warriour against the *Saracens*.

^b Him he implores in defence of the Church against the *Lombards*. This addresse seemes very advisedly taken, at least it proves very fortunate to them both.

* *Vana tunc habebatur Clari & Populi Electio, nisi aut Imperatores, aut eorum Exarchi confirmassent.* Plat. in vita Severini. 1.

† *Quum Theophylactus Exarchus Imperatoris Italiam peteret, Milites Itali, veriti ne quid mali ejus Adventus portenderet, quod superioribus temporibus fieri magis cum Pontificibus quam cum Imperatoribus sensissent, ingressurum Romam interficere constituerant* (And the Emperors owne Governer was faine to be defended from the Emperors owne souldiers by the *Popes* power, who had gotten interest in them against their own Master) Platina in vita Iohann. 6. *Abbas marus* was then *Emperor*.

* *Primus omnium Rom. Pontificum Imperatori Graco Philippico in os resisteret palam ausus est.* Onuphrius in Plat. in vita Constantini. 1.

^a Platina in vita Gregor. 2. & 3.

^b *Ut laboranti Rome & Ecclesie primo quoque tempore auxilium ferret &c.* Platina in vita Greg. 3.

Qua res semel incipit cum Longobardis Regni excidio finita est Onuph. in Plat. in vita Constantini primi.

**For in short time it dissolved the Kingdome of the Lombards in Italy, which had then stood two hundred and*

four yeares, which was the Popes security; And it brought the Crown of France into the House of Charles, and shortly after the Westerne Empire. And now began the Pope to be great indeed. for by the Bounty

† Redditus itaq; Romanis Exarchatus est, quicquid Padum & Apenninum interjacet. &c. Plat. in vita Stephan. secundi.

of † Pipin sonne of Charles, that which was taken from the Lombards was given to the Pope. So that now of a Bishop, he became a Temporall Prince.

But when Charles the Great had set up the Westerne Empire, then he resumed the Ancient and Originall Power of the Emperor, to governe the Church, to call Councells, to order Papall Elections. And this Power continued in his Posterity. For this Right of the Emperor was in force and use in Gregory the seventh's time,

** Imperator in Gratiam cum Gregorio rediit, eundemque in Pontificatu confirmavit, ut tum Imperatorum mos erat. Plat. in vita Gregor. septim.*

** Who was confirmed in the Popedome by Henry the fourth, whom he afterward deposed. And it might have continued longer, if the succeeding*

Emperors had had abilities enough to secure, or vindicate their owne Right. But the Pope keeping a strong Councell about him, and meeting with some Weake Princes, and they oft times distracted with great and dangerous warres, grew stronger, till he got the better. So this is enough to shew how the Popes clumed up by the Emperors, till they over-topped them, which is all I said before, and have now proved. And this was about the yeare, 1073. (For the whole Popedome of Greg. the seventh was begun and ended within the Raigne of William the Conquerour.) Yet was it carried in succeeding times with great changes of fortune and different successe. The Emperor sometimes plucking from the Pope, and the † Pope from the Emperor, winning

† Multi deinde fuerunt Imperatores Hen. similiores, quam In. Casari, quos subigere non fuit difficile, dum domi rerum omnium securi &c. Cal. L. 4. Instit. c. 11. §. 13.

winning and losing ground, as their Spirits, Abilities, Aids & Opportunities were, till at the last the Pope settled himself upon the Grounds laid by * Gregory the seventh, in the great power which he now uses in and over these parts of the Christian world.

* For in a Synod at Rome about the year 1076. Pope Greg. the seventh established certain briefe Conclusions, twenty seven in number, upon which stands almost all the Greatness of the Papacy. These Conclusions are called *Dictatus Papæ*. And they are reckoned up by *Baronius* in the year 1076. Nu. 31, 32, &c. But whether this Dictatorship did now first invade the Church, I cannot certainly say. The chief of these Propositions follow here,

Quod solus Rom. Pontifex jure dicatur Universalis.

Quod solus Papa pedes omnes Principes deosculentur.

Quod liceat illi Imperatores Depone.

Quod nulla Synodus absq; præcepto ejus debet Generalis vocari.

Quod nullum Capitulum, nullusq; Liber Canonicus habentur absque illius Autoritate.

Quod sententia illius à nullo debet retractari, & ipse omnium solus retractare potest.

Quod Rom. Ecclesia nunquam erravit, nec in perpetuum, Scripturâ testante, errabit.

Quod Rom. Pontifex, si Canonicè fuerit ordinatus, meritis B. Petri indubitanter efficitur sanctus.

Quod à fidelitate Iniquorum subditos potest absolvere.

Thirdly, A.C. knowing 'tis not enough to say this, NUM. 13. That the Pope is Pastour of the whole Church, labours to prove it. And first he tells us, that *Irenæus* intimates so much; but he doth not tell us where. And he is much scanted of Ancient Proofs, if *Irenæus* stand alone. Besides, *Irenæus* was a Bishop of the Gallicane Church, and a very unlikely man to Captivate the Liberty of that Church under the more powerfull Principality of Rome. And how can we have better evidence of his Judgement touching that Principality, then the Actions of his Life? When Pope Victor Excommunicated the Asian Churches ἀπόως † all at a blow, † *Euseb. L. 5.* was not *Irenæus* the Chief man that reprehended ^{c. 25.} him for it? A very unmeet and undutifull thing, sure, it had been in *Irenæus*, in deeds to taxe him of rashness and inconsiderateness, whom in words A. C. would have to be acknowledged by him, The Supreme and Infallible Pastour of the Universall Church. But the Place of *Irenæus*, which A. C. meanes, (I thinke) is this, where he uses these words indeed, but short

† *Adhanc Ecclesiam, propter potentio-
rem Principatatem, necesse est omnem con-
venire Ecclesiam, i. e. eos qui sunt un-
disque fideles. In qua semper ab his qui
confervata est ea que est ab
aditio. Irén. L. 3. c. 3.*

A.C. p. 58.

of A. C^s. sense of it. † *To this Church* (he speaks of *Rome*) *propter potentio-
rem principatatem, for the more powerfull Principality of
it, 'tis necessary that every Church,
that is, the faithfull, undique, round
about should have recourse. Should have recourse, so
A. C. translates it. And what doth this availe him?
Very great reason was there in Irenæus his time, That
upon any Difference arising in the Faith, Omnes undique
Fideles, all the Faithfull, or, if you will, all the Churches
round about, should have recourse, that is, resort to
Rome, being the Imperiall City, and so a Church of
more powerfull Principality, then any other at that
time in those parts of the world. Well: Will this
exalt Rome to be the Head of the Church Univerfall?
What if the States and Policies of the world be much
changed since, and this Conveniency of resorting to
Rome be quite cealed? Then is not Rome devested of
her more powerfull Principality? But the meaning of
A. C. is, We must so have recourse to Rome, as to sub-
mit our Faith to hers: And then not onely in Irenæ-
us his time, but through all times reforme Our selves
by her Rule: That is, all the Faithfull, not undiq³,
round about, but ubiq³, every where, must agree with
Rome in point of Faith. This he meanes, and Rome
may thank him for it. But this Irenæus saith not, nor
will his words beare it, nor durst A.C. therefore construe
him so, but was content to smoothe it over with this
ambiguous phrase of *having recourse to Rome*. Yet this
is a place as much stood upon by them, as any other
in all Antiquity. And should I grant them their owne
sense, *That all the faithfull every where must agree with
Rome* (which I may give, but can never grant) yet
were not this saying any whit prejudiciall to us now.*

For

For first here's a powerfull *Principality* ascribed to the Church of Rome. And that no man of learning doubts but the Church of Rome had within its owne *Patriarchate* and *Iurisdiction*; and that was very large, containing ^a all the Provinces in the *Dioceſſe* of Italy (in the old ſenſe of the word *Dioceſſe*) which *Provinces* the *Lawyers* and others terme *Suburbicarias*. There were ten of them. The three Iſlands, *Sicily*, *Corſica*, and *Sardinia*; and the other ſeven upon the firme land of *Italie*. And this (I take it) is plaine in *Ruffinus*. For he living ſhortly after the *Nicene Councell*, as he did, and being of *Italy*, as he was, he might very well know the *Bounds* of that *Patriarchs Iurisdiction*, as it was then practiſed: ^b And he ſayes expreſſy, That according to the old Cuſtome, the *Romane Patriarchs Charge* was confined within the Limits of the *Suburbicarian Churches*. To avoid the force of this Teſtimony, ^c *Cardinall Peron* layes load upon *Ruffinus*. For he charges him with Paſſion, Ignorance, and Raſhneſſe. And one peece of his Ignorance is, That hee hath ill tranſlated the *Canon of the Councell of Nice*. Now be that as it may, I neither do, nor can approve his *Translation* of that *Canon*; nor can it be eaſily proved, that he purpoſely intended a *Translation*. All that I urge is, that *Ruffinus* living in that time and Place, was very like well to know and underſtand the Limits and Bounds of that *Patriarchate of Rome*, in which hee lived. Secondly heres, That it had *potentior*, a more powerfull *Principality* then other Churches had. And that the *Proteſtants* grant too; and that not onely becauſe the *Romane Prelate* was *Ordine primus*, firſt in Order, and Degree, which ſome One muſt be, to avoid Confuſion; [†] But alſo becauſe the *Romane Sea* had wonne a great deale of Credit, and gained a

^a Ed. Brierwood, of the Jurisdiction and Limits of the Patriarchs, in the time of the Nicene Council. Ad. Qu. 1. M. S.

^b Apud Alexandriam, ut in urbe Romæ vetuſta conſuetudo ſervetur, ut ille Aegypti. ut hic Suburbicariarū Eccleſiarum ſolitudinem generat. Ruffin. L. 1. Eccleſ. Hiſt. c. 6. ^c Peron L. 2. of his Reply, c. 6.

[†] Quia cum Orientales & Græcæ Eccleſiæ, & Africane etiam, multis inter ſe Opinionum diſſentionibus tumultuarentur, & datur aliis, & minus turbulenta fuerit. Calv. L. 4. Inſtit. c. 6. §. 16.

great

great deal of Power to it selfe in Church Affairs: 'Because while the Greeke, yea and the African Churches too, were turbulent, and distracted with many and dangerous Opinions, the Church of Rome all that while, and a good while after Irenæus too, was more calme, and constant to the Truth. Thirdly, here's a Necessity (say they) required, That every Church is, the faithfull, which are every where, agree with that Church. But what? simply with that Church, what ever it doe, or believe? No, nothing lesse. For Irenæus addes, with that Church, in quâ, in which is conserved that Tradition which was delivered by the Apostles. And God forbid but it should be necessary for all Churches, and all the faithfull to agree with that Ancient Apostolike Church in all those Things, in which it keepe to the Doctrine and Discipline delivered by the Apostles. In Irenæus his time it kept these better then any other Church, and by this in part obtained *potentiorē Principalitatem*, a Greater power then other Churches, but not over all other Churches. And (as they understand Irenæus) a Necessity lay upon all other Churches to agree with this: but this Necessity was laid upon them by the Then Integrity of the Christian Faith there professed, not by the Universality of the Romane Jurisdiction now challenged. And let Rome reduce it selfe to the Observation of Tradition Apostolike, to which it then held, and I will say as Irenæus did; That it will be then necessary for every Church, and for the Faithfull every where, to agree with it. Lastly, let me Observe too, That Irenæus made no doubt, but that Rome might fall away from Apostolicall Tradition, as well as other Particular Churches of great Name have done. For he does not say, *in quâ servanda semper erit*, sed *in quâ servata est*: Not, in which Church the Doctrine delivered from the Apostles shal ever be entirely kept: That had beene home indeed: But

But in which, by God's grace and mercy, it was to that time of *Irenæus* so kept and preserved. So wee have here in *Irenæus* his Iudgement, the Church of *Rome* then *Intire*, but not *Infallible*. And endowed with a more powerfull *Principality* then other Churches, but not with an *Univerſall Dominion* over all other Churches; which is the *Thing* in Question.

But to this place of *Irenæus A. C.* joynes a reason of his owne. For he tels us the *Bishop of Rome* is *S. Peter's Succeſſour*, and therefore to *Him* we muſt have recourse. The *Fathers* I deny not, aſcribe very much to *S. Peter*: But 'tis to *S. Peter* in his owne perſon. And among them, *Epiphanius* is as free, and as frequent in extolling *S. Peter*, as any of them: And yet did he never intend to give an *Absolute Principality* to *Rome* in *S. Peter's* right. There is a *Noted Place* in that *Father*, where his words are theſe: † For the Lord himſelfe made

S. Peter the firſt of the *Apoſtles*, a firme *Rocke*, upon which the Church of God is built, and the *Gates of Hell* ſhall not prevaile againſt it, &c. For in him the Faith is made firme every way, who received the *Key of Heaven*, &c. For in him all the *Questions* and *Subtilties* of the Faith are found. This is a great

Place at firſt ſight too, and deſerves a *Marginall Note* to call young *Readers* eyes to view it. And it hath this *Note* in the Old *Latine Edition* at *Paris*, 1564. *Petri Principatus, & Preſtantia*, *Peter's Principality*, and *Excellency*. This Place, as much ſhevv as it make for the *Romane Principality*, I ſhall eaſily cleare, and yet doe no wrong, either to *S. Peter*, or the *Romane Church*. For moſt manifeſt

NUM. 14.
A. C. p. 58.

† Ipſe autem Dominus conſtituit eum Primum Apoſtolorum, Petram firmam ſuper quam Eccleſia Dei adificata eſt, & porta inferorum non valebunt adverſus illam, &c. Juxta omnem enim modum in Ipſo firmata eſt fides, qui accepit Clavem Colorum, &c. In hoc enim omnes Quaſtiones ac Subtilitates fidei invenimur. Epiphani, in Ancorato. Edit. Pariſ. Lat. 1564. fol. 497. A. Edit. verò Græcæ Latin. To. 2. p. 14.

^a π ὅπ ἐπέλεγεν.
For there begins
the Argument of
Epiphanius.

^b ὁ κορυφαίωται Θ.

^c τὴν στερεὰν πέτραν.

^d καὶ παντὶ ᾧ, &c.

^e ἐν τῷ ᾧ, &c.
S. Mat. 16. 17.

it is, That the authority of S. Peter is ^a urged here to proove the Godhead of the Holy Ghost. And then follow the Elogyes given to S. Peter, the better to set off, and make good that Authority; As that hee was ^b Princeps Apostolorum, the Prince of the Apostles, and pronounced blessed by Christ; because as God the Father revealed to him the Godhead of the Sonne; so did the Sonne the Godhead of the Holy Ghost. After this Epiphanius calls Him ^c solidam Petram, a solid Rocke, upon which the Church of God was founded, and against which the Gates of Hell should not prevaile. And addes, That the Faith was rooted, and made firme in him ^d every way, in him who received the Key of Heaven. And after this, he gives the Reason of all: ^e Because in Him: (mark I pray, 'tis still in Him, as he was blessed by that Revelation from God the Father S. Matthew 16.) were found all the λεπτολογήματα the very Niceties and exactnesse of the Christian Faith. For he professed the Godhead of the Sonne, and of the Holy Ghost; And so Omni modo every Point of Faith was rooted in Him. And this is the full meaning of that Learned Father in this passage: Now therefore Building the Church upon Saint Peter, in Epiphanius his sense, is not, as if He and his Successors were to be Monarchs over it for ever:

^f ὅς γεγενεν Θ. Qui factus est nobis verā solidā Petra firmans fidem Domini. In quā (Petrā) edificata est Ecclesia juxta omnem modum. Primò, quòd confessus est Christum esse Filium Dei vivi, & statim audivit super hanc Petram solida fidei edificabo Ecclesiam m. am. — Etiam de Sp. Sancto idem &c. Epiphani. L. 2. Hæres. 59. contra Catharos. To. 1. p. 500. Edit. Græco-Lat.

But it is the edifying and establishing the Church in the true Faith of Christ by the Confession which S. Peter made. And so ^f Hee expresses himselfe elsewhere most plainly: Saint Peter (saith he) who was made to us indeed a solid Rock firming the Faith of our Lord. On which (Rocke) the

Church is built juxta omnē modum, every way. First that he

he Confessed Christ to be the Sonne of the Living God, and by and by he heard: Upon this Rocke of solid Faith I will build my Church. And the same Confession he made of the Holy Ghost. Thus was S. Peter a solid Rocke upon which the Church was founded *omni modo*, every way. That is, the Faith of the Church was ^a confirmed by him in every Point. But that S. Peter was any Rocke, or Foundation of the Church, so as that he and his Successours must be relied on in all matters of Faith, and governe the Church like Princes, or Monarchs, that Epiphanius never thought of. And that he did never thinke so, I prove it thus. For beside this apparent meaning of his Context (as is here expressed) how could hee possibly thinke of a Supremacy due to S. Peter's Successour, that in most expresse termes, and that ^b twice repeated, makes S. James the brother of our Lord, and not S. Peter, succeed our Lord in the Principality of the Church. And Epiphanius was too full both of Learning, and Industry, to speake contrary to himselfe in a Point of this moment.

Next, since A.C. speeds no better with Irenæus, he will have it out of Scripture. And he still tels us, the Bishop of Rome is S. Peter's Successour. Well. Suppose that. What then? What? Why then he succeeded in all S. Peter's Prerogatives which are Ordinary, and belonged to him as a Bishop, though not in the Extraordinary, which belonged to him as an Apostle. For that's it which you all say, ^dbut no man proves. If this be so, yet then I must tell A. C. S. Peter in his Ordinary Power was never made Pastour of the whole Church: Nay in his Extraordinary, he had no ^emore powerfull Principality then the other Apostles had.

^a *οὗτοι τῶ ἀγίου πνεύματος*
μὲν *ὁ ἀγίους ἀποστόλους*
ἐκλήκει *ἡ μὴς.*
Ibid.

^b *Ille primus* (speaking of S. James the Lords Brother) *Episcopalem Cathedram capit, quum ei ante ceteros omnes suum in terris Thronum Dominus tradidisset.*
Epiphani. *L. 3. Hæres. 78. To. 2. p. 1039.*
Et ferè similiter. To. 1. L. 1. Hæres. 29.

NUM. 15.
A.C. p. 58.

^c Bellar. *L. 1. de*
R. Pont. c. 9. S.
Respondeo Pontificatum.

^d §. 25. Nu. 10.

^e Bellar. *Ibid.*

^a The Fathers gave three Prerogatives to S. Peter. Of Authority. Of Primacy. And of Principality. But not of Supremacy of Power. Raynold. *cont.* Hart. c. 5. Divis. 3. And he proves it at large.

^b S. Mat. 16. 18.

^c S. Mat. 18. 18.

S. Ioh. 20. 22.

^d Si hoc Petro tantum dictum est, non facit hoc Ecclesia, &c. S. Aug. Tract. 50. in S. Ioh.

NUM. 16.

A. C. p. 58.

^e S. Luk. 22. 32.

^f Deum dare, ut in fide perseveretur. S. Prosper. L. 1. de Vocat. Gent. c. 24.

^g Rogavi ut non deficeret, &c. Et certe juxta vos in Apostoli erat positum potestate si voluisset, ut non deficeret fides ejus, &c. S. Hieron. L. 2. adversus Pelagianos.

^h Aliquid speciale. Bellar. L. 4. de Rom. Pont. c. 3. S. Secundo, quia sine.

A ^a Primacy of Order was never denied Him by the Protestants: And an Universall Supremacy of Power was never granted him by the Primitive Christians. Yea but Christ promised the keyes to S. Peter, ^b S. Mat. 16. True, but so did he to all the rest of the Apostles, ^c S. Mat. 18. and S. Ioh. 20. And to their Successours, as much as to His. So 'tis Tibi, & Illis, not Tibi, non Illis. I give the Keyes to thee and them, not to thee to exclude them. Vnlesse any man will thinke Heaven Gates so easie, that they might open and shut them without the Keyes. And ^d S. Augustine is plaine: If this were said onely to S. Peter, then the Church bath no power to doe it; which God forbid! The Keyes therefore were given to S. Peter, and the rest in a Figure of the Church, to whose power, and for whose use They were given. But there's not one Key in all that Bunch, that can let in S. Peter's Successour, to a more powerfull Principality universall then the Successors of the other Apostles had.

Yea but Christ prayed, That S. Peter's Faith might not faile. ^e S. Luke 22. That's true. And in that sense, that Christ prayed, S. Peter's Faith failed not; That is, in Application to his person for his Perseverance in the Faith, as ^f S. Prosper applies it. Which Perseverance yet he must owe and acknowledge to the grace of Christ's Prayer for him, not to the power and ability of his owne Free-Will, as ^g S. Ierome tels us. ^h Bellarmine likes not this: Because (saith he) Christ here obtained some speciall Priviledge for S. Peter, whereas Perseverance in Grace is a Gift common to all the Elect. And he is so farre right.

And the Speciall Grace which this Prayer of Christ obtained for S. Peter was, That he should not fall into

a *finall Apostacy*; no not when Sathan had sifted him to the branne, that he fell most horribly even into a *threefold Denyall* of his Master, and that with a *Curse*. And to recover this, and Persevere, was *aliquid speciale* I trow, if any thing ever were. But this will not down with Bellarmine. No, The *aliquid speciale*, the *speciall Thing* here obtained was (saith he) That neither S. Peter himselfe, nor any other that should sit in his Seat should ever teach any thing contrary to the true Faith. That S. Peter after his recovery should preach nothing either as *Apostle* or *Bishop* contrary to the Faith, will easily be granted him; But that none of his *Succeffors* should doe it, but be all *Infallible*, that certainly never came within the Compasse of *Rogavi pro te Petre*, I have prayed for thee Peter. And Bellarmines Proofe of this is his just Confutation. For he prooves this *Exposition* of that Text only by the Testimony of *seven Popes* in their owne Cause. And then takes a leape to *Theophylact*, who sayes nothing to the purpose. So that upon the matter Bellarmine confesses there is not one *Father* of the Church disinterested in the Cause, that understands this Text as Bellarmine doth, till you come downe to *Theophylact*. So the *Popes Infallibility* appeared to no body but the *Popes* themselves, for above a Thousand yeares after *Christ*. For so long it was before **Theophylact* lived. And the spite of it is, *Theophylact* could not see it neither. For the most that Bellarmine makes him say, is but this: † *Because I account thee as chiefe of my Disciples, confirme the rest; for this becomes Thee, which art to be a Rock and Foundation of the Church after me*. For this is *Personall* too, and of S. Peter, and that as he was an *Apostle*. For otherwise then as an *Apostle*, he was not a *Rocke* or *Foundation* of the Church, no not in a *Secondary* sense. The *speciall priviledge* therefore which *Christ* prayed for, was *personall* to S. Peter, and

a Ut nec ipse ut Pontifex doceret inquam aliquid contra fidem, sive ut in Sede ejus inveniretur qui doceret. Bellar. L. 4. de Rem. Pont. c. 3. S. Alterum Privilegium est.

* *Theophylactus floruit circa An. Dom. 1072.*

† *Quia te habeo Principem, Discipulorum, confirma ceteros, Hoc enim decet Te qui post me Ecclesia Petraes & Fundamentum. Bellar. L. 4. De Rem. Pont. c. 3. S. Præter hos. Ex Theophyl. in 21. S. Luc.*

† *Impetravit.*
Ecce. ibid. §. Est
igitur tertia.

* *Ex quibus pri-*
vilegiis primum
fortasse non ma-
navit ad posteros,
at secundum sine
dubio manavit ad
Posteros jure Suc-
cessores. Bellar.
Ibid. §. Aeternum
Privilegium.

† *Bellar. L. 4.*
de Reg. Pont. c. 8.

§. *Iohn. 11. 42.*

* *Donum hoc la-*
co Retro impe-
tratum, etiam ad
Succesores per-
tinet. Bel. L. 4. de
Rom. Pont. c. 3.
§. Quarto, Do-
num hoc.

is that which before I mentioned. And Bellarmine himselfe sayes, That Christ † obtained by this Prayer two Priviledges, especiall ones for S. Peter. The one, That he should never quite fall from the true Faith, how strongly soever he were tempted. The other, That there should never be found any sitting in his Seate, that should teach against it. Now for the first of these, * Bellarmine doubts it did not flow over to his Successors. Why then 'tis true, which I here say, That this was Personall to S. Peter. But the second he sayes, Out of all doubt passed over to his Successors. Nay, that's not out of all doubt neither. First, because many Learned men have challenged many Popes for teaching Heresy; and that's against the true Faith. And that which so many Learned Men have affirmed, is not out of all doubt. Or if it be, why does Bellarmine take so much paines to confute and disprove them, as † he doth. Secondly, because Christ obtained of his Father every thing that he prayed for, if he prayed for it absolutely, and not under a Condition: *Father I know thou hearest me alwayes* S. Iohn 11. Now Christ here prayed absolutely for S. Peter; Therefore whatsoever he asked for him was granted. Therefore if Christ intended his Successors as well as himselfe, his Prayer was granted for his Successors as well as for himselfe. But then, if Bellarmine will tell us absolutely, as he doth, * That the whole Gift obtained by this Prayer for S. Peter did belong to his Successors; and then by and by after breake this Gift into two parts, and call the first part into doubt, whether it belongs to his Successors or no, he cannot say the second part is out of all doubt. For if there be reason of doubting the one, there's as much reason of doubting the other, since they stand both on the same foot, The Validity of Christ's Prayer for Saint Peter.

NUM. 17.

Yea, but Christ charged S. Peter to governe, and feede his

his whole flocke. S. Iohn. 21. Nay soft. 'Tis but his *Sheepe* S. Iohn 21. 15¹
and his *Lambes*; and that every *Apostle*, and every *Apo-*
stles Successor hath charge to doe. * S. Matth. 28. But * Mat. 28. 29 &
over the whole Flocke I find no one *Apostle* or *Succe-* S. Mat. 10. 17.
for set. And 'tis a poore shift to say, as *A. C.* doth, *That* The same pow-
the Bishop of Rome is set over the whole Flocke, because both er and charge is
over *Lambes*, and *Sheep*, For in every flock that is not of given to them al.
barren Weathers, there are *Lambes* and *Sheepe*, that is, A. C. p. 58.

† weaker and stronger Christians;
not *People* and *Pastors*, *Subjects* and
Governours, as *A. C.* expounds it to
bring the *Necks of Princes* under
Romane Pride And if *Kings* bee
meant, yet then the command is
Pasce, feed them; But *Deponere*, or *Oc-*
cidere, to depose, or kill them; is not
Pascere in any sense; *Lanii id est, non*
Pastoris, that's the *Butchers*, not the
Shepherds part. If a *Sheep* go astray
never so far, 'tis not the *Shepherds*
part, to kill him; at least if he doe, *non pascit; dum occidit*,
he doth not certainly feede, while he killes.

† And this seemes to me to allude to that
of S. Paul, 1 *Corinth* 3. 2. and *Heb.* 5. 12.
Some are fed with milke, and some with
stronger meat. The *Lambes* with milke,
and the *Sheepe* with stronger meate. But
here *A. C.* follows *Pope Hildebrand*
close, who in the Case of the *Emperor*
then, asked this Question: *Quando Chri-*
stus Ecclesiam suam Petro commisit, &
dixit, Pasce Oves meas, exceptine Reges?
Plac. in vita Greg. 7. And certainly *Kings*
are not exempted from being fed by the
Church: But from being spoyled of their
Kingdomes by any *Church-men*, that
they are.

And for the Close, *That the Bishop of Rome shall ne-* Num. 18.
ver refuse to feed and governe the whole flock in such sort, as A. C. p. 58.
that neither particular Man, nor Church shall have just Cause
under pretence of Reformation in Manners or Faith to make
a Separation from the whole Church. By *A. C.*s. favour, this
is meere begging of the Question. He sayes, the *Pope*
shall ever governe the *Whole Church*, so as that there
shall be no just Cause given of a Separation. And that
is the very Thing, which the *Protestants* charge upon
him; Namely that he hath governed, if not the *Whole*,
yet so much of the Church as he hath beene able to
bring under his Power, so as that he hath given too
just Cause of the present continued separation. And

A.C. p. 58.

as the Corruptions in the Doctrine of Faith, in the Church of Rome were the Cause of the first Separation; so are they at this present day the Cause why the separation continues. And further, I for my part, am cleare of Opinion, that the *Errours* in the *Doctrine of Faith*, which are charged upon the whole Church, at least so much of the whole, as in these parts of *Europe* hath beene kept under the *Romane Iurisdiction*, have had their *Originall* and *Continuance* from this, that so much of the *Vniversall Church* (which indeed they account *All*) hath forgotten her owne Liberty, and submitted to the *Romane Church* and *Bishop*; and so is in a manner forced to embrace all the *Corruptions*, which the *Particular Church of Rome* hath contracted upon it self. And being now not able to free her selfe from the *Romane Iurisdiction*, is made to continue also in all her *Corruptions*. And for the *Protestants*, they have made no separation from the *Generall Church* properly so called (for therein *A. C.* said well, the *Popes Administration* can give no Cause to separate from that) but their Separation is only from the *Church of Rome*, and such other *Churches*, as by adhering to her, have hazarded themselves, and do now miscall themselves, the *Whole Catholike Church*. Nay even here the *Protestants* have not left the *Church of Rome* in her *Essence*, but in her *Errours*; not in the Things which *Constitute* a Church, but only in such *Abuses* and *Corruptions*, as work toward the *Dissolution* of a Church.

F. I also asked, who ought to judge in this Case? The
B. said a *Generall Councell*.

§. 26.
NUM. I.

B. And surely, What greater or surer Iudgement you can have, where sense of Scripture is doubted, then a *Generall Councell*, I doe not see: Nor doe you doubt

doubt. And *A. C.* grants it to be a most Competent Iudge of all Controversies of Faith, so that all Pastors be gathered together, and in the Name of Christ, and pray unanimously for the promised assistance of the Holy Ghost, and make great and diligent search and examination of the Scriptures, and other Grounds of Faith, And then Decree what is to bee held for Divine Truth. For then (saith he) 'tis Firme, and Infallible, or els there is nothing firm upon earth. As faire as this Passage seems, and as freely as I have granted, that a Generall Councell is the best Judge on earth, where the sense of Scripture is doubted, yet even in this passage there are somethings Considerable. As first, when shall the Church hope for such a Generall Councell, in which all Pastors shall be gathered together? there was never any such Generall Councell yet, nor doe I believe su h can be had. So that's supposed in vaine; and you might have learn'd this of * *Belarmie*: if you will not believe me. Next (saith he) If all these Pastors pray unanimously for the promised Assistance of the Holy Ghost. Why, but if all Pastors cannot meet together, all cannot pray together, nor all search the Scriptures together, nor all upon that Search Decree together. So that is supposed in vaine too. Yea but Thirdly, If all that meet doe pray unanimously. What then? All that meet are not simply All. Nor doth the Holy Ghost come, and give his Assistance upon every Prayer, that is made unanimously, though by very many Prelates or other Faithfull People met together, unlesse all other Requisites as well as *Unanimity*, to make their prayer to bee heard and granted, bee observed by them; So that an *Unanimous Prayer* is not adequately supposed, and therefore Concludes not. But lastly how far a Generall

C c Councell

* Si omni nullum fuit hactenus
Concilium Generale, neque etiam
videtur deinceps futurum. *Bel. I.*
de Con. c. c. 17. §. 1.

† §. 33. *Confel. 1.*

* And this was thought a sufficient Judge too, when Christians were as humble as learned. I am sure *Optatus* thought so. *Quærendi sunt Iudices. Si Christiani de utraque parte dari non possunt, quia studius veritas impeditur. De foris quærendus est Index. Si Paganus, non potest nosse Christiana Secreta. Si Iudeus, inimicus est Christiani Baptismatis. Ergo in terris de hac re nullum poteris reperiri Iudiciū. De Cælo quærendus est Index. Sed ut quid pulsamus ad Cælum, quum habemus hic in Evangelio? Testamentum? inquam, quia hoc loco recte possunt terrena celestibus comparari) tale est, quod quivis hominum habens numerosos filios, his quamdiu pater præsens est, ipse imperat singulis; non est adhuc necessarium Testam. nū. Sic & Christus, quamdiu præsens in terris fuit, (quamvis nec modo desit) pro tempore quicquid necessarium erat, Apostolis Imperavit. Sed quomodo terrenus Pater dum se in confinio senserit mortis, timens ne post mortem suam, rupta pæce litigent fratres, arbitris Testibus Voluntatem suam de Pælore mortuū, transfret in Tabulas duraturas. Et si fuerit inter fratres contentio nata, non iur ad Tumulum, sed queritur. Testamentū; & qui Tumulo quiescit, tacitus de Tabulis loquitur. Vixit, cuius est Testamentū, in celo est. Ergo voluntas ejus, velut in Testamento, sic in Evangelio inquiratur. Opt. l. 5. adv. Parm.*

This pregnant Place of *Optatus*, (That the Scripture is the Judge of Divine Truth, when ever it is questioned,) though *Baldwin* dare not deny, yet he would faine slide both by it, and by a parallell place as full in *S. Aug. in Psal 21. Expositione 2.* with this shift that *S. Augustine* in another place had rather use the Testimony of Tradition, that is the Testimony *Nuncupativi potius quam Scripti Testamenti*, of the *Nuncupative*, rather then the *Written* Will of Christ. *Baldwin* in *Optat. l. 5.* But this is a meere shift. First, because it is *Cetuius principii* the meere begging of the Question. For we deny any Testament of Christ, but that which is written. And *A. C.* cannot shew it in any one Father of the Church, that Christ ever left behind him a *Nuncupative obligatory Will*. Secondly, because nothing is more plaine in these two Fathers *Optatus* and *S. Augustine*, then that both of them appeale to the *Written Will*, and make that the Judge without any Exception, when a matter of Faith comes in Question. In *Optat.* the words are *Habemus in Evangelio*, we have it in the Gospell. And in *Evangelio inquiratur*, Let it be inquired in the Gospell: And Christ put it in *tabulas duraturas* into *Written* and lasting Instruments. In *S. Augustine* the words are: *Our Father did not dye intestate &c. And Tabula aperiatur*, Let his Will, his written Instruments be opened. And *Legantur Verba mortui* let the words of him that dyed, be read. And againe *Aperi, Legamus*, Open the Will and let us read. And *Legamus, quia litigamus?* Why do we strive? Let's read the Will. And againe, *Aperi Testamentum, lege* Open the Will, read. All which Passages are most expresse and full for his *Written Will*, and not for any *Nuncupative Will*, as *Baldwin* would put upon us, And *Hart* who takes the same way with *Baldwin* is not able to make it out, as appears by. *D. Reynolds* in his *Conference with Hart. c. 8. divisi. 1. p. 396. &c.*

Councell, if all *A. C.*s. Conditions bee observed, is firm, and *Infallible*, that shall be more fully discussed at † after. In the meane time, these two words *Firme*, and *Infallible* are ill put together as *Synonima's*. For there are some things most *Infallible* in themselves, which yet could never get to be made *firm* among men. And there are many things made *firm* by *Law*, both in *Churches & Kingdomes*, which yet are not *Infallible* in themselves. So to draw all together; to settle *Cōtroversies* in the Church, there is a *Visible Judge* and *Infallible*, but not living. And that is the * *Scripture* pronouncing by the Church. And there

there is a visible and a Living Iudge, but not Infallible; And that is a Generall Councell, lawfully called, and so proceeding. But I know no formall Confirmation of it needfull (though A. C. require it, * but onely that after it is ended, the Whole Church admit it, bee it never so tacite).

* §. 28. N. 1. And so plainly S. Augustine speaking of S. Cyprians Errour about Rebaptization &c. sayes. *Illis temporibus antequam Plinarii Concilii sententia quid in hac re sequendum esset, et eius Ecclesie Consensio confirmasset, Visum est ei cum &c. L. 1. de Bapt. cont. Donatist. c. 18.* So, here is first *Sententia Concilii*: And then the Confirmation of it is *totius Ecclesie Consensio*, the Consent of the whole Church yeelding unto it. And so Gerson, *Concurrente Vniuersali totius Ecclesie consensu, &c. In Declaratione Veritatum qua credenda sunt. &c. S. 4.* For this, that the Pope must confirme it, or else the Generall Councell is invalid, is one of the *Romane Nouelties*. For this cannot be shewed in any Antiquity void of just Exception. The truth is, the Pope as other Patriarchs and great Bishops used to doe, did give his assent to such Councils as he approved. But that is no Corroboration of the Councell, as if it were invalid without it: but a Declaration of his consenting with the rest. §. 33. Confid. 4. Nu. 6.

In the next Place, A. C. interposes new matter NUM. 2. quite out of the Conference. And first in case of Division, and Disunion in the Church, he would know, what is to be done to Re-unite, when a Generall Councell (which is acknowledged a fit Iudge) cannot be had by reason of manifold impediments: Or if being called, will not bee of one minde? Hath Christ our Lord (saith hee) in this Case provided no Rule, no Iudge Infallibly to determine Controversies, and to procure Vnitie, and Certainty of Beliefe? Indeed the Protestants admit no Infallible Meanes, Rule, or Iudge, but onely Scripture, which every man may interpret, as hee pleases, and so all shall bee uncertaine. Truly, I must confesse, there are many Impediments to hinder the Calling of a Generall Councell. You know in the Auncient Church there was hinderance enough, and what hurt it wrought. And afterward though it were long first, there was provision made

† *Christianitas in diuersas Hareses scissa est, quia non erat licentia Episcopis in unum convenire, persecutione sevientis usque ad tempora Constantini &c. Mldor. prefat. in Concil. Edit. Venetis. 1585.*

C c 2

for

D. Hoppus

† *Frequens Generalium Conciliorum celebratio est præcipua cultura Agri Dominici. &c. Et illorum neglectus, Errores, Hæreses, & Schismata disseminat. Hæc præteritorum temporum recordatio & presentium consideratio ante oculos nostros ponunt. Itaque sancimus, ut amodo Concilia Generalia celebrentur; ita quod Primum à fine hujus Concilii in quinquennium immediatè sequens, Secundum verò à fine illius in septennium, & deinceps de decennio in decennium perpetuò celebrantur &c. Concil. Constant. Sess. 39. Et apud Gertion. Tom. 1. p. 230. Et Pet. de Aliaco Card. Cameracensis libellum obtulit in Concil. Constant. de Reformatione Ecclesiæ contra Opinionem eorum qui putarunt Concilia Generalia minus necessaria esse, quia Omnia bene à Patribus nostris ordinata sunt. &c. In fascic. Rerum expetendarum. fol. 28. Et Schismatibus debet Ecclesiæ citò per Concilia Generalia provideri, ut in Primitiva Ecclesiâ docuerunt Apostoli. Ut Act. 6. & Act. 15. Ibid fol. 204. A.*

* *In Concil. Ariminensi multis paucorum fraude deceptis &c. S. Aug. L. 3. cont. Maximinum c. 14.*

Practices were able to keepe many Councils from being all of one minde. But if being called, they will not be of one minde, I cannot helpe that; Though that very not agreeing is a shrewd signe, that the other Spirit hath a partie there against the Holy Ghost.

NUM. 3.

Now A. C. would know, what is to be done for Re-uniting of a Church divided in Doctrine of the Faith, when this Remedy by a Generall Council cannot be had, Sure Christ our Lord (saith he) hath provided some Rule, some Iudge in such and such like Cases to procure unity and certainty of beliefe. I believe so too; for he hath left an Infallible Rule the Scripture. And that by the manifest Places in it (which need no Dispute, no

Externall Iudge) is ^a able to settle Vnity and Certainty of Beliefe in Necessaryes to Salvation; And in Non necessariis, in and about things
not

^a *Non per difficiles nos Deus ad Beatam vitam Quæstiones vocat, &c. In absoluto nobis & facili est aternitas; Iesum suscitatum à mortuis per Deum Credere, & Ipsum esse Dominum confiteri, &c. S. Hilar. L. 10. de Trin. ad finem.*

not necessarie, there ought not to bee a Contention to a ^a Separation.

And therefore A. C. does not well, to make that a Crime, that the Protestants admit no Infal-
lible Rule, but the Scrip-
ture onely: Or as he (I
doubt not without
some scorne) termes it,
beside onely Scripture.
For what need is there
of another, since this is
most Infalible, and the
same which the ^b Anci-
ent Church of Christ
admitted. And if it
were sufficient for the
Ancient Church to guide
them, and direct their
Councils, why should it
be now held insuffici-
ent for us, at least, till a
free Generall Councell
may bee had? And it
hath both the Conditi-
ons which ^c Bellarmine
requires to a Rule.
Namely, that it be Cer-
taine, and that it bee
Knowne; For if it bee
not certaine, it is no Rule, and if it be not knowne, 'tis no
Rule to us. Now the
^d Romanists dare not

^a Cyprianus & Collega ipsius credentes Hæreticos & Schismaticos Baptismum non habere, sine Baptismo rece-
ptis, &c. iis tamen communicare quam separari ab Unitate maluerunt. S. Aug L. 2. de Baptis. cont. Donatist. c. 6.
Et hi non contaminabant Cyprianum, Ibid. sine.

^b Recensuit cuncta sanctis Scripturis consona. Euseb. L. 5. Hist. c. 20. De Irenæo.

Regula Principalis de qua Paracletus agnitus. Tert. de Monogam. c. 2. And this is true, though the Authour spoke it, when he was Lapsed.

Ipsas Scripturas apprimè tenens. S. Hieron. ad Marcel-
linum adversus Montanum. To. 2. Hoc quia de Scripturis non habet auctoritatem, eadem facilitate contemnitur, quàm probatur. S. Hieron. in S. Matih. 23.

Manifestus est fidei lapsus, & liquidum superbia vitium, vel respuere aliquid eorum quæ Scriptura habet, vel inducere quicquam quod scriptum non est. S. Basil. Serm. de Fide. To. 2. p. 154. Edit. Basilee. 1565.

Contra insurgentes Hæreses saepe pugnavi Agraphis, verum non alienis à piâ secundum Scripturam sententiâ. Ibid. p. 153.

And before Basil, Tertul. Adoro Scripturæ plenitudinem, &c. si non est scriptum, timeat Hermogenes, Va illud ad-
cientibus vel detrabentibus destinatum. Tertul. advers. Hermog. c. 21.

And Paulinus plainly calls it Regulam Directionis; Epist. 23.

De hac Regulâ tria observanda sunt. 1. Regula est, sed à tempore quo scripta. 2. Regula est, sed per Ecclesiam applicanda, non per privatum Spiritum. 3. Regula est, & mensurat omnia quæ continent: continet autem omnia necessaria ad salutem vel mediata vel immediata. Et hoc tertium habet Biel. in 3. D. 25. q. unicâ. Conclus. 4. M. And this is all we say. Hook. L. 5. Eccles. Pol. §. 22.

^c Regula Catholica fidei debet esse certa & nota. Si certa non sit, non erit Regula. Si nota non sit, non erit Regula nobis. Bellar. L. 1. de Verbo Dei, c. 2. §. 5. Sed nihil est vel certius vel notius sacrâ Scripturâ. Bellar. ibid. §. 6. Therefore the Holy Scripture is the Rule of Catholike Faith, both in it selfe, and to us also; For in things simply Necessary to Salvation, it is abundantly knowne and manifest, as §. 16. Nu. 5.

^d Convenit inter nos & omnes omnino Hæreticos, Verbum Dei esse Regulam fidei, ex qua de Dogmatibus judican-

dum sit. Bellarm. *Prefat. To. 1. fine.* And although there perhaps he includes *Traditions*, yet that was never proved yet. Neither indeed can he include *Traditions*. For he speaks of that Word of God, upon which all Hereticks consent: But concerning *Traditions*, they all consent not: That they are a Rule of Faith. Therefore he speaks not of them.

deny, but this Rule is *Certain*; and that it is sufficiently *Known* in the manifest Places of it, and such as are *necessary* to *Salvation*,

none of the *Ancients* did ever deny; so there's an *Infallible Rule*.

NUM. 5.

Nor need there be such feare of a *Private Spirit* in these manifest things, which being but read, or heard teach themselves. Indeed you *Romanists* had need of some other *Judge*, and he a propitious one, to crush the *Pope's* more powerfull *Trincipality* out of *Pasce oves*, feed my sheepe. And yet this must be the meaning (if you will have it) whether *Gideon's* fleece bee wet, or dry, *Judg. 6.* that is, whether there be dew enough in the *Text*, to water that sense or no. But I pray, when God hath left his Church this *Infallible Rule*, what warrant have you to seeke another? You have shewed us none yet, what e're you thinke you have. And I hope *A.C.* cannot thinke, it followes, that *Christ* our Lord hath provided no *Rule* to determine necessary *Controversies*, because hee hath not provided the *Rule*, which he would have.

Judg. 6.

NUM. 6.

* For so he affirms, p. 58.

Besides, let there be such a living *Judge*, as *A.C.* would have, and let the * *Pope* be he, yet that is not sufficient against the malice of the *Divell*, and *impious men*, to keepe the Church at all Times from *Renting*, even in the *Doctrine* of Faith; or to soder the *Rents* which are made. For *Oportet esse Hereses*, 1. *Cor. 11.* *Heresies* there will be, and *Heresies* properly there cannot be, but in *Doctrine* of the Faith. And what, will *A.C.* in this Case do? Will he send *Christ* our Lord to provide another *Rule* then the Decision of the *Bishop of Rome*, because he can neither make *Unity*, nor *Certainty* of *Beliefe*.

1. Cor. 11. 19.

Beliefe. And (as 'tis most apparent) he cannot doe it *de facto*; so neither hath he *po xer* from Christ over the Whole Church to doe it, nay out of all doubt, 'tis not the least reason, why *de facto* he hath so little successe, because *de Iure* he hath no power given. But since *A. C.* requires another Iudge besides the Scripture, and in Cases, when either the time is so difficult, that a *Generall Councell* cannot be called; or the *Councell* to set, that they will not agree; Let's see, how he proves it.

'Tis thus; every earthly kingdome (saith he) when matters cannot be composed by a *Parliament* (which cannot be called upon all Occasions, why doth he not adde here, And which being called, will not alwaies be of one minde, as he did adde it in Case of the Councell) hath, besides the *Law Bookes*, some living *Magistrates and Judges*, and above all, one visible King, the Highest Iudge, who hath Authority sufficient to end all Controversies, and settle *Un'ity* in all Temporall Affaires. And shall we thinke that Christ the wisest King hath provided in his kingdome the Church onely the *Law-bookes* of the Holy Scripture, and no living visible Iudges, and above all, one Chiefe, so assisted by his Spirit, as may suffice to end all Controversies for *Vnity* and Certainty of Faith; which can never be, if every man may interpret Holy Scripture, the *Law-Bookes*, as he list? This is a very plausible Argument with the Many. But the foundation of it is but a † *Similitude*; and if the *Similitude* hold not in the maine, the Argument's nothing. And so I doubt, it will proove here. I'll observe Particulars, as they lie in order.

NUM. 7.
A.C.p.6c2

† *Qua subtilissimè de hoc disputari pos-
sunt, ita ut non similitudinibus quæ ple-
runque fallunt, sed rebus ipsis satisfiat,
&c. S. Aug. L. de Quant. Anima. c. 32.*
Whereupon the *Logicians* tell us right-
ly, that this is a Fallacy, unlesse it be ta-
ken reduplicativè. i. e. de similibus qua
similia sunt. And hence *Arist.* himselfe
2. *Top. Loc. 32.* sayes, πάλιν ἐν αὐτῷ ὁμοί-
ων, εἰ ἐνίοτε ὅθεν. *Rursum in Similibus,
si similiter se habent.*

And first, he will have the whole *Militant Church* NUM. 8.
(for

(for of that we speake) a *Kingdome*. But this is not certaine; For they are *no meane ones*, which thinke our *Saviour Christ* left the Church Militant in the Hands of the *Apostles*, and their *Succeſſours*, in an *Aristocraticall*, or rather a *Mixt Government*, and

that the Church is not a *Monarchicall* otherwise then the *Triumphant*, and *Militant* make one Body under *Christ the Head*. And in this sense indeed, and in this onely, the Church is a most absolute *Kingdome*. And the very Expressing of this sense is a full Answer to all the Places of Scripture, and other Arguments brought by ^b Bellarmine, to prove that the Church is a *Monarchie*. But the Church being as large as the world, *Christ* thought it fitter to governe it *Aristocratically*, by *Diverse*, rather then by *One Vice-Roy*. And I believe this is true. For all the time of the first three hundred yeares, and somewhat better, it was governed *Aristocratically*, if we will impartially consider, how the *Bishops* of those times, carried the whole Business of admitting any new consecrated *Bishops* or others to,

or rejecting them from their *Communion*. For I have carefully Examined this for the first sixe hundred yeares, even to, and within the time of *S. Gregory the great*. Who in the beginning of the seventh hundred yeare sent such Letters to *Augustine* then *Archbishop of Canterbury*, and to ^d *Quirinus*, and other *Bishops in Ireland*; And I finde, That the *Literæ Communicatorie* which

* When *Gerson* writ his Tract *De Aſſeribilitate Papæ*, sure hee thought the Church might continue in a very good Being, without a *Monarchicall Head*: Therefore, in his Judgement, the Church is not by any Command or Institution of *Christ*, *Monarchicall*. *Gerson. par. 1. pag. 154.*

When *S. Hieron.* wrote thus: (*Ubi-
cunque fuerit Episcopus, ſive Rome, ſive
Eugubii, ſive Conſtanti-nopoli, ſive Rhe-
gis, ſive Alexandria, ſive Tanis; ejus-
dem meriti, ejusdem eſt & Sacerdotii.*
S. Hieron. Epiſt. ad Evagrium) doubt-
leſſe he thought not of the *Romane Bi-
ſhops Monarchie*. For what *Bishop* is of
the ſame Merit, or of the ſame Degree in
the Priethood with the Pope, as things
are now carried at Rome? *Aſſerimus
etiam, Paribus & Græcis & Latinis,
ignotas eſſe voces de Petro aut Papæ Mo-
narchia & Monarchia. Nam quod in ſu-
perioribus obſervabamus reperiri eas di-
ſtiones poſitas pro Episcopo, & Episco-
pato, nihil hoc ad rem facit.* *Ila. Calaub.
Exercitatione 1. ad Annales Eccleſ. Ba-
ron. §. 12 p. 378 & §. 11 p. 360. diſer-
tè aſſerit & pr. bat Eccleſia Regimen
Ariſto-raticum fuſſe.*

^b Bellar. *L. 2. de Concil c. 16. §. 1, 2, 3.*

^c *S. Greg. L. 9.
Epiſt. 58. & L.
12. Epiſt. 15.*

^d *S. Greg. L. 9.
Epiſt. 61.*

which certified from one Great *Patriarch* to another, who were fit or unfit to be admitted to their *Communion*, if they upon any Occasion repaired to their *Seas*, were sent mutually. And as freely, and in the same manner from *Rome* to the other *Patriarchs*, as from them to it. Out of which, I thinke, this will follow most directy, *That the Church-Government then was Aristocraticall*. For had the *Bishop of Rome* been then accounted *Sole Monarch* of the Church, and beene put into the *Definition* of the Church (as he is now by ^a *Bellarmino*) all these *Communicatorie Letters* should have beene directed from him to the rest, as whose admittance ought to be a Rule for all to Communicate; but not from others to him, or at least not in that even, equall, and Brotherly way, as now they appeare to be written. For it is no way probable, that the *Bishops of Rome*, which even then sought their owne Greatnesse too much, would have submitted to the other *Patriarchs* voluntarily, had not the very Course of the Church put it upon them.

Besides, this is a great and undoubted Rule, given by ^b *Optatus*, That wheresoever there is a Church, there the Church is in the Common-wealth, not the Common-wealth in the Church. And so also the Church was in the *Romane Empire*. Now from this Ground I argue thus: If the Church be within the Empire or other Kingdome, 'tis impossible the Government of the Church should be *Monarchicall*. For no *Emperour* or *King* will indure another King within his Dominion that shall bee greater then himselfe, since the very induring it, makes him that indures it, upon the matter, no *Monarch*. Nor will it disturb this Argument: That two Great *Kings* in *France* and *Spaine* permit this. For he that is not blinde, may see, if hee will, of what little value

^a Bellar. L. 3. de
Eccles. c. 2. S.
Nostra autem.

NUM. 9.

^b Non enim Res
publica est in Ec-
clesia: sed Ecce-
sia in Republica:
i. e. in Imperio
Romano. Optat.
L. 3.

D d the

^a *Conc. Antioch.*
c. 9. p. 507.

^b *Conc. Nic. 1. c.*
5. & *Antioch.*
c. 12.

^c *Conc. Nic. 1. c.*
4. & *Antioch.*
can. 9.

^d *Conc. Antioch.*
c. 14.

^e *Sed praeponitur*
Scriptura. S. Aug.
gust. L. 2. de
Bapt. cont. Do-
nat. c. 3.

^f *Nam cum Sta-*
tutum sit omni-
bus nobis, & c. &
singulis Pastori-
bus portio gre-
gis & c. S. Cypr.
L. 1. Ep. 3.

^g *Bellar. L. 1. de*
Ro. Pont. c. 8. &
L. 2. de Concil.
c. 16.

^h *Bellar. L. 1. de*
Ro. Pont. c. 7.

ⁱ *A. C. p. 64, 65.*

the Pope's power is in those Kingdomes, farther then to serve their owne turnes of Him, which They do to their great advantage. Nay farther, the Ancient Canons and Fathers of the Church seem to me plaine for this: For the ^a Councell of Antioch submits Ecclesiasticall Causes to the Bishops. And what was done amisse by a Bishop, was corrigible by a ^b Synod of Bishops, but this with the ^c Metropolitane. And in Case these did not agree, the ^d Metropolitane might call in other Bishops out of the neighbouring Provinces. And if Things settled not this way, a Generall Councell (^e under the Scripture, and directed by it) was the Highest Remedy. And ^f S. Cyprian even to Pope Cornelius himselfe sayes plainly: That to every Bishop is ascribed a portion of the flocke for him to governe. And so not all committed to One. In all this the Government of the Church seemes plainly Aristocraticall. And if all other Arguments faile, wee have one left from Bellarmine, who opposes it as much as any, ^g twice for failing. And yet, where hee goes to Exclude Secular Princes from Church-Government, ^h all his Quotations, and all his Prooves run upon this Head, to shew, That the Government of the Church was ever in the Bishops. What sayes ⁱ A. C. now to the Confession of this great Adversarie, and in this great Point, extorted from him by force of Truth? Now if this bee true, then the whole foundation of this Argument is gone. The Church Militant is no Kingdome; and therefore not to be Compared, or Iudged by One. The Resemblance will not hold.

NUM. 10.

Next, suppose it a Kingdome: yet the Church Militant remaining one, is spread in many Earthly Kingdomes; and cannot well bee ordered like any

one

one particular ^a Kingdome. And therefore, though in one particular Kingdom there be many *Visible Iudges*, and one *Supreme*: yet it followes not, That in the *Univerſall Militant Church* there muſt be one *Supreme*. For how will he enter to Execute his Office, if the *Kings* of thoſe *Kingdomes* will not give leave?

Now here, though *A. C.* expreſſes himſelfe no farther, yet I well know, what he and his Fellowes would be at. They would not be troubled to aſke leave of any ſeverall *Kings* in their ſeverall *Dominions*. No: they would have one *Emperour* over all the *Kings*, as well as One *Pope* over all the *Biſhops*. And then you know ^b whotold us of two great Lights to govern the world, the Sun and the Moone, that is the *Pope* and the *Emperour*.

At the firſt it began with more modeſty, The *Emperour* and the *Pope*. And that was ſomewhat Tolerable. For ^c *S. Auguſtine* tels us, That the *Militant Church* is often in Scripture called the Moone, both for the many Changes it hath, and for its obſcurity in many times of its peregrination. And hee tels us too, That if we will underſtand this place of

^a Licet ſit Expediens quod uni Populo partiali ſideli præſit unus Episcopuſ; non expedit tamen quod toti populo ſideli præſit unus ſolus. Tum quia omnia Negotia uniuſ populi partialis poteſt ſuſtinere unus ſolus; Nullus autem unus poteſt ſuſtinere omnia Negotia etiam maiora omnium Chriſtianorum: Tum quia minus malum eſt, ut populuſ partialiſ & parvuuſ inſciatur 10 Episcopuſ, quam ut totuſ, vel ſere totuſ populuſ Chriſtianuſ inſciatur ab uno Capite, quod omnibuſ præſit. Ocelluſ L. 2. Dial. tract. 1. p. 3. c. 30. ad 8, And beſides the ſame ſpeaketh: To that Common Argument, That Monarchy is the beſt, and therefore undoubtedly that which Chriſt inſtituted for his Church, I ſhall ſent to Answer, That a Monarchy is the beſt forme of Government in one City or Countrey. *Ariſt.* L. 8. *Mo. d. c.* 10. But it followes not, That it is the beſt in reſpect of the whole world, where the Parts are ſo remote, and the Diſpoſitions of men ſo various. And therefore *Bellarminuſ* confeſſes: Monarchiam Ariſtocratia & Democratia admixtam utilioreſe eſſe in hac vitâ, quam ſimplex Monarchia eſt. L. 1. de Re. Pont. c. 3. §. 1.

^b In the firſt Gloſſe aſcribed to *Iſidore* in *Gen.* 1. 16. *Tis Per Solem intelligitur Regnum; per Lunam, Sacerdotium. But *Innocent* the third, almoſt ſix hundred yeares after *Iſidore*'s death, perverts both Text and Gloſſe. Thus. Ad firmamentum Cæli, i. e. Univerſaliſ Eccleſie, fecit Deus duomagne Luminaria, hoc eſt, duas inſtituit Potestateſ, Pontificalem, & Regalem, &c. Ut quanta inter Solem & Lunam, tanta inter Pontificeſ & Reges differentia cognoscatur, *Episto. ad Imperat. Conſtanti-nopolitanaum. Decret.* L. 1. de Majoritate & Obedientia. Tit. 33. cap. Solita.

^c Ecclesia Militans sæpe in Scripturis dicitur Luna, propter mutabilitatem. *S. Aug.* Epist. 119. c. 6.

^a *Intelligimus
spiritualiter Ec-
clesiam, &c. Et
hic quis est Sol,
nisi Sol iustitia?
&c. S. Aug. in
Psal. 103.
^b Gasp. schiop.
L. dicto Ecclesia-
sticus, c. 145.*

Scripture in a Spirituall Sense: ^a Our Saviour Christ is the Sun, and the Militant Church, as being full of changes in her estate, the Moone. But now it must bee a Triumphant Church here; Militant no longer. The Pope must be the Sun, and the Emperor but the Moone. And least Innocents owne power should not be able to make good his Decretall; ^b Gasper Schioppinus doth not onely avow the Allusion or Interpretation, but is pleased to expresse many Circumstances, in which hee would faine make the world believe the Resemblance holds. And lest any man should not know how

^c *Igitur cum terra sit septies major Luna: Sol autem octies major terra, restat ergo ut Pontificalis dignitas quadragesies septies sit major Regali dignitate.* Gloss. in Decret. prædicit. Where first the Glosse is out in his Latine. Hee might have said *Quadragesies*: for *Quadragesies* is no word. next he is out in his Arithmetick, For eight times seven makes not forty seven, but fifty sixe. And then he is much to blame for drawing downe the Pope's power from fifty six, to 47. And lastly, this Allusion hath no ground of Truth at all. For the Emperour, being *Solo Deo minor: Tertul. ad Scap.* cannot be a Moone to any other Sun.

much the Pope is made greater then the Emperour by this Comparison; the ^c Glosse furnishes us with that too: and tels us, that by this it appeares, that since the Earth is seven times greater then the Moone, and the Sun eight times

greater then the Earth, it must needs follow, that the Pope's power is forty seven times greater then the Emperour's. I like him well, he will make odds enough. But what, doth Innocent the third give no Reason of this his Decretall? Yes. And it is (saith he) ^d because the Sun, which rules in the day, that is, in Spirituall things, is greater then the Moone, which rules but in the night, and in carnall things. But is it possible that Innocentius the third, being so wise, and so able, as ^e that nothing which he did, or commended, or disproved in all his life, should after his death be thought fit to bee changed, could thinke that such an Allusion of Spirituall things to the Day, which the Sun governes, and Worldly Businesse to the Night, which the Moone governes, should carie waight enough

^d *Sed illa Potestas, qua præst diebus i.e. in spiritualibus, maior est; qua vero Carnalibus, minor. Innocent. 3. ubi supra.*

^e *Vt post ejus mortem, nihil eorum qua in hac vita egerit, laudaverit, aut improbaverit, immutatum sit. Platina in vita ejus.*

enough with it to depreſſe *Imperiall power* lower then God hath made it? Out of doubt he could not. For he well knew that *Omnis Anima*, every ſoule waſt to be *Rom. 13. 1.*

ſubject to the *Higher Power*, *Rom. 13.* And the *† Higher Power* there mentioned is the *Temporall*. And the ** Ancient Fathers* come in with a full conſent, That *Omnis Anim.* 1, every ſoule, comprehends there all without any Exception: All *Spiritual men* even to the *Higheſt Biſhop*, and in *ſpiritual Cauſes* too, ſo the *Foundations of Faith* and *Good Manners* bee not ſhaken. And where they are ſhaken, there ought to bee *Prayer*, and *Patience*, there ought not to be *Oppoſition by force*. Nay hee knew well that *Emperors* and *Kings* are

† *Patres veteres, & præcipue Aug. Epist. 54. Apostolus interpretatur de Potestate seculari tantum loqui, quod & ipſe. T. xiii. ſubindicat &c. Salmeron. Diſput. 4. in Rom. 13. S. Porro per Potestatem.*

* *Nāsi causa dicitur ſervi, nō iſeſſor &c. Omnibus iſta imperantur, & Sacerdotibus & Monachis, &c. Et poſtea. Etiaſi Apoſtolus ſis, ſi Evangeliſta, ſi Prophetæ, ſive qui quie tandem fueris. S. Chryſoſt. Hom. 23. in Rom. Sive eſt Sacerdos, ſive Antiſtes, &c. Theodoret. in Rom. 13. Si omnis Anima, & veſtra. Quis vos excipit ab Univerſitate? &c. Ipſi ſunt qui vobis dicere ſolent, ſervate veſtra Sedis honorem &c. Sed Chriſtus aliter & iuſſit, & Geſſit. &c. S. Ber. Epist. 42. ad Henricum Senonenſem Archiepiſcopum. Et Theophilaſt. in Rom. 13. Where it is very obſervable, that Theophilaſt. lived in the time of Pops Gregory the ſeventh. And S. Bernard after it, and yet this Truth obtained then. And this was about the yeare, 1130.*

2 *An ſortè de Religione fas non eſt ut dicat Imperator, vel quos miſeris Imperator? cur ergo ad Imperatorem veſtri venère Legati? cur enim fecerunt Cauſe ſua Iudicem, non ſecuturi quod ille iudicaret? &c. S. Aug. L. 1. cont. Epist. Parmen. c. 9. Et quaſtio ſuit, an pertineret ad Imperatorem adverſus eos aliquid ſtatueri qui prava in Religione ſeſtāntur, Ibid. Nor can this be ſaid to be uſurpation in the Emperor. Nam S. Auguſt. alibi ſic. Ad Imperatoris curiam, de qua rationem Deo redditurus eſt, Res illa maxime pertinebat. S. Aug. Epist. 162. & Epist. 50. Quis mente ſobrius Regibus dicat: Nolite curare in Regno veſtro à quo teneatur, vel oppugnetur Eccleſia Domini veſtri? &c. Antiquitatis dicit, Magiſtratus eſt cuſtos legis, ſcilicet prima & ſecunda Tabula, quod ad diſciplinam attinet. Confefſio Saxonica. §. 23. & Gerardus To. 6. Lecorum c. 6. §. 5. Membro 1. probat ex Deut. 17. 18.*

Cuſtodes utriusque Tabulae: They, to whom the cuſtody and preſervation of both Tables of the Law for worſhip to God, and duty to man are committed. That a *Booke of the Law* was by Gods owne Command in Moſes his time, to be given the *King* *b Deut. 17.* That the *Kings* under that Law, but ſtill according to it, did proceed to *Neceſſary Reſormations* in *Church Buſineſſes*; and therein Commanded the very *Prieſts* themſelves

* 2 Chron. 29. 4.
† 4. Reg. 23. 2.

selves, as appears in the Acts of * *Hezekiah* and † *Iosiah*, who yet were never Censured to this day for usurping the *High Priests Office*. Nay hee knew full well, That the greatest *Emperors* for the Churches Honour, *Theodosius the Elder*, and *Iustinian*, and *Charles the Great*, and divers other, did not only meddle now and then, but did enact Lawes to the great Settlement and Increase of *Religion* in their severall times. But then if this could not be the Reason, why *Innocentius* made this strange *Allusion*, what was ? Why truly, I'll tell you. The *Pope* was now growne to a great, and a firme

* *Hic Maximus Pontifex totius Ecclesiasticae Libertatis Vnicus Assertor.* Onuph. in Plat. in Greg. 7. For taking Occasion by the warre which *Henry the fourth* had with the *Saxons* and their neighbours, and the complaint of the *Saxons* made to the *Pope* (of which *Platina* in the life of *Gregory the seventh*) the *Pope* wise enough for his owne advantages sought not only to free himselfe from the *Emperor*, but to make the *Emperor* subiect to him, and for this the History is plaine enough.

height. * *Gregory the seventh* had set the *Pope* dome upon a broad bottome before this *Innocents* time. So that now 'tis the lesse wonder, if hee make so bold with the *Emperor*, as to depreesse him as low as the *Moone*, upon no better ground, then a groundlesse Resemblance. But beside this prime Reason, there are divers other, which may easily be drawne out of the same Resemblance. For since *Innocentius* his maine ayme was to publish the *Popes* greatnesse over *Kings* and *Emperors* : why doth he not tell us, That the *Pope* is as the *Sunne* : and the *Emperor* as the *Moone*. Because as the *Moone* borrowes all her light from the *Sunne* : So the *Emperor* borrowes all his true light from the *Pope*. Or because as the *Moone* still increases in light so long as she followes the *Sunne*, but so soone as ever she steps before the *Sunne* shee waines presently, and her light decreases : So the *Emperor*, so long as he is content to follow the *Pope*, and doe all that he would have him, his light, and his power encrease, but if he doe but offer to step before (though that be his proper place) then his light, and honour, and

and power, and all decrease. And this Pope Gregory the seventh made too good upon the Emperor Henry the fourth. And Pope Adrian the fourth, and Alexander the third, and Lucius the third with some others, upon Frederick Barbaroff. And some other Emperors were alike serv'd, where they did not submit. And I hope no man will blame the Popes Holiness for this. For if the Emperors kept the Popes under for divers yeares together,

whereas * Bellarmine tells us it was against all right they should so do, the Pope being never rightfully subject unto them, I hope the Pope having now got power enough, may keepe the Emperors under, and not suffer them any more to step before the Sunne, like Moones as they are they looke for their Light. Or because as the Pope is but Vicaria Solis, the Vicar or Substitute of the Sunne as † Q. tells us: So the Emperor, at least in all Spirituall

Causes is but the Popes Substitute, and that for the Night, that his Head may sleepe the quieter on the other side of the Sunne. Or lastly (if you will abuse the Scripture, as you too often doe, and as Innocentius did in the Decretall very grossly) you may say 'tis, because the Woman, which all grant represented the Church. ^a Revel. 12. is clothed with the Sunne, that is, with the glorious rays of the Pope, and had the Moon, that is, the ^b Emperor under her feet. For this is as good, as litterall as proper an interpretation of these words, as that of Innocentius is, of the words Gen. 1. God made two great Lights, the greater light to Rule the day, and the lesse to rule the night. Thus he or you may give your witts leave to play, if you will, for the Popes Decretall is a

incere

* Papa utpote Regis Regum Vicarius nunquam erat de jure subditus imperatoribus terrenis: sed quia tum Potestas eius non erat nota: --- & quia viribus temporalibus destitutus erat, vellet, nollet, subiectus esse cogebatur Bellar. in Apologia c. 15. Respon. ad Mendacium, 10. And Bellarmine is at the same Argument for Deposing of Kings too. Quia erant vires temporales Christianis. Bellar. L. 5. de Rom. Pont. c. 7 §. Quasi Christiani. Now this is a most lowd untruth, as appears in Tertullian, who lived about the the year 200 under Severus. And the Christians then had strength enough against the Emperor, had they had right enough with it.

† L. de Monar.

^a Revel. 12. 1.

^b Sic enim Alexander tertius contra Fredericum primo pede comprimebat, & dixit. Scripsi super aspidem & basilicum &c. Io. Nauclerus Chron. Generatione 40. circa An. 1170. Gen. 1. 16.

meere fancy. But the true reason indeed, why *Innocentius* made it, was that above mentioned. He was now in that greatnesse, that he thought he might passe any thing upon the *Christian world*, that pleased him: And was therefore resolved to bring it into the *Body of the Canon*, that after times might have a *Law* to legitimate and make good their *Predecessors usurpation* over *Emperors* and *Kings*. And rather then faile of this, he would not spare the abusing of *Scripture* it selfe. Where by the way, dares *A. C.* say this *Pope* did not erre in *Cathedrâ*, when he was so dazzled betweene the *Sunne* and the *Moone*, that hee wanted light in the midst of it, to expound *Scripture*? Well, I would have the *Iesuites* leave their practising, and remember, First, that one *Emperor* will not alwayes be able to establish and preserve one only *Vniiform* practise and Exercise of Religion. Secondly, that supposing he both can and will so do, yet the *Iesuites* cannot be certaine, that that one *Vniiform* Exercise of Religion shall be the *Romane Catholike*. And Thirdly, That as there is a *Body of Earth*, a world of Confusion, to Eclipse their *Moon* the *Emperor*: so in the same way, and by like interposition, the *Moone* when 'tis growne too neare in conjunction, may Eclipse their *Sunne* the *Pope*. And there is no great doubt but he will, considering what some great *Kings* make of the *Popes* power at this day, when it pleases them.

NUM. 12.

And since we are in this Comparison between the *Sun* and the *Moon*, give me leave a little farther to examine, who *A. C.* and his fellow *Iesuites* with some others would have to be this one *Emperor*. I am not willing to meddle with any the secret *Designs* of *Forraine States*: but if they wil expresse their *Designs* in print, or publish them by *Great* and *Full Authority*, I hope then it shall be neither unlawfull, nor unfit for me, either to take notice

notice, or to make use of them. Why then you may be pleased to know, They would have another *Translution of the Empire from Germany to Spaine*. They thinke belike this *Emperors line*, though in the same *House*, is not *Catholike enough*. And if you aske me, how I know this secret, I will not take it up upon any common report, though I well know what that sayes. But I'll tell you how I know it. Somewhat above *four hundred yeares* after *Innocentius* made his Comment upon the two *greate Lights*, the *Sunne*, and the *Moone*, the *Pope*, and the *Emperor*: † a *Spanish Friar* followes the same resemblance betweene the *Monarchies of Rome and Spaine*, in a Tract of his, intituled: *The Agreement of the two Catholike Monarchies*, and Printed in *Spanish* in *Madrid Anno 1612*. In the *Frontispice* or *Title Page* of this Booke there are set out two *Scutchions*: The one bearing the *Crosse-Keyes of Rome*: The other the *Armes of Castile and Leon*, both joyned together with this *Motto*; *In vinculo pacis*, in the bond of peace. On the one side of this there is a *Portraiture* resembling *Rome*, with the *Sunne* shining over it and darting his beames on *S. Peters Keyes*, with this *Inscription*: **Luminare Majus*, the greater Light that it may governe the *City* (that is *Rome*) and the whole world. And on the other side there's another *Image* designing *Spaine*, with the *Moone* shining over that and spreading forth its *Raies* upon the *Spanish Scutchion*, with this *Impresse*: † *Luminare minus*, the lesse Light, that it may be subject to the *City* (of *Rome* he meanes) and so be *Lord* to governe the whole world besides. And over all this in the top of the *Title-Page* there is Printed in *Capitall Letters*, *Fecit Deus duo Luminaria magna*, God made two great Lights. There followes after in this *Author* a *Discovery* at large of this *Blazoning* of these *Armes*, but this is the

E Substance

† *John de Puente*
La Conveni-
encia de las dos
Monarquias Ca-
tolicas la de la
Iglesia Romana,
y la del Imperio
Español. y de-
fensa de la prece-
dencia de los
Reyes Catolicos
de Espana a to-
dos los Reyes del
mundo,

* *Luminare Ma-
jus, ut praeſit Vrbi
& Orbi.*

† *Luminare Mi-
nus, ut ſubdat
Vrbi, & dominetur
Orbi.*

Substance of it, and abundantly enough to shew what is aimed at, by whom, and for whom. And this Booke was not stollen out without the will and consent of the State. For it hath Printed before it all manner of *Licence*, that a Booke can well have. For it hath the approbation of *Father Pedro de Buyza*, of the Company of the *Iesuites*. Of *Iohn de Arcediano*, Provinciall of the *Dominicans*. Of *Diego Granero*, the Licencer appointed for the supreme Councell of the *Inquisition*. And some of these revised this booke by ^a Order from the Lords of that Councell. And last of all the ^b Kings Priviledge is to it, with high Commendation of the Worke. But the *Spaniards* had need looke to it for all this, least the *French* deceive them. For now lately *Friar Campanella*

^a Por Orden de los Seniores del Consejo Supremo.
^b Por Mandado del Rey nuestro Senior.

^c Quum Gallia alac 20000000 hominum. Ex singulis centenis sumendo unum colligit 200000. strenuorum militum stipendiatorum, commodè, perpetuoque. Propterea omnes terræ Principes metuntur nunc magis à Gallia, quàm unquam ab aliis; Paratur enim illi Regnum Vniuersale, F. Tho. Campanellæ Ecloga in Principis Galliarum Delphini Natiuitatem, cum Annot. Discip. Parisiis 1639. cum permissu Superiorum.

hath set out an *Eclg*ue upon the Birth of the *Dolphin*, and that *Permissu Superiorum*, by Licence from his Superiors. In which he sayes expressly, ^c That all the Princes are now more afraid of France then ever, for that there is provided for it *Regnum Vniuersale*, The *Vniuersall Kingdome*, or *Monarchy*.

NUM. 13.
A.C.p. 60.

But tis time to Returne. For *A. C.* in this passage hath beene very Carefull to tell us of a *Parliament*, and of *Living Magistrates* and *Iudges* besides the *Law-Bookes*. Thirdly, therefore the *Church of England* (God be thanked) thrives happily under a *Gracious Prince*, and well understands that a *Parliament* cannot be called at all times; And that there are *visible Iudges* besides the *Law-Bookes*, and *One Supreme* (long may he be, and be happy) to settle all Temporall differences (which certainly, he might much better performe, if his Kingdomes were well rid of *A. C.* and his fellows) And she believes too, That our *Saviour Christ* hath

hath left in his Church, besides his Law-booke the Scripture, Visible Magistrates, and Iudges, that is, Archbishops and Bishops, under a gracious King, to governe both for Truth and Peace according to the Scripture, and her owne Canons and Constitutions, as also those of the Catholike Church, whichrosse not the Scripture, and the Iust Lawes of the Realme.* But she doth not believe there is any Necessity to have one Pope, or Bishop over the Whole Christian world, more then to have one Emperor over the whole World. Which were it possible, She cannot thinke fit. Nor are any of these intermediate Iudges, or that One, which you would have Supreme, Infalible.

* Non est necesse, ut sub Christo sit Unus Rector totius Ecclesie, sed sufficit quod sint plures regentes diversas provincias, sicut sunt plures Reges gubernantes plura regna. Ocham, Dial. L. 2. Tract. 1. p. 1. c. 30. ad. 1.

But since a Kingdome, and a Parliament please A. C. Num. 14. so well to patterne the Church by, I'll follow him in the way he goes, and be bold to put him in minde; that in some Kingdomes there are divers Busineses of greatest Consequence, which cannot be finally and bindingly ordered, but in and by Parliament: And particularly the Statute Lawes which must bind all the Subjects, cannot be made, and ratified, but there. Therefore according to A. C's owne Argument, there will be some Busineses also found, (Is not the settling of the Divisions of Christendome one of them?) which can never be well settled, but in a † Generall Councell: And particularly the making of Canons, which must binde all Particular Christians, and Churches cannot be concluded, and established, but there. And againe, as the Supreme Magistrate in the State Civill, may not abrogate the Lawes made in Parliament; though he may Dispenſe with the Sanction, or penalty of the Law

NUM. 14.
A.C p. 60.

† Propter defectum Conciliorum Generalium totius Ecclesie, que sola audet intripide corrigere omnes, ea mala que Univerſalem tangunt Ecclesiam, manentia diu incorrecta crescunt. &c. Gerſon. Declarat. Defectuum Virorum Ecclesiasticorum. To. 1. p. 209.

quoad hic & nunc, as the Lawyers speake. So in the Ecclesiasticall Body, no *Bishop*, no not the *Pope* (where his Supremacie is admitted) hath power to *dissuall, or violate the true and Fundamentall Decrees of a *Generall Councell*, though he may perhaps dispense in some Cases with some Decrees. By all which it appeares, though somewhat may be done by the *Bishops* and *Governours* of the Church, to preserve the unity and certainty of

Faith, and to keepe the Church from renting, or for uniting it, when it is rent; yet that in the ordinary way which the Church hath hitherto kept, some things there are, and upon great emergent Occasions may be, which can have no other helpe, then a lawfull, free, and well composed *Generall Councell*. And when that cannot be had, the Church must pray that it may, and expect till it may, or else reforme its selfe *per partes*, by *Nationall* or *Provinciall Synods*. (as hath beene said ^a before.) And in the meane times, it little beleeves

* *Sunt enim Indissolubilia Decreta, quibus reverentia debita est. Prosper. contr. Collatorem. c. 1. And Turrecremata, who saies every thing that may be said for the Popes Supremacy, yet dares not say, Papam posse revocare & tollere omnia Statuta Generalium Conciliorum, (ed, Aliqua tantum. Io. de Turrecre. Summa de Ecclesiâ, l. 3. c. 55. Et postea. Papa non potest revocare Decreta primorum quatuor Conciliorum, quia non sunt nisi Declarativa Articulorum Fidei. Ibid. c. 57. ad 2^{um}.*

* §. 24. N. I.

† And shall we think that Christ the wisest king hath not provided &c. *A. C. p. 60.* Where I cannot ^{but} commend either *A. C.* his Modesty, that he doth not, or his cunning, that he will not go so faire; as some have done before him, though in these words (*shall we think; &c*) hee goes too farre. *Non videtur Dominus discretus fuisse (ut cum reverentiâ ejus loquar) nisi unicuique se tale Vicarium reliquisset, qui hac omnia potest. Fuit autem ejus Vicarius Petrus. Et idem dicendum est de Successoribus Petri, cum eadem absurditas sequeretur, si post mortem Petri, Humanam Naturam à se creatam sine regimine Unius Personæ reliquisset. Extravagant. Com. Tit. de Majoritate & Obedientiâ c. Vnam Sanctam. In additione. D. P. Bertranda Edit. Paris. 1585.*

A. C. or any Christian to check at the wisdom of † Christ, if he have not taken the way they thinke fittest to settle *Church Differences*. Or if for the Churches sin, or Tryall, the way of Composing them be left more uncertaine, then they would have it, that they which are approved may be knowne. *1 Cor. 11. 19.* But the Iesuite had told me before, that a *Generall Councell* had adjudged these things already. For so hee saies.

F. I told him, that a Generall Council, to wit, of Trent, had already Iudged, not the Romane Church, but the Protestants to hold Errours. That (saith the B.) was not a Lawfull Council.

B. It is true, that you replied for the Council of Trent. And my Answer was, not onely, That the Council was not *Legall*, in the necessary Conditions to be observed in a *Generall Council*; but also, That it was no *Generall Council*, which againe you are content to omit. Consider it well. *First*, is that Council *Legall*, the Abettors whereof maintaine publicly, That it is lawfull for them to conclude any controversie, and make it bee *de fide*, and so in your Iudgement *Fundamentall*, though it have not, I doe not say now, the *Written Word of God* for warrant, either in expresse Letter, or necessary sense, and deduction (as all unerring Councils have had, and as all must have that will not erre) but not so much as † *Probable Testimony from it*, nay quite extra, without the Scripture? Nay secondly, Is that Council* *Legall*, where the Pope, the Chiefe Person to be Reformed, shall sit *President* in it, and be chiefe *Iudge* in his own Cause, against all Law,

S. 27.
NUM. 10.

† *Etiamsi non confirmetur, ne probabili Testimonio Scripturarum.* Stapl. Relect. Cont. 4. Q. 1. Ar. 3.

* Here A. C. tells us, that doubtlesse the Arrians also did mislike, that at Nice the Pope had Legates to carry his messages, and that one of them in his place sate as *President*. Why but first, 'tis manifest, that *Hosius* was *President* at the Council of Nice, and not the *Bishop of Rome*, either by himselfe or his Legates. And so much *Athanasius* himselfe, (who was present, and surely understood the Council of Nice, and who presided there, as well as A. C.) tells us: *Hosius hic est Princeps Synodorum.* (So belike He presided in other Councils as well as at Nice) *Hic formulam Fidei in Nicæna Synodò concepit.* And this the Arrians themselves confesse to *Constantius* the Emperour, then seduced to be theirs. *Apud S. Athanas. Epist. ad solitar. vitam agentes.* But then secondly I doe not except against the Popes sitting as *President*, either at *Nice*, or *Trent*. For that he might do, when called, or chosen to it, as well as any other *Patriarch*, if you consider no more but his sitting as *President*. But at *Nice* the Cause was not his own, but *Christ*, against the *Arrian*: whereas at *Trent*, it was merely his owne, his owne *Supremacy*, and his Churches *Corruptions*, against the

E c 3

Divine,

Protestants. And therefore surely not to sit *President* & the Triall of his owne Cause, though in other Causes hee might sit as well as other *Patriarchs*. And for that of *Bellarmino*, L. 1. de *Concil.* c. 21. §. *Tertia conditio*, Namely, *That 'tis unjust to deny the Roman Prelat his Right (Ius suum) in Calling Generall Councils, and Presiding in them, in possession of which Right he hath bin for 1500. yeares:* That's but a bold Assertion of the *Cardinalls* by his leave. For he gives us no prooffe of it, but his bare word. Whereas the very *Authenticke Copies* of the Councils, published, and printed by the *Romanists* themselves, affirme cleerely, they were called by *Emperors*, not by the *Pope*; And that the *Pope* did not preside in all of them. And I hope *Bellarmino* will not expect, we should take his bare word against the *Councils*. And most certaine it is, that even as *Hosius* Presided the Council at *Nice*, and no way that, as the *Popes* Legate: so also in the second Generall Council, which was the first of *Constantinople*, *Nectarius* Bishop of *Constantinople* Presided. *Concil. Chalced. Act. 6. p. 136. apud Binium.* In the third, which was the first at *Ephesus*, *S. Cyril of Alexandria* Presided. And though *Pope Celestine* was joyned with him, yet he sent none out of the *West* to that Council, til many things were therein finished, as appears *apud Act. Concil. To. 2. c. 16. 17.* In the fourth, at *Chalcedon*, the Legats of the Bishop of *Rome* had the Prime place. In the fift, *Eutychius* Bishop of *Constantinople* was *President*. In the sixe and seventh, the Legats of the *Pope* were *President*, yet so as that almost all the duty of a Moderator or *President* was performed in the seventh by *Tharasius* Bishop of *Constantinople*, as appears manifestly in the *Acts* of that Council. And since these seven are all the Generall Councils, which the *Greekes* and *Latines* joyntly acknowledge; And that in these other *Patriarchs* & Bishops Presided, as oft at least as the Bishops of *Rome*; what's become of *Bellarmines* Brag, That the *Pope* hath bene posselt of this Right of Presiding in Generall Councils for the space of 1500. yeares?

* *Leo 10. Bull. Inn. 8. 1520.*

NUM. 2.

Againe, is that Council *Generall*, that hath none of the *Easterne Churches* Consent, nor presence there? Are all the *Greekes* so become *Non Ecclesia*, no Church, that they have no Interest in *Generall Councils*? It numbers indeed among the Subscribers, sixe *Greekes*; They might be so by *Nation*, or by *Title*, purposely given

Divine, Naturall, and Humane? In a place not free, but in, or too neare his owne Dominion? To which all were not called, that had *Deliberative*, or *Consultative Voice*? In which none had *Suffrage*, but such as were sworn to the *Pope* and the *Church of Rome*, and professed *Enemies* to all that called for *Reformation*, or a *free Council*. And the **Pope* himsele, to shew his *Charity*, had declared, and pronounced the *Appellants*, *Hereticks*, before they were *Condemned* by the *Council*, I hope an *Assembly of Enemies* are no *Lawfull Council*; and I thinke the *Decrees* of such a one, are *omni jure nulla*, and carry their *Nullity* with them through all *Law*.

given them; but dare you say they were actually Bishops of, and sent from the Greeke Church to the Councell? Or is it to be accounted a Generall Councell, that in many Sessions had scarce Ten Archbishops, or Forty, or Fifty Bishops present? And for the West of Christendome, nearer home, it reckons one English, S. Asaph. But Cardinall Poole was there too: And English indeed he was by birth, but not sent to that Councell by the King, and Church of England, but as one of the † Popes Legates; And so we finde him in the fift Session of that Councell; but neither before, nor after. And at the beginning of the Councell, he was not Bishop in the Church of England; and after he was Archbishop of Canterburie, he never went over to the Councell. And can you prove, that S. Asaph went thither by Authority? There were but few of other Nations, and, it may be, some of them reckoned with no more truth, then the Greekes. In all the Sessions under Paul the third, but two French-men, and sometimes none; as in the sixt under Iulius the third; when Henr. 2. of France protested against that Councell. And in the end, it is well known, how all the French (which were then a good part) held off, till the Cardinall of Lorraine was got to Rome. As for the Spaniards, they laboured for many things upon good Grounds, and were most unworthily over-borne.

To all this A. C. hath nothing to say, but That it is not Necessary to the Lawfulnessse, and Generalnesse of a Councell, that all Bishops of the World should be actually present, subscribe, or consent, but that such Promulgation be made, as is morally sufficient to give notice, that such a Councell is called, and that all may come, if they wil; and that a Major part, at least, of those that are present, give assent to the Decrees. I will forget, that it was but p. 59. in which A. C. speakes of all Pastours, and those not only summoned,

† Concil. Trid.
Sess. 5.

NUM. 3.
A.C. p. 61.

A.C. p. 59.

† *Ut aliqui mit-
tantur, & adve-
niant, & conve-
niant, &c. Bel-
lar. L. 1. de Con-
cil. c. 17. §.
Quarta, ut sal-
tem.*

summoned, but gathered together. And I will easily grant him, that 'tis not necessary that all Bishops in the Christian world be present, and subscribe; But sure 'tis necessary to the Generalnesse of a Councell, that some be [†] there, and authorized for all Particular Churches. And to the freedome of a Councell, that all that come, may come safe. And to the Lawfulnessse of a Councell, that all may come uningaged, and not fastened to a side, before they sit downe to argue, or deliberate. Nor is such a Promulgation as A. C. mentions, sufficient, but onely in Case of Contumacy, and that where they which are called, and refuse to come, have no just Cause for their not comming, as too many had in the Case of Trent. And were such a Promulgation sufficient for the Generalnesse of a Councell; yet for the Freedome and the Lawfulnessse of it, it were not.

F. So (said I) would Arrians say of the Councell of Nice. The B. would not admit the Case to be like.

§. 28.

B. So indeed you said. And not you alone: It is the Common Objection made against all that admit not every latter Councell, as fully as that Councell of Nice, famous through all the Christian world. In the meane time, nor you, nor they consider, that the Case is not alike, as I then told you. If the Case be alike in all, why doe not you admit that which was held at Ariminum, and the second of Ephesus, as well as Nice? If you say (as yours doe) It was because the Pope approved them not. That is true Cause, but not Adequate, or full. For it was because the Whole Church refused them; * ^{vi} the Romane Prelate (standing then entire in the Faith) agreed, and so (for his Patriarchate) refused those Councels. But suppose it

§. 28. N. 1.

it true, that these *Synods* were not admitted, because the *Pope* refused them, yet this ground is gained, That the Case is not alike for mens Assent to all *Councils*. And if you looke to have this granted, That the *Pope* must confirme, or the *Council's* not lawfull; we have farre more reason to looke, that this be not denied,

That *Scripture* must not be departed from, in ^a Letter, or necessary sense, or the *Council* is not lawfull. For the Con-

tent and Confirmation of *Scripture* is of farre greater Authority to make the *Council* Authentick, and the Decisions of it *de fide*, then any Confirmation of the *Pope* can bee.

Now of these two, the *Council* of *Nice*, we are sure, had the first, the Rule of *Scripture*, and you say it had the second, the *Pope's* Confirmation. The *Council* of *Trent*, we are able to prove, had not the first, and so we have no reason to respect the second. And to what end do your *Lear-*

ned Men maintaine that a *Council* may make a Conclusion *de fide*, though it be simply ^b extra, out of all bound of *Scripture*; but out of a Iealousie at least, that this of *Trent*, and some others have in their Determinations left both Letter, and Sense of *Scripture*. Shew this against the *Council* of *Nice*, and I will grant so much of the Case to be like. But what will you say, if ^c *Constantine* required, That things thus brought into Question, should be answered, and solved by Testimony out of *Scripture*? And the *Bishops* of the *Nicene Council* never refused that Rule. And what will you say, if they profess they depart not from it, ^d but are ready by many Testimonies of divine *Scripture* to demonstrate their Faith? Is the Case then alike betwixt it, and *Trent*? Surely no. But you say that I pretended something els, for my not admitting the Case to be alike.

F f

F. Pre-

^a Here *A. C.* tells us, that the *Arrians* thought so of the *Council* of *Nice*. p. 61. Namely, that they departed from Letter, and Sense of *Scripture*. They said to indeed. But the Testimony of the whole Church, both then, and since, went with the *Council* against the *Arrian*. So is it not here against the *Protestant* for *Trent*. For they offer to be tried by that very *Council* of *Nice*, and all the Ancient *Councils* and *Fathers* of the Church, within the first foure hundred yeares, and somewhat farther.

^b So *Stapleton* often, but the *Fathers* quite otherwise. *Que extra Evangelium sunt, non defendam.* Hilar. L. 2. ad Const.

^c *Literarum divinitus inspiratarum testimonio.* L. 2. in Syn. Nic. Tom. 1. per *Nicolum.*

^d *Ib. in Osi sententia.* p. 517. *Parati ex S. Spiritus arbitrio per plurimam vinarum sententiarum monia demonstrare hac ut habere.*

D. Hoppus

1757

F. Pretending that the Pope made Bishops of purpose, for his side. But this the Bishop proved not.

S. 29.
NUM. I.

B. No: Nor had I reason to take on me to prove what I said not. I know it will be expected I should prove what I say. And it is hard to prove the purpose of the Pope's Heart. For if it be proved that he made Bishops at that time; that some of them were *Titular* onely, and had no *Livelihood* to subsist, but out of his *purse* (and so must hang their Judgement at the strings of it;) That some of these thus made were sent to the *Councell*; and sure not without their *Errand*: yet if the Pope will say, he neither made, nor sent them to *over-rule* the *Holy Ghost* at that Meeting, or of purpose for his side (as no question but it will be said) who can prove it, that is not a *Surveyor of the heart*? But though the Pope's heart cannot be seene, yet if these, and the like Presumptions be true, it is a great signe that *Trent* was too corrupt, and factious a Meeting for the *Holy Ghost* to be at. And sure the Case in this, not alike at *Nice*.

NUM. 2.

That which I said was, That *Trent* could be no Indifferent Councell to the Church, the Pope having made himselfe a strong Party in it. And this I proved, though you be here not onely content to omit, but

plainely to denie the Prooffe. For I proved it thus (and you † answered not) That there were more *Italian Bishops* there, then of all *Christendome* besides. More? Yea more then
• double.

† Here A. C. is angry, and sayes: This was no Prooffe, nor worthy of any Answer, or looking into the Booke for it. First, because 'tis onely a Surmise of Adversaries. Who are apt to interpret to the worst. Secondly, because there might be more *Italian Bishops* there, as being nearer, yet without any factious Combination with the Pope: As in the Greeke Councels more *Grecians* were present. A.C. p. 82. No prooffe, or a weake one. Let the Reader Iudge that. But why no Prooffe? Because a surmise of Adversaries. Is that a Surmise of Adversaries, that is taken out of

double. And this I proved out of the *Council* it selfe, which you had in your hand in *Decimo sexto*; but had no great heart to looke it. For, where the number of *Prelates* is expressed, that had *Suffrage* and *Vote* in that *Council*, the *Italians* are set downe to bee 187. and all the rest make but 83. So that there were more

Italian Bishops by 104. then of all the rest of *Christendome*. Sure the *Pope* did not meane to be over-reached in this *Council*. And whatsoever became of his *Infallibility* otherwise, he might this way be sure to be *Infallible* in whatsoever he would have Determined: And this without all doubt, is all the *Infallibility* he hath. So I proved this sufficiently, I thinke. For if it were not to be sure of a side, give any satisfying reason, why such a potent Party of *Italians*, more then double to the whole *Christian world*, should be there? Shew me the like for *Nice*, and I will give it, that the Case is alike betweene these two *Councils*.

Here *Bellarmino* comes in to helpe: But sure it will not helpe you, that he hath offered at as much against the *Council* of *Nice*, as I have urged against that at *Trent*.

For hee tels us, **That in the Council at Nice, there were as few Bishops*

of the West present, as were of the East at Trent,

the *Council* it selfe? Is that *Council* then become *Regnum divisum*, and apt to interpret the worst of it selfe? Yea but there were more *Italian Bishops*, as being nearer. Most true. Nearer a great deale then the *Grecian Bishops*. But the *Bishops* of *France* and of some parts of *Germany* were almost as neare as the *Italians* themselves. And why then came more of These, that were neare enough? Well: *A. C.* may say what he will. But the *Pope* remembred well the *Councils* of *Constance*, and *Basil*, and thought it wilsdome to make sure worke at *Trent*. For in later times (for their owne feares no doubt) the *Bishops* of *Rome* have beene no great friends to *Generall Councils*, especially *Free ones*. *Multi suspicantur, quod hæc dissimulaverit Romana Curia, & Concilia fieri neglexerit, ut possit ad sua voluntatis libitum plenius dominari, & Iura aliarum Ecclesiarum liberius usurpare. Quod non assero esse verum, sed quia huiusmodi laborat infamia, ideo &c.* Pet de Aliaco. *Card. Cameracensis L. de Reformat. Eccles. in fuscio, rerum expetend. fo. 204. A.*

* In Concilio Nicæno primo ex Occidente solum fuerunt duo Presbyteri missi ex Italia, unus Episcopus ex Gallia, unus ex Hispania, & unus ex Africa, Bellar. *L. Concil. c. 17. §. Antepenult.*

but *five* in all. Be it so. Yet this will not make the Case alike between the *two Councils*. *First*, because I presse not the disparity in number onely; but with it the *Pope's* carriage, to be sure of a *Major part*. For it lay upon the *Pope* to make sure worke at *Trent*, both for himselfe, and his Church. But neither the *Greeke Church* in generall, nor any *Patriarch of the East* had any private interest to looke to, in the *Councell at Nice*. *Secondly*, because I presse not so much against the *Councell of Trent*, That there were so exceeding many *Bishops of the West* compared with those of the *East* (for that must needs be, when a Councell is held in the *West*) but that there were so many more *Italians*, and *Bishops obnoxious to the Pope's power*, then of all *Germany, France, Spaine*, and all other Parts of the *West* besides. *Thirdly*, because both *Bellarmino* and *A. C.* seeke to avoid the Dint of this Argument, by comparing the *Westerne* with the *Easterne Bishops*, and are content to say nothing about the Excessive number of *Italians*, to others of the *West*: That will receive a fuller Answer then any of the rest. For though very few *Westerne Bishops* were at the *Councell of Nice*, being so remote: yet at the same time *Pope Sylvester* held a Councell at *Rome*, in which He with 275. *Bishops of the West* confirmed the *Nicene Creed*; † and Anathematized all those which should dare to dissolve the Definition of that Holy, and Great Councell. Now let *Bellarmino*, or *A. C.* or any els shew, That when the *Councell of Trent* sate, there was another Councell (though never so privately in regard of their miserable Oppression) which sate in *Greece*, or anywhere in the *East*, under any *Patriarch* or *Christian Bishop*, which did confirm the *Canons of the Councell of Trent*, and Anathematize them which admitted them not, and I will confesse they speake home to the Comparison between the *Councils*, els a blinde

† Omnes qui an-
si fuerint dissol-
vere Definitionem
Sancti &
Magni Concilii,
quod apud Nica-
am congregatum
est, Anathemati-
zamus. Concil.
Rom. 3. sub Syl-
vestro. apud Bi-
nium. p. 442.

blinde man may see the *difference*, and 'tis a *vast* one.

But here *A. C.* makes account he hath found a better reply to this, and now tels us, that neither *French*, NUM. 4.
A, C. p. 62. nor *Spanish*, nor *Schismaticall Greekes* did agree with *Protestants* in those *Points* which were defined in that *Councell*, especially after it was *Confirmed* by the *Pope*, as appears by the *Censure* of *Ieremias* the *Greeke Patriarch*. Who agreed with the *Protestants* in the *Points* defined by that *Councell*, (as he speaks) or rather (to speake properly) against the *Points* there defined; I know not. And for ought *A. C.* knowes, many might agree with them in heart, that in such a *Councell* durst not open themselves. And what knowes *A. C.* how many might have beene of their *Opinion* in the maine before the *Councell* ended, had they beene admitted to a *faire*, and a *free Dispute*? And it may be too; some *Decrees* would have beene more favourable to them, had not the care of the *Popes* interest made them sower. For else what mean these words, *Especially after it was confirmed by the Pope*? As for *Ieremias*, 'tis true, his *Censure* is in many things against the *Protestants*: But I finde not that that *Censure* of his is warranted by any *Authority* of the *Greeke Church*: Or that he gave the *Protestants* any hearing, before he passed his *Censure*. And at the most, it is but the *Censure* of a *Schismatick* in *A. C.*s. owne Iudgement. And for his flourish which followes, that *East*, and *West* would *Condemne Protestants* for *Hereticks*, I would he would forbear *prophecying*, till both parts might meet in a *free Generall Councell*, that sought *Christ* more then themselves. But I finde the *Iesuite* hath not done with me yet, but addes:

F. In

F. In fine, the B. wished, That a Lawfull Generall Councell were called to end Controversies. The Persons present said, That the King was inclined thereunto, and that therefore we Catholikes might doe well to concurre.

§. 30.

A.C.p. 62.

B. And what say you to my Wish? you pretend great love to the Truth, would you not have it found? Can you, or any Christian be offended, that there should be a good end of Controversies? Can you think of a better end, then by a Generall Councell? And if you have a most Gracious King inclined unto it (as you say it was offered) how can you acquit your selves, if you doe not consent? Now here A. C. marvels what kind of General Council I would have, and what Rules I would have observed in it, which are morally like to be observed, and make an end of Controversies better then their Catholike Generall Councils. Truly I am not willing to leave A. C. unsatisfied in any thing. Nor have I any meaning to trouble the Church with any New Devising of mine. Any Generall Councell shall satisfie me, (and, I presume, all good Christians) that is lawfully called, continued, and ended according to the same course,

** Ex iis Conciliis que omnium consensu Generalia fuerunt, qualia sunt quatuor prima: Et ex consuetudine Ecclesie colligimus quatuor Conditiones requiri, & sufficere. Bellar. 1. de Con. c. 17. §. 2.*

and under the same * Conditions, which Generall Councils observed in the Primitive Church; which I am sure were Councils Generall, and Catholike, what ever yours bee. But I

doubt that after all noyse made about these Requisite Conditions, A. C. and his Fellowes will be found as much, if not more defective in performance of the Conditions, then in the conditions themselves. Well, the Jesuite goes on for all this,

F. I

F. I asked the B. whether hee thought a Generall Councell might erre? He said it might.

B. I presume you doe not expect I should enter into the Prooofe of this Controversie, Whether a Generall Councell may erre in Determination, or not? Your selfe brought no prooofe that it cannot, and till that bee brought, my speech is good that it can; and yet I hope to bee found no Infringer of any Power given by Christ to his Church. But it seemes by that which followes, you did by this Question (*Can a generall Councell Erre?*) but seeke to winne ground for your other; which followes.

S. 31.

F. If a Generall Councell may erre, what nearer are we then (said I) to unity, after a Councell hath determined? Yes (said he) although it may erre; yet we should be bound to hold with it, till another come to reverse it.

B. Whether a Generall Councell may erre, or not, is a Question of great Consequence in the Church of Christ. To say it cannot erre, leaves the Church not only without Remedy against an errour once Determined: but also without sense that it may need a Remedy, and so without cause to seeke it, which is the misery of the Church of Rome at this day. To say it can erre, seemes to expose the members of the Church to an uncertainty and shaking in the Faith, to make unquiet Spirits, and to slight and contemne whatsoever the Church, but ever it may notwithstanding erre; into which Errour some Opposers of the Church of Rome have fallen. And upon this is ground our Question, *Wherein are we nearer*

S. 32.
NUM. I.

to unity, if a Councell may erre? But in relating my answer to this you are not so candid; For my words did not sound as yours seeme to doe, That wee should hold with the Councell, erre, or not erre, till another came to reverse it. As if Grounds of Faith might vary at the Racket, and be cast of each side, as a cunning hand might lay them.

NUM. 2.

You forget againe, omit at least (and with what minde you best know) the *Caution* which I added. For I said, The Determination of a Generall Councell erring was to stand in force, and to have externall

* §. 33. *Confid.* 5. *Nu.* 1. 2. And the Reason of this is, Because to have a *General Councell* deceived, is not impossible; But altogether impossible it is, that *Demonstrative Reason* or *Testimony Divine* should deceive. *Hooker* L. 2. *Ec. Pol.* §. 7.

† In which case *Maldonat* puts in the shrewdest Argument. Namely, that this way we should never have a certaine end of Controversies. For to try whether any thing were Decreed according to the Word of God by one General Councell, we should need another Councell; And then another to try that; And so in *infinitum*. So our faith should never have where to settle and rest it selfe. *Mald.* in *S. Mat.* 18. 20. But to this I answer, That the Ancient Church tooke this way, as will afterward appeare in *S. Augustine*. Next, here is no uncertainty at all; For no Generall Councell lawfully called, and so proceeding, can be questioned in another, unlesse it to fall out, that *evident Scripture*, or a *Demonstration* appeare against it. But either of these are so cleare and manifest, that there need be no feare of proceeding in *infinitum*, and leaving the Faith in uncertainty, in necessities to *Salvation*. And in curious speculations it is no matter, whether there be certainty or no, with or without a Councell. §. 33. *Confid.* 5. *Nu.* 1. & 2.

* *Bellar.* L. 4. *de Ro. Pont.* c. 7. §. 3. & c.

Obedience at the least yeelded to it, till * *Evidence of Scripture*, or a *Demonstration to the Contrary* made the Errour appeare; and untill thereupon † another Councell of equall authority did reverse it. And indeed I might have returned upon you againe: If a *Generall Councell* not Confirmed by the *Pope* may erre (which you affirme) to what end then a *Generall Councell*? And you may Answer, yes: For although a *Generall Councell* may erre, yet the *Pope* as *Head of the Church*, cannot. An excellent meanes of unity, to have all in the *Church* as the *Pope* will have it, what ever *Scripture* say, or the *Church* thinke. And then I pray, to what end a *Generall Councell*? Will his *Holmess* be so holy, as to confirme a *Generall Councell*, if it Determine against him? And as for * *Bellarmines* reasons why a *Generall Councell* should be usefull, if not

not necessary, though the Pope bee Infalible, they are so weak in Part, and in part so unworthy; that I am fory any necessity of a bad cause should force so learned a man to make use of them.

Here A. C. tels mee, *The Caution mentioned, as omitted, makes my Answer worse then the Iesuite related it. And that in two things. First, in that the Iesuite relates it thus: Although it may erre: but the Caution makes it, as if it did actually erre. Secondly, in that the Iesuite relates, That wee are bound to hold it, till another come to reverse it; that is, wee not knowing whether it doe erre or not, but onely that it may erre. But the Caution puts the Case so, as if the Determination of a Generall Councell actually erring were not ipso iure invalid, but must stand in force, and have externall Obedience yeilded to it, till not onely morall Certainty, but Evidence of Scripture, or a Demonstration to the Contrary make the error appeare; And when it appeares, wee must yeeld our Obedience, till a Councell of equall Authority reverse it, which perhaps will not bee found in an whole Age. So either the Iesuite relates this speech truly, or lesse disgracefully. And A. C. thinkes, that upon better Iudgement, I Will not allow this Caution. Truly I shall not thanke the Iesuite for any his kindnesse here. And for the Caution, I must and doe acknowledge it mine, even upon advisement, and that whether it make my Answer worse, or better. And I thinke farther, that the Iesuite hath no great Cause to thanke A. C. for this Defence of his Relation.*

First then the Iesuite (so sayes A. C.) doth in his Relation make it but a supposition, That a Generall Councell may erre. But the Caution expresses it as actually erring. True, But yet I hope this Expression makes no Generall Councell actually erre. And then it comes

NUM. 3.
A. C. p. 63. 4.

NUM. 4.
A. C. p. 63

G g

all

* *Synodum Generale aliquoties errasse percepimus.* Wald. L. 2. de Doctrin. Fidei Art. 2. c. 19. §. I.

NUM. 5.
A. C. p. 63.

all to one, whether I suppose that such a Councell may erre, or that it doe erre. And 'tis fitter for clearing the Difficulties into which the Church falls in such a Case to suppose (and more then a supposition it is not) a Generall Councell * actually erring, then as only under a Possibility of Erring. For the Church hath much more to doe to vindicate it selfe from such an Errour actually being, then from any the like Errour that might be.

Secondly A. C. thinkes, he hath got great advantage by the words of the Caution ; in that I say, *A Generall Councell erring is to stand in force, and have externall Obedience,* at least so farre as it consists in silence, Patience, and forbearance yeelded to it, till Evidence of Scripture, or a Demonstration to the Contrary make the Error appeare, and untill therupon another Councell of equal Authority did reverse it. Well I say it again. But is there any one word of mine in the Caution, that speakes of our knowing of this Errour? Surely not one (thats A. C.'s Addition) Now suppose a Generall Councell actually Erring in some Point of Divine Truth, I hope it will not follow that this Errour must bee so grosse, as that forthwith it must needes be knowne to private men. And doubtlesse till they know it, Obedience must be yeelded ; Nay when they know it (if the Errour be not manifestly against Fundamentall verity, in which case a Generall Councell can not easily erre) I would have A. C. and all wise men Consider. Whether Externall Obedience be not even then to be yeelded. For if Controversies arise in the Church some end they must have, or they'll teare all in sunder. And I am sure no wisdom can thinke that fit. Why then say a Generall Councell Erre, and an Erring Decree be *ipso jure*? by the very Law it selfe invalid, I would have it wisely considered again, whether it be not fit to allow a Generall Councell that

that Honour and Priviledge, which all other *Great Courts* have. Namely, That there be a Declaration of the Invalidity of its *Decrees*, as well as of the *Laws* of other Courts, before private men can take liberty to refuse *Obedience*, For till such a declaration, if the *Council* stand not in force, *A.C.* sets up Private Spirits to controll *Generall Councils*, w^{ch} is the thing he so often, and so much cryes out against in the *Protestants*. Therefore

it may seeme very fit and necessary for the Peace of Christendome, that a *Generall Council* thus erring should stand in force, till *Evidence of Scripture*, or a *Demonstration* make the Errour to appeare, * as that

another *Council* of equall Authority reverse it. For as for *Morall Certainty*, that's not strong enough in *Points of Faith*. (which alone are spoken of here)

And if another *Council* of equall Authority cannot be gotten together in an Age, that is such an Inconvenience, as the Church must beare, when it happens.

And far better is that inconvenience, then this other, † that any Authority lesse then a *Generall Council*, should rescinde the *Decrees* of it, unlesse it erre manifestly, and

intolera'ly: Or that the whole Church upon peaceable, and just complaint of this Errour neglect or refuse to call a *Council*, and examine it. And there come in

Nationall or *Provinciall Councils* to a reforme for themselves. But no way must lye open to private men to

^b Refuse obedience, till the *Council* be heard, and weighed.

as well as that which they say against it; yet wit^c

^c Bellarmine's Exception still: so that error be not manifestly intolerable. Nor is it fit for

Private men, in such great Cases as this, upon which the whole peace

of Christendome depends, to argue thus; The Error appeares, Therefore the Determination of the *Council* is *ipso jure* invalid. But this is farre the safer way (I say

* It is not long since *A.C.* compared *Councils* to *Parliaments*; it was but p. 60. And I hope a *Parliament* and the *Acts* of it must stand in force, though something be mistaken in them, or found hurtfull till another *Parliament* of equal Authority reverse it and them. For I presume you will not have any inferior Authority to abrogate *Acts* of *Parliament*.

† S. 33. *Consid.*

4. N. 1.

^c S. 24. N. 1.

^b S. 38. N. 15.

^c Non est inferiorum judicare an Superiores legitime procedant necne, nisi manifestis imò constet intolerabilem Errorem committi. Bellar. L. 2. de Concil. c. 8. S. Alii dicunt Concilium. Nisi manifestè constet, Iacob. Almain in 3. sent. D. 24. q. unica, fine.

still, when the Errour is neither *Fundamentall*, nor *in it selfe manifest*) to argue thus: The Determination is by equall Authority, and that *secundum jus*, according to Law declared to be invalid, Therefore the Errour appeares. And it is a more humble and conscientious way, for any private man to suffer a Councell to goe before him, then for him to outrunne the Councell. But weake and Ignorant mens outrunning both God, and his Church is as bold a fault now on all sides, as the daring of the Times hath made it *Common*. As for that which I have added concerning the Possibility of a *Generall Councells erring*, I shall goe on with it, without asking any farther leave of *A. C.*

§. 33.

For upon this Occasion I shall not hold it amisse a little more at large to Consider the Poynt of *Generall Councils*, *How they may, or may not erre*, And a little to looke into the *Romane and Protestant Opinion* concerning them, which is more agreeable to the *Power and Rule which Christ hath left in his Church*; and which is most preservative of Peace established, or ablest to reduce perfect unity into the Church of Christ, when that poore Ship hath her ribs dashed in sunder by the waves of Contention. And this I will adventure to the World, but only in the *Nature of a Consideration*, and with submission to my *Mother*, the Church of *England*, and the Mother of us all, the *Univerfall Catholike Church of Christ*; As I doe most humbly All whatsoever else is herein contained.

Confid. I.

First then, I Consider, whether all the *Power*, that an *Oecumenicall Councell* hath to Determine, and all the *Assistance* it hath, not to erre in that Determination, it hath it not all from the
Catholike

^a *Catholike Univerſall Body of the Church, and Clergie in the Church, whoſe ^b Representative it is? And it ſeemes it hath. For the Government of the Church being not ^c Monarchicall, but as Chriſt is Head, this Principle is inviolable in Nature: Every Body Collective that re-
presents, receives power, & priviledges from the Body which is represented, els a Representation might have force without the thing it repr. ſents; which cannot be. So there is no Power in the Councell, no Aſſiſtance to it, but what is in, and to the Church. But yet then it may be Queſtioned, whether the Representing Body hath ^d all the Power, Strength, and Priviledge, which the Represented hath? And ſuppoſe it hath all the Legall Power, yet it hath not all the Naturall, either of ſtrength, or wiſdome, that the whole hath. Now becauſe the Representative hath power from the Whole, and the Maine Body, can meet no other way; therefore the Acts, Lawes, and Decrees of the Representative, be it Eccleſiaſticall, or Civill, are Binding in their Strength. But they are not ſo certaine, and free from Errour, as is that Wiſdome which reſides in the Whole. For in Aſſemblies meerely Civill, or Eccleſiaſticall, all the able and ſufficient men cannot be in the Body that Represents, And it is as poſſible, ſo many able, ^e and ſufficient men (for ſome particular buſineſſe) may be left out, as that they which are in, may miſſe, or miſ-apply that Reason; and Ground, upon which the Determination is principally to reſt. Here, for want of a cleare view of this ground, the Representative Body erres; whereas the Represented, by virtue of thole Members which ſaw and knew the ground, may hold the Principle inviolated.*

G g 3

Secondly,

^a *Si Eccleſia Univerſitati non eſt data ulla auctoritas, Ergo neque Concilio Generali quatenus Eccleſiam Univerſalem repræſentat. Bellar. L. 2. de Concil. c. 16. §. Q. ſed ſi Eccleſia.*

^b *Concilium Generale Eccleſiam repræſentans. Ia. Almain. in 3. Sent. D. 24. Q. unica. Episcopi ſunt Eccleſia repræſentative, ut noſtri loquuntur. Bellar. L. 3. de Eccl. Milit. c. 14. §. 3.*

^c *§. 26. Nu. 8.*

^d *Omnis repræſentatio virtute minor eſt Reipſæ, vel Veritate, cujus Repræſentatio eſt. Colligitur aperte ex Tho. 1. 2. q. 101. A. 2. ad. 2.*

^e *Posſet enim contingere quòd Congregati in Concilio Generali eſſent pauci & viles, tam in re, quàm in hominum reputatione, reſpectu illorum qui ad illud Concilium Generale minime conveniſſent, &c. Ockam. Dial. par. 3. lib. 3. c. 13.*

Consid. 2.

^a *Ecclesia est unum Corpus mysticum per Similitudinem ad Naturale. Durand. 3. D. 14. Q. 2. N. 5. Biel. Lect. 23. in Can. Miss.*

Secondly, I Consider, That since it is thus in Nature, and in Civill Bodies, if it be not so in Ecclesiasticall too, some reason must be given why, ^aFor that Body also consists of men: Those men neither all equall in their perfections of Knowledge and Iudgement, whether acquired by Industry, or rooted in Nature, or infused by God. Not all equall, nor any one of them perfect, and absolute, or freed from passion and humane infirmities. Nor doth their meeting together make them Infallible in all things, though the Act which is hammered out by many together, must in reason be perfecter, then that which is but the Child of one mans sufficiency. If then a Generall Councell have no ground of Not erring from the Men, or the Meeting, either it must not be at all, or it must be by some assistance and power upon them, when they are so met together: And this, if it bee lesse then the Assistance of the Holy Ghost, it cannot make them secure against Errour.

Consid. 3.
NUM. 1.

^b *Omniem veritatem infallibiliter docendi, &c. Stapl. Relect. Pref. ad Lectorem.*

^c S. Ioh. 16. 13.

^d S. Ioh. 14. 16.

^e S. Mat. 28. 20.

^f S. Mat. 16. 18.

Thirdly, I Consider, That the Assistance of the Holy Ghost is without Errour; That's no Question, and as little there is, That a Councell hath it. But the Doubt that troubles, is, Whether all assistance of the Holy Ghost be afforded in such a High manner, as to cause all the Definitions of a Councell in matters Fundamentall in the Faith, and in remote Deductions from it, to be alike infallible? Now the Romanists, to prove there is ^b infallible assistance, produce some places of Scripture; but no one of them inferres, much lesse enforces an infallibility. The Places which Stapleton there rests upon, are these: 'I will send you the Spirit of Truth, which will lead you into all Truth. And, ^dThis Spirit shall abide with you for ever. And, ^eBehold I am with you to the end of the world. To these, others add, ^fThe founding of the Church upon the Rocke, against which the gates of

of Hell shall not prevaile. And, Christ's Prayer for S. Peter, *That his Faith faile not. And Christ's promise, That † where two or three are gathered together in his Name, hee will bee in the midst of them. And that in the * Acts: It seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to us.

For the first, which is, Leading into all truth, and that for ever. ^a All, is not alwaies universally taken in Scripture. Nor is it here simply for All Truth: For then a Generall Councell could no more erre in matter

of Fact, then in matter of Faith; in

which yet ^b your selves grant it may erre. But into All^c Truth, is a limited All: Into all Truth absolutely necessary to Salvation: And this, when they suffer themselves to be led by the Blessed Spirit, by the Word of God. And all Truth which Christ had before (at least fundamentally)

delivered unto them, ^d He shall receive of mine, and shew it unto you. And againe; ^e He shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your Remembrance, which I have told you. And for this necessary Truth too, the Apostles received this Promise, not for themselves, and

a Councell, but for themselves, and the Whole Catholike Church; of which a Councell, be it never so generall, is

a very little part. Yea, and this very Assistance is not so absolute, nor in that manner to the whole Church, as it was to the Apostles: neither doth Christ in that place speake directly of the Church, but of His Apostles Preaching, and Doctrin.

As for ^f the end of the N world, the Father is, the of the Ancient Church, we may understand

* S. Luk. 22. 32.

† S. Mat. 18. 20.

* Act. 15. 28.

NUM. 2.

^a Prosp. de vocat. Gent. L. 1. c. 10.

^b Bellarm. 2. de Conc. c. 8. S. Respondeo, quidam. Where he saith, *Ubi Quæstio est de Facto, non de Jure, &c. In ejusmodi judiciis Concilium errare posse non est dubium. Dubium est an illud docebit omnia, S. Ioh. 14. 26. referendum sit ad illud, Quæcunque dixi vobis: quasi non aliud docturum Spiritum Sanctum dicat, quàm quod ipse ante à docuisset, non repugnabo, si quis ita velit interpretari, &c. Maldonat. in S. Ioh. 14.*

^d S. Ioh. 16. 14.

^e S. Ioh. 14. 26.

^f Bellarm. 2. de Con. c. 9. S. Alteram. *Assistentia Sp. Sancti non est propter Concil. sed universam Ecclesiam.*

^a S. Aug. *Tr.* 50. in *S. Iob.* Idior. 1. *Sent.* cap. 14.

^b S. Hilar. in *Psal.* 124. Iustin. Martyr. *Dial. cum Triphone.* Prosper. *Epist.* ad *Demetriadem.*

^c S. Hilar. in *Psal.* 124. Prosper. *Lib.* 2. de *Voc. Gent.* cap. 2. Leo *Serm.* 2. de *Resurrect.* Dom. cap. 3. Idior. in *Iof.* c. 12.

^d S. Cyril. *lib.* 7. *Dial. de Trin.* Prosper. *Epist.* ad *Demetriadem.*

^e S. Hilar. in *Psal.* 124. S. Cyril. *L.* 7. *Dial. de Trin.* S. Aug. 6. de *Gen.* ad *Lit.* c. 8. S. Leo *Serm.* 10. de *Nat. Dom.* c. 5. Idior. in *Iof.* c. 12. In all which places, *Vobiscum* is either interpreted *cum suis*, or *Fidelibus*, or *Universa Ecclesia*.

^f Hoc colligitur, sed queritur non quid colligitur, sed quid dicere voluit. Mall. in *S. Mar.* 28.

NUM. 4.

^g 1. Cor. 3. 11.
^h Eph. 2. 20.

ⁱ S. Ignatius *Ep.* ad *Philadelph.* Qui suam firmavit Ecclesiam super Petram, edificatione spirituali. S. Hilar. 1. 6. de *Trin.* Super hanc igitur Confessionis Petram Ecclesia edificatio est. Et paulo post: Hec Fides Ecclesia fundamentum est. S. Greg. Nyss. de *Trin.* adversus *Iudeos.*

in a Majesty, in^t Tower, in *Ayd* and 'Assistance, against the Difficulties they should find for preaching Christ;

which is the native sense, as I take it. And this Promise was made to support their weakenesse. As for his Presence, in teaching in the Holy Ghost, I mention it; and no one of them which doth, speaks of any Infallible Assistance, farther then the succeeding Church keeps to the Word of the Apostles, as the Apostles kept to the Guidance of the Spirit. Besides, the

Fathers referre their Speech to the Church Universall, not to any Councell, or Representative Body. And Maldonate adds, That this His presence by teaching, is, or

may be a Collection from the place, but is not the Intention of Christ.

For the Rocke upon which the Church is founded, which is the next Place, we dare not lay any other Foundation, then Christ: Christ laid his^h Apostles, no question, but upon Himselfe. With these S. Peter was laid, no more questions, and in prime place of Order (would his claiming Successours be content with that) as appeares, and diverse Fathers witnesse, by his Particular designement, *Tu es Petrus*; But yet the Rocke even there spoken of, is not S. Peter's Person, either onely, or properly, but the Faith which he profes-

sed. And to this, besides the Evidence, which is in Text; and Truth, theⁱ Fathers come

come in with very full consent. And this, That the Gates of Hell shall not prevaile against it, is not spoken of the Not erring of the Church principally, but of ^b Not ^a falling away of it from the Foundation. Now a Church may erre, and dangerously too, and yet not fall from the Foundation, especially if that of ^b Bellarmine be true, That there are many things, even de fide, of the Faith, which yet are not necessary to Salvation. Besides, even here againe, the Promise of this Able edification, is to the whole Church, not to a Councell; at least no farther then a Councell builds, as a Church is built, that is, on Christ.

The next Place is Christ's Prayer for S. Peter's NUM. 5.
 Fait. The native use of which Place is, That Christ prayed, and obtained for S. Peter perseverance in the grace of God, against the strong temptation, which was to winne him above the rest. But to conclude an Infalibility hence in the Pope, or in his Chaire, or in the Romane Sea, or in a Generall Councell, though the Pope bee President, I
 H h finde

Super hanc Petram edificabo Ecclesiam meam, super Confessionem videlicet Christi. S. Iud. Pelut. Epist. l. 1. Epist. 235. Ut hac ratione certam omnibus Confessionem iraderet, quam ab eo inspiratus Petrus tanquam Basis, ac Fundamentum jecit, super quod Dominus Ecclesiam suam extruxit. S. Cyril. Alex. de Trin. L. 4. Petram opinor per agnominationem, aliud nihil quam inconcussam & firmissimam Discipuli fidem vocavit, in qua Ecclesia Christi ita fundata, & firmata esset, ut non laberetur, &c. B. Theodor. in Cant. Petram appellat fidei pietatem, veritatis professionem, &c. Et super hanc Petram edificabo Ecclesiam meam. S. Greg. Ep. l. 3. Ep. 33. In vera fide persistite, & vitam vestram in Petram Ecclesie, hoc est, in Confessione B. Petri Apostolorum Principis solidate. Theophylact. in Matth. 16. Super eum edificavit Ecclesiam, quia enim confessus erat, &c. quod hac Confessio fundamentum erit, &c. S. Aug. in 1. Ep. S. Ioh. tract. 10. Quid est, super hanc Petram? Super hanc Fidem, super id quod dictum est, Tu es, &c. S. Bal. Seleuc. Orat. 25. Hanc Confessionem cum nominasset Christus Petram, Petrum nuncupat eum qui primus illam est confessus, donans illi hanc appellationem tanquam insigne, & monumentum huius confessionis. Hac enim est revera Pietatis Petra, hac salutis basis, &c. S. Jacob. Liturg. ἐν τῇ Πέτρᾳ τῆς πίστεως, p. 26. &c. And some which joine the Person of S. Peter, professe it is propter robur confessionis. Iustin. Mart. Dial. cum Try. b. S. Chrysost. Hom. 2. in Psal. 50. S. Amb. L. 10. in S. Luc. c. 24. And S. Greg. gives it for a Rule, when Petra is read in the singular number (and so it is here) Christus est, Christ is signified.

^a Non deficit. S. Bern. Ser. 79. in Cant. And Bellarmine himselfe going to prove Ecclesiam non posse deficere, begins with this very place of Scripture, L. 3. de Eccl. c. 13. ^b L. 3. de Eccl. c. 14. S. Quinto, si esset. Multa sunt de Fide, que non sunt absolute necessaria ad salutem.

^a Lib. 4. de Rom.
Pont. cap. 3.

finde no one *Ancient Father* that dare adventure it. And ^a *Bellarmino* himfelfe, besides some *Popes*, in their owne Cause (and that in Epistles counterfeit, or falsely alledged) hath not a Father to name for *this sense* of the Place, till he come downe to *Chrysologus*, *Theophylact*, and *S. Bernard*: of which *Chrysologus* his speech is but a flash of *Rhetoricke*, and the other two are men of yesterday, compared with Antiquity, and lived when (it was God's great grace, and learned mens wonder) the corruption of the time, had not made them corrupter then they are. And ^b *Thomas* is resolute, That what is meant here beyond *S. Peter's Person*, is referred to the whole Church. And the *Glosse* upon the Canon Law is more peremptorie then he, even to the Deniall, that it is ^c meant of the Pope. And if this Place warrant not the *Popes Faith*, where is the *Infallibility* of the Councell that in your Doctrine depends upon it?

^b 2. 2. e. q. 2. A. 3.
Probat enim ex
his verbis, Fidem
Ecclesie Univer-
salis non posse de-
ficere.

^c Causa. 24. q. 1.
C. A. Relicta.
Non de Papa,
quia Papa potest
errare.

Nu m. 6.

^d Testimonia propria sunt tria. Primum
est Matth. 18. &c. Bellar. L. 2 de Con-
cil. c. 2. §. 4. Sed contra, Firmitas Con-
ciliorum propriè non innitur his verbis.
Stapl. Releñt. Controvers. 6. q. 4. A. 4. ad
4^{um}. Locu hic non debet huc propriè ac-
commodari. Valentia in Tho. To. 3. Dis-
put. 1. R. 1. Puncto 7. §. 45.

^e S. Mat. 18. 19. 20.

^f Addit à Argumentatione à Minori ad
Majus, &c. Bellar. L. 2. de Concil. c. 2.
§. 4. Et Stapl. Releñt. Cont. 6. q. 3.
A. 4.

^g Si duo vel tres congregati in nomine meo
obtinent semper quod petunt à Deo. &c.
Bellar. ibid. §. 5.

The next Place is *Bellarmines* choice one, & his first, and he sayes 'tis a ^d proper place for Proofof the *Infallibility* of Generall Councels. This Place is *Christ's Promise*. Where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them, ^e S. Mat. 18. And he tels us, The strength of the Argument is not taken from these words alone, but as they are continued with the former, and ^f that the Argument is drawne à Minori ad Majus, from the lesse to the Greater. Thus ^g If two or three gathered together in my Name, do alwaies obtaine that which they aske at God's hands, to wit, wisdom and knowledge of those things which are necessary for them: How much more shall all the Bishops gathered together

together (in a Councell) alwaies obtaine wisdom and knowledge to ludge those things, which belong to the Direction of the whole Church? I answer; First, tis most true, that here is little strength in these words alone. For, though the *Fathers* make different interpretations of this Place of Scripture, yet *most of them agree in this, That this Place is to be understood of Consent in Prayer. And this is manifest enough in the Text it selfe Secondly, I think there is as little strength in them by the Argument drawne *A Minori ad Majus*. And that I prove two wayes. First, because though that Argument hold in *Naturall*, and *Necessary Things*: yet I doubt it holds not either in *Voluntary*, or *Promised things*, or things which depend upon their *Institution*. For he that *Promises the lesse*, doth not hereby promise the *greater*; and he which will *doe the Lesse*, will not alwaies *doe the greater*. Secondly, because this *Argument from the Lesse to the greater*, can never follow, but where, and so farre as the thing upon which the Argument is founded, agrees to the lesse. For if it do not alwayes agree to the lesse, it cannot Necessarily passe from thence to the greater. Now that upon which this Argument is grounded here, is *Infalible bearing*, and *granting the Prayers of two or three met together in the Name of Christ*. But this *Infalibility* is not alwaies found in this *Lesse Congregation*, wheretwo or three are gathered together. For they often meet, and pray, yet obtaine not, because *there are diverse other Conditions necessarily required* (as *S. Chrysostome* † observes) to make the Prayers of a Congregation heard beside their gathering together in the Name *Christ*. And therefore it is not attended to a greater

Hh 2

Congregation,

* S. Chrys. Hom.
61. in S. Mat.
18. ubi duo vel
tres pari spiritu
& voluntate col-
lecti sunt, &c.
Theoph. in
S. Mat. 18.
S. Cyprian. L. 4.
Epist. 4.
S. Hilar. in
S. Mat. 18.

† Quomodo igitur à Patre cuncta non consequuntur? Quia multa sunt Cause non impetrandi, &c. S. Chrysost. Hom. in S. Matth. 18. Et Bellar. ipse. Si congregari in nomine Christi sit Nota Ecclesie, non erit quomodocumq; congregari. Sic enim omnes Hareses, & Schismata congregantur in nomine Christi. Sed, &c. L. 4. de Notis Ecclesie. c. 2. S. Tertius non.

Congregation, or Councell, unlesse the same Conditions be still observed. Neither doth Christs Promise, *Ero in Medio*, I will be in the midst of them, inferre, That they, the greater, or the Lesse, three, or three hundred have

^a *Etsi Christus adsit in medio talium, non adest tamen ad omnem effectum, aut ad hunc qui est Judicare de fide. Staple. Releſt. Controv. 6. q. 3. A. 4.*

Sed nec illi semper ad Deum respiciunt qui in medio eorum est. Nec Deus sic ad est is qui respiciunt ad Ipsum, ut omnem veritatem doceat in Instanti & omni tempore simul. &c. Iunius in Bellar. L. 2. de Concil. c. 2.

^b *Si duo Vnanimus tantum possunt; Quid, si Vnanimitas apud omnes esset? S. Cypr. L. 4. Epist. 4.*

^c *Non ad Infallibilem certitudinem alicujus Sententia, in quam plures in Nomine Christi consentiunt, locus hic Evangelii proprie accomodari debet, sed ad efficaciam consensiois plurium ad id impetrandum, quod unanimiter in Christi Nomine petunt, si id quidem ad eorum salutem expediat. Secus enim non modo ex illo loco probabitur &c. Greg. de Valen. To. 2. in Thom. Disput. 1. Q. 1. Puncto. 7. §. 45. And although Stapleton approves this Argument à Minori ad Majus, yet withall he sayes. Firmitas Conciliorum illis Christi verbis proprie non innititur, Quia nec Christus ibi de Conciliis Episcoporum loquitur, sed de quavis Fidelium unanimi Congregatione. Nec etſi &c. Staple. Releſt. Contr. 6. q. 3. A. 4.*

all, even ^a necessary things infallibly granted unto them, as oft as they aske, if they aske not, as well as they ought, as what they ought. And yet most true it is, that where more or fewer are gathered together in the Name of Christ, there is he in the midst of them, but to assist, and to grant whatsoever he shall find fit for them, not Infal-

libly whatsoever they shall thinke fit to aske for themselves. And therefore S. Cyprian, though he use this very Argument *A minori ad majus*, from the lesse to the greater, yet he presumes not to Extend it as Bellarm. doth, to the obtaining of Infallibility; but only useth it in the Generall way, in which there neither is, nor can be doubt of the truth of it. Thus. ^b *If two that are of one minde to God-ward, can doe so much, what might be done, if there were*

Vnanimity among all Christians? Vndoubtedly more, but not All whatsoever they should aske, unlesse all other Requisites were present. Thirdly, in this their owne Great Champions disagree from Bellarmine, or he from them. For Gregory de Valentia and Stapleton tell us, That this place doth not belong properly to prove an Infalible Certainty of any sentence in which more agree in the Name of Christ: But to the efficacy of Consent for obtaining that which more shall pray for in the Name of Christ, if at least that be for their
soules

soules health. For els you may prove out of this Place, That not only the Definition of a Generall Councell, but even of a Provinciall, nay of two or three Bishops gathered together is valid, and that without the Popes Assent.

The last Place mentioned for the Infallibility of Generall Councells is that, Acts, 15. where the Apostles say of themselves and the Councell held by them: *It seemes good to the Holy Ghost, and to Vs.* And They might well say it. For They had Infallibly the Assistance of the Holy Ghost, and they kept close to his Direction. But I do not finde, that any Generall Councell since, though they did implore (as they ought) the Assistance of that Blessed Spirit, did ever take upon them to say in terminis, in expresse termes of their Definitions: *Visum est Spiritui Sancto, & Nobis.* It seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to Vs. Acknowledging even thereby (as I conceive) a great deal of Difference in the Certainty of those things, which a Generall Councell at after Determined in the Church, and those which were settled by the Apostles, when They sate in Councell. But though I do not finde, That They used this speech punctually, and in termes, yet the Fathers, when They met in Councell were Confident, and spake it out, That They had Assistance from the Holy Ghost; yet so, as that They neither tooke Themselves, nor the Councells They sate in, as Infallibly Guided by the Holy Ghost, as the Apostles were. And Valentia is very right,

* That though the Councell say they are gathered together in the Holy Ghost, yet the Fathers are neither Arrogant, in using the speech, nor yet Infallible for all that. And this is true, whether the Pope approve, or disapprove their Definitions; Though Valentia will not admit that. The Pope must be (with him) infallible, what ever come of it. Now though this be but an Example, & include no Precept, yet both

Hh 3

and

NUM. 7.
ACT. 15. 28.

^a Quintum Argumentum &c. Aut sunt ergo Arrogantes, quod putandum non est, Aut infallibiliter definiunt. Respondet Valentia concedendo neutrum, To. 3. in Thom. Disp. 1. Q. 1. Puncto 7. S. 45.

^b Firmitas eorum nititur exemplo primi concilii Staple. Relict. Contro. 6. q. 3. A. 4. ad 3.

^a Et Bellarm. dicit *Locum hunc esse tertium à Proprijs, L. 2. de Concl. c. 2. S. Tertius Locus.*

^b *Conciliorum Decreta sunt Spiritus Sancti Oracula. Stapl. ibid. Sententia Orthodoxa, prima.*

^c *Si illud Concilium ex quo formam acceperunt omnia alia Concilia asserit Decreta sua esse Decreta Sp. Sancti, certè idem asserere possunt cetera legitima Concilia, &c. Bellar. ibid.*

Decrees are the Decrees of the Holy Ghost. Little considering therewhile, That it is one thing to borrow the *Forme*, and another thing to borrow the *Certainty*, and the Infallibility of a Councell For suppose that *After-Councils* did follow the Form of that *first Council* exactly in all Circumstances, yet, I hope, no advised man will say, There is the like Infallibility in other Councils, where no man sate that was *Inspired*, as was in this, where all, that sate as Judges, were *Inspired*. Or if any Jesuite will be so bold as to say it, he had need bring

very Good Proofoe for it, and far better then any is brought yet. Now that all Councils are not so Infallible as was this of the Apostles, nor the Causes handled in them, as there they were, is manifest by ^dOne of their owne, who tels us plainly That the Apostles in their Councell delt very prudently, did not precipitate their Iudgement, but waighed all things. For in Matters of Faith, and which touch the

^d *Vide quàm prudenter agūt, non precipitāt Sententiā, sed singula expendunt. In rebus enim Fidei & quæ conscientia tangunt, non satis est dicere, Volumus Mandamus. Vides igitur quomodo Conveniunt Apostoli, simpliciter Conveniunt, nihil nisi Deum querunt, & aliorum salutem expetunt. &c. Quid igitur mirum si in hoc Concilio fuerit Spiritus Sanctus? &c. Nos aliter Convenimus, nempe cum magnâ pompâ, nosq; ipsos querimus; atq; nobis pollicemur nihil nobis non licere de Plenitudine Potestatis. Et quomodo Sp. Sanctus ejusmodi Concilia probare possit? Ferus in Act. 15. 7*

Conscience, it is not enough to say, Volumus & Mandamus, We Will and Command. And thus the Apostles met together in simplicity and singleness, seeking nothing but God, and the Salvation of men. And what wonder if the Holy Ghost were present

present in such a Councell? Nos aliter. But we meet otherwise, in great pompe, and seeke our selves, and promise our selves that we may doe any thing out of the Plenitude of our power. And how can the Holy Ghost allow of such meetings? And if not allow; or approve the Meetings, then certainly not concurre to make any thing Infallible, that shall be concluded in them.

And for all the Places together waigh them with indifferency, and either they speake of the Church (including the Apostles) as all of them doe; And then All grant the Voice of the Church is Gods Voice, Divine and Infallible. Or else they are Generall unlimited, and applyable to private Assemblies as well as Generall Councils, which none grant to be Infallible, but some mad Enthusiasts: Orels they are limited, not simply into All truth, but All necessary to salvation; in which I shall easily grant a Generall Council cannot erre, suffering it selfe to be led by this Spirit of Truth in the Scripture, and not taking upon it to lead both the Scripture and the Spirit. For Suppose these Places or any other, did promise Assistance even to Infallibility, yet they granted it not to every Generall Council, but to the Catholike Body of the Church it selfe, and if it be in the whole Church principally, then is it in a Generall Council, but by Consequent; as the Council represents the Whole. And that which belongs to a thing by consequent, doth not otherwise, nor longer, belong unto it, then it consents and cleaves to that, upon which it is a consequent. And therefore a Generall Council hath not this Assistance, but as it keepes to the whole Church, and Spouse of Christ whose it is to heare His word, and determine by it. And therefore if a Generall Council wil go out of the Churches way, it may easily goe without the Churches Truth.

NUM. 8.

Fourthly,

Confid. 4.
NUM. 1.

† S. Mat. 16, 18.

• *Ecclesia Universalis fide habet indefectibilem &c. Non quidem in Generali Synodo congregata, quam aliquoties errasse percepimus, &c. Wald. L. 2. Doct. Fid. Ar. 2. c. 19. §. 1. §. 38. N. 4.*

* Aug. L. 2. de Bapt. contra Doct. nat. cap. 3.

^b *Ipsaq; Plenaria sepe priora à posterioribus emendari.*

Fourthly, I Consider, That All agree, That the Church in Generall can never erre from the Faith necessary to Salvation : No Persecution, no Temptation, no † Gates of Hell (whatsoever is meant by them) can ever so prevaile against it. For all the Members of the Militant Church cannot erre, either in the whole Faith, or in any Article of it ; it is impossible. For if all might so erre, there could be no union betweene them, as Members, and Christ the Head : And no Union betweene Head and Members, no Body, and so no Church, which cannot be. But there is not the like consent, That * Generall Councils cannot erre. And it seemes strange to me, the Fathers having to doe with so many Hereticks, and so many of them opposing Church Authority, that in the condemnation of those Hereticks, this Proposition, even in termes (A Generall Council cannot erre) should not be found in any one of them, that I can yet see. Now suppose it were true, That no Generall Council had erred in any matter of moment to this day, which will not be found true ; yet this would not have followed, that it is therefore infallible, and cannot erre. I have no time to descend into Particulars, therefore to the Generall still. S. Augustine^a puts a Difference betweene the Rules of Scripture, and the Definitions of men ; This Difference is ; *Præponitur Scriptura*, That the Scripture hath the Prerogative, That Prerogative is, That whatsoever is found written in Scripture, may neither be doubted, nor disputed, whether it be true, or right. But the Letters of Bishops may not only be disputed, but corrected by Bishops that are more learned and wise then they, or by Nationall Councils ; and Nationall Councils by Plenary or Generall : And even^b Plenary Councils themselves may be amended, the former by the later. It seemes it was no newes with S. Augustine, that a Generall Council might erre, and therefore inferiour to the Scripture,

Scripture, which may neither be doubted, nor disputed, where it affirms. And if it be so with the Definition of a Councell too (as^a Stapleton would have it) That that may neither be doubted, nor disputed; Where is then the Scriptures Prerogative?

I know there is much shifting about this Place, but it cannot be wrastled off.^b Stapleton sayes first, That *S. Augustine* speaks of the Rules of Manners, and Discipline: And this is *Bellarmino* last shift. Both are out, and *Bellarmino* in a Contradiction. *Bellarmino* in a Contradiction: For first he tels us, *Generall Councels cannot erre in Precepts of Manners*; and then, to turne off *Saint Augustine* in this Place, hee tels us, That if *Saint Augustine* doth not speake of matter of Fact, but of Right, and of universall Questions of Right, then he is to be understood^d of Precepts of Manners, not of Points of Faith. Where he hath first runne himselfe upon a Contradiction; and then we have gained this ground upon him, That either his Answer is nothing; or els against his owne state of the Question, *A Generall Councell can erre in Precepts of Manners*. So belike when *Bellarmino* is at a shift, *A Generall Councell can, and cannot erre in Precept of Manners*. And Both are out: For the whole Dispute of *Saint Augustine*, is against the Errour of *Saint Cyrian*, followed by the *Donatists*, which was an Errour in Faith; Namely, That true Baptisme could not be given by Hereticks, and such as were out of the Church. And the Proove which *Stapleton* and *Bellarmino* draw out of the subsequent words (^e *When by any experiment of things, that which was shut, is opened*) is too weake: For experiment there is not of Fact; nor are the words, *Conclusum est*, as if it were of a Rule of Discipline concluded, as *Stapleton* cites them; but a farther experiment or proove of the Question in hand; and pertaining to faith which was then shut up, and as

*Vox Ecclesiastica
lucet, ut non de ead
judicemus recte
ne an secus docu
erit. So. Stap. Re.
lect. c. 4 q. 1. a. 1*

NUM. 2.

*De Regulis
Morum & Dis
ciplinæ. Relect.
Con. 6. q. 3. A. 4.*

*c. 2. de Concil.
c. 2. Princip.*

*d. Ib. cap. 7. §. Po
test etiam,*

*e. Quando aliquo
rerum experi
mento, quod clau
sum erat, aperi
tur.*

* Ib. c. 4. *Nebulis involuta.*

Saint *Augustine* after speakes, * wrapped up in cloudy darknesse.

NUM. 3.

Next Stapleton † will have it, That if Saint *Augustine* doe speake of a Cause of Faith, then his meaning is, that later Generall Councils can mend, that is, explicate more perfectly that Faith which lay hid in the seed of

† *Sensus est, quod Concilia posteriora emendant, id est, perfectius explicant fidem in semine antiqua Doctrina latentem. G. c. Stapl. Relect. Contr. 6. q. 3. A. 4.*

Ancient Doctrine. He makes instance, That about the Divinity of Christ, the Council of *Ephesus* explicated the first of *Nice*; *Chalcedon*, both of them; *Constance*, *Chalcedon*. And then concludes: * In all which things, none of (these) Councils taught that which was erroneous: An excellent Conclusion: These Councils, and These in this thing, taught no error, and were only explained: Therefore no Council can erre in any matter of Faith, Or therefore *S. Augustine* speakes not of an Emendation of error, but of an Explanation of ense: wheras every eye sees neither of these can follow.

* *Quia in re nihil erroneum ullum Concilium docuit. G.*

NUM. 4.

† *Sapient.*

Now that *S. Augustine* meant plainly, That even a Plenary Council might erre, and that † often (for that is his word) and that in matter of Faith, and might and ought so to be amended in a later Council, I think wil thus appeare. First his word is, *Emendari*, to be amended, which properly supposes for error, and faultinesse, not Explanation; And Saint *Augustine* needed not to go to a word of such

* Not used but either for *Corrigere*, or *Anferre*; And so *S. Augustine* uses the word, *L. 20. cont. Faust. c. 21.* and *Bellarmino* though he interpret it in matter of Fact, yet equals the word with *Correx-*
it. 2. de Con. c. 8. § Respond. Quest.

a * forced sense, nor sure would, especially in a Disputation against Adversaries. Next, *S. Augustines* Dispute is against *S. Cyprian* and the

Council held at *Carthage* about Baptisme by Hereticks; in which Point, that Nationall Council erred (as now all agree) And *S. Augustines* Deduction goes on: Scripture cannot be other then
right,

right ; That is the Prerogative of it: but Bishops may, and be ^a Reprehended for it, if peradventure they ^{*}erre from the Truth, and that either by more learned Bishops, or by Provinciaall Councils. Here Reprehension, and that for deviation from the Truth, is (I hope) Emendation properly, and not Explanation onely. Then Provinciaall Councils, they must [†]yeeld to Generall : And to yeeld is not in case of Explanation only. Then it followes ; That even Plenary Councils themselves may be amended, the former by the later ; still retaining that which went before, If peradventure they erred, or made deviation from the Truth. And if this be not so, I would faine know, why in one and the same tenour of words, in one and the same continuing argument, and deduction of S. Augustine, Reprehendi should be in proper sense, and à veritate deviatum in proper sense, and Cedere in proper sense, and only Emendari should not be proper, but stand for an Explanation? If you say the Reason is, because the former words are applyed to men, and Nationall Councils, both which may erre, but this last to Generall Councils, which cannot erre ; This is most miserable begging of the Principle, and thing in Question.

^a Reprehendi.^{*} Si quid in iis forte à veritate deviatum est.[†] Cedere.

Again, S. Augustine concludes there, That the Generall Councell preceding may be amended by Generall Councils that follow, ^b When that is knowne which lay hid before. Not as Stapleton would have it, lay hid as in the seed of Ancient Doctrine only, and so needed nothing but explanation ; but hid in some darknes or ambiguity, which led the former into error, and mistaking, as appeares : For S. Augustine would have this amendment made without Sacrilegious Pride, doubtlesse, of insulting upon the former Council, that was to be amended ; and without swelling arrogancy, sure, against the weaknesse in the former Councell ; and without

NUM. 5.

^b Quam cognoscitur quod latebat.

contention of envie, which uses to accompany mans frailty, where his, or his friends Error is to be amended by the later Councell; and in holy Humility, in Catholike Peace, in Christian Charity, no question, that a Schisme be not made to teare the Church (as here the Donatists did) while one Councell goes to reforme the lapse of another, if any be. Now to what end should this learned Father be so zealous in this worke, this highest worke, that I know in the Church, Reviewing and Surveighing Generall Councils, to keepe off Pride, and Arrogance, and Envie, and to keepe all in Humility, Peace, and Charity; if after all this noyse, he thought later Councils might do nothing, but amend, that is, explaine the former?

NUM. 6.
 * Bellar. L. 2, de
 Concil. c. 7. §. Re-
 spondeo primo;
 fortè.

† S. 26. N. 1.

That shift, which * Bellarmine addes to these two of Stapleton, is poorest of all, namely, That S. Augustine speakes of unlawfull Councils; and it is no question, but they may be amended, as the second Ephesine was at Chalcedon. For this Answer hath no Foundation but a peradventure, nor durst Bellar. rest upon it And most manifest it is, that S. August. speaks of Councils in general, that they may erre, and be amended in Doctrine of Faith; and in case they be not amended, that then they be condemned and rejected by the Church, as this of Ephesus, and divers others were. And as for that meere Trick, of the † Popes Instruction, Approbation, or Confirmation, to preserve it from errour, or raise it that it hath not erred, the most ancient Church knew it not. He had his Suffrage, as other great Patriarchs had, and his Vote was highly esteemed, not onely for his Place, but for worth too, as Popes were then. But that the Whole Councell depended upon him, and his confirmation, was then unknowne, and I verily thinke at this day not Believed, by the wise and Learned of his Adherents.

Fifthly,

Fifthly, it must be considered, If a Generall Councell may erre, who shall judge it? *S. Augustine* is at ^a *priora* à *posterioribus*, Nothing sure, that is lesse then a ^b Generall Councell. Why, but this yet layes all open to uncertainties, and makes way for a Whirlewind of a Private Spirit, to ruffle the Church. No, neither of these. First, all is not open to uncertainties. For Generall Councils lawfully called, and ordered, and lawfully proceeding, are a Great and an Awfull Representation, and cannot erre in matters of Faith, keeping themselves to God's Rule, and not attempting to make a New of their own; and are with all submission to be observed by every Christian, where Scripture, or evident Demonstration come not against them. Nor doth it make way for the Whirlewind of a private Spirit: For Private Spirits are too giddy to rest upon Scripture, and too heady and shallow to be acquainted with Demonstrative Arguments. And it were happy for the Church, if she might never be troubled with Private Spirits, till they brought such Arguments. I know this is hotly objected against *Hooker*, the ^d *Authour* calls him a ^c *Wise Protestant*, yet turnes thus upon him. If a Councell must yeeld to a Demonstrative Prooffe, Who shall Iudge, whether the Argument that is brought, be a Demonstration, or not? For every man, that will kicke against the Church, will say, the Scripture he urges, is evident, and his Reason a Demonstration. And what is this, but to leave all to the wildenesse of a Private Spirit? Can any ingenuous man read this Passage in *Hooker*, and dreame of a Private Spirit? For to the Question, Who shall judge? *Hooker* answers, as if it had beene then made, ^e *An Argument necessary and Demonstrative, is such* (saith he) *as being proposed to any man, and understood, the minde cannot chuse but inwardly assent unto it.* So, it is not enough to thinke or say it is

Confid. 5.

NUM. 1.

^a Ibid.^b S. 32. N. 5.^c Prefat. p. 29.^d Dialogus *ais-
aus*, Deus &
Rex.^e Cordatus *Pro-
testans*.

^f Pref. p. 29. And therefore *A. C.* is much to blame after all this, to talk of a pretext of seeming evident Scripture, or Demonstration. As he doth. p. 59.

^a §. 32. Nu. 2.

^b *Præfat.* p. 28.

Demonstrative. The Light then of a *Demonstrative Argument*, is the Evidence which it selfe hath in it selfe to all that understand it. Well; but because all understand it not, If a Quarrell be made, Who shall decide it? No Question, ^a but a *Generall Councell*, not a *Private Spirit*: first, in the intent of the Authour; for *Hooker* in all that Discourse makes the Sentence of the Councell ^b binding: and therefore that is made Judge, not a *Private Spirit*. And then for the Judge of the *Argument*, it is as plaine: For if it be evident to any man, then to so many Learned men as are in a Councell, doubtlesse: And if they cannot but assent, it is hard to thinke them so impious, that they will define against it. And if that which is thought evident to any man, be not evident to such a grave Assembly, it is probable 'tis no *Demonstration*, and the producers of it, ought to rest, and not to trouble the Church.

NUM. 2.

^c 2 de Bapt. cont. Don. cap. 4.

^d *Univerum discenti, & demonstranti.*

^e *Cont. Fund.* cap. 4.

^f *Quæ quidem si tam manifesta monstratur, ut in dubium venire non possit, præponenda est omnibus illis rebus, quibus in Catholica tenor: Ita si aliquid avertissimè in Evangelio, ibi. c. 4.*

Nor is this *Hooker's* alone, nor is it newly thought on by us. It is a Ground in *Nature*, which *Grace* doth ever set right, never undermine. And ^c *S. Augustine* hath it twice in one Chapter, That *S. Cyprian*, and that Councell at *Carthage*, would have presently yielded to any one that would ^d demonstrate Truth. Nay, it is a Rule with ^e him, *Consent of Nations, Authority confirmed by Miracles, and Antiquity, S. Peters Chaire, and Succession from it, Motives to keepe him in the Catholike Church, must not hold him against Demonstration of Truth*; ^f which if it bee so clearly demonstrated, that it cannot come into doubt, it is to be preferred before all those things, by which a man is held in the Catholike Church. Therefore an evident Scripture, or *Demonstration of Truth* must take place every where, but where these cannot be had, there must be Submission to Authority.

And

And doth not *Bellarmino* himselfe grant this? For NUM. 3.
 speaking of Councils, he delivers this Proposition,
That Inferiours may not judge, whether their Superiours
(and that in a Councell) do proceed lawfully, or not. But
 then having bethought himselfe, that Inferiours at all
 times, and in all Causes, are not to be cast off, he adds ^a *L. 2. de Concil.*
 this Exception, ^a *Unlesse it manifestly appeare that an*
intolerable Errour be committed. So then, if such an Er- ^{c. 8. S. Alii di-}
 rour be, and be manifest, Inferiours may do their du- ^{cunt Concili-}
 ty, and ^a Councell must yeeld; unlesse you will ac- ^{um. Nisi mani-}
 cuse *Bellarmino* too of leaning to a Private Spirit; for ^{festissime constet}
 neither doth he expresse who shall judge, whether the ^{intolerabilem}
Errour be intolerable. ^{Errorem com-}
^{mitti.}

This will not downe with you, but the Defini- NUM. 4.
 tion of a *Generall Councell* is, and must be *infallible*.
 Your Fellowes tell us (and you can affirme no more)
 That the *Voice* of the Church determining in Councell, ^b *Scapl. Relects*
 is not ^b *Humane*, but *Divine*. That is well; *Divine*, ^{Cont. 4. Q. 3.}
 then sure *Infallible*; yea, but the Proposition stickes ^{Ar. 1.}
 in the throat of them that would utter it. It is not
Divine simply, but in ^a *manner Divine*. Why but
 then sure not *infallible*, because it may speak lowdest
 in that manner, in which it is not *Divine*. Nay more:
The Church (forsooth) is an infallible Foundation of
Faith, ^d *in an higher kinde then the Scripture: For the Scri-*
pture is but a Foundation in Testimony, and Matter to be
believed; but the Church as the efficient cause of Faith,
and in some sort the very formall. Is not this *Blasphe-*
mie? Doth not this knock against all evidence of
Truth, and his owne Grounds, that sayes it? Against
 all evidence of *Truth*: For in all Ages, all men that
 once admitted the *Scripture* to be the Word of God (as
 all *Christians* doe) doe with the same breath grant it
 most undoubted and *infallible*. But all men have
 not so judged of the *Churches Definitions*, though they
 have

^c *Divina suo mo-*
^{do.} *Ibid.* And so
^{A. C.} too, who
 hath opened
 his mouth very
 wide to proove
 the Succession of
 Pastors in the
 Church, to be of
 Divine, and in-
 fallible Autho-
 rity; yet in the
 close is forced to
 add, *At least in*
some sort, p. 51.
^d *In altiori gene-*
re, viz. in genere
cause efficientis,
atque adeo ali-
qua ex parte for-
malis. *Ibid.* Q.
 4. *Ar. 3.*

have in greatest Obedience submitted to them. And against his owne Grounds, that sayes it: For the Scripture is *absolutely*, and every way *Divine*; the Churches Definition is but *suo modo*, in a sort, or manner *Divine*. But that which is but in a sort, can never be a Foundation in an Higher Degree, then that which is absolute, and every way such: Therefore neither can the Definition of the Church be so infallible as the Scripture; much lesse *in altiori genere*, in a higher kinde then the Scripture. But because, when all other things faile, you flie to this, That the Churches Definition in a Generall Councell, is by *Inspiration*, and so *Divine* and infallible: My haste shall not carrie mee from a little Consideration of that too.

Confid. 6.
NUM. I.

Sixtly then, If the Definition of a Generall Councell be *infallible*, then the infallibility of it is either in the *Conclusion*, and in the *Meanes* that prove it; or in the *Conclusion*, not the *Meanes*; or in the *Meanes*, not the *Conclusion*. But it is infallible in none of these. Not in the first, *The Conclusion and the Meanes*: For there are diverse Deliberations in Generall Councils, where the *Conclusion* is *Catholike*; but the *Meanes* by which they prove it, not *infallible*. Not in the second, *The Conclusion, and not the Meanes*: For the *Conclusion* must follow the nature of the *Premisses* or *Principles* out of which it is deduced; therefore if those which the Councell uses be sometimes uncertaine, as is proved before, the *Conclusion* cannot be infallible. Not in the third, *The Meanes, and not the Conclusion*: For that cannot but be true and necessary, if the *Meanes* be so. And this I am sure you will never grant; because if you should, you must deny the *Infallibility* which you seeke to establish.

NUM. 2.

To this (for I confesse the Argument is old, but can

can never be worne out, nor shifted off) your great Master^a Stapleton (who is miserably hamper'd in it, ^{a Relect. Cont. 4. q. 2. ad Argu. 11.} and indeed so are you all) answers, That the *Infallibility* of a Councell is in the second

Course, that is, ^b *It is infallible in the Conclusion, though it be uncertaine and fallible in the Meanes, and Prooffe of it.* How comes this to passe? It is a thing altogether unknowne in *Nature* and *Art* too, That *fallible Principles* can, either father, or mother, beget, or bring forth an *infallible Conclusion*.

^b And herein I must needs Commend your Wisdome. For you have had many Popes so ignorant, grossely ignorant, as that they have beene no way able to sift, and Examine the Meanes. And therefore you doe most advisedly make them infallible in the Conclusion without the Meanes. §. 39. Nu. 8.

Well, that is granted in *Nature*, and in all *Argumentation*, that causes Knowledge. But we shall have Reasons for it: '*First, because the Church is discursive, and uses the weights, and moments of Reason in the Meanes; but is Propheticall, and depends upon immediate Revelation from the Spirit of God, in delivering the Conclusion.* It is but the making of this appeare, and all Controversie is at an end. Well, I will not discourse here, To what end there is any use of Meanes, if the *Conclusion* be *Propheticall*, which yet is justly urged; for no good cause can be assigned of it. If it be *Propheticall* in the Conclusion (I speake still of the *present Church*; for that which included the *Apostles* which had the Spirit of *Prophecie*, and immediate *Revelation*, was ever Propheticke in the Definition, but then that was *Infallible* in the *Meanes* too) Then since it delivers the Conclusion not according to *Nature* and *Art*, that is, out of Principles which can beare it, there must be some *supernaturall Authority* which must deliver this Truth: That (say I) must be the *Scripture*. For if you flie to immediate Revelation now, the *Enthusiasme* must be yours. But the *Scriptures*, which are brought in the

NUM. 3.

^c Ibid. Not. 4.

K k

very

very Exposition of all the Primitive Church, neither say it, nor enforce it. Therefore *Scripture* warrants not your *Propheſie in the Concluſion*. And I know no other thing, that can warrant it. If you think the *Tradition of the Church* can, make the world beholding to you. Produce any *Father* of the Church, that ſayes, This is an *Univerſall Tradition of the Church, That her Definitions in a Generall Councell are Propheſicall, and by immediate Revelation*. Produce any one *Father* that ſayes it of his own Authority, That he thinks ſo : Nay, make it appeare, that ever any *Prophet*, in that which he delivered from God, as *Infallible Truth*, was ever *diſcuſſive at all in the Meanes*. Nay, make it but probable in the ordinary courſe of *Prophecie* (and I hope, you go no higher, nor will I offer at God's abſolute Power) That that which is *diſcuſſive in the Meanes*, can be *Prophetick* in the *Concluſion*, and you ſhall be my great *Apollo* for ever. In the meane time, I have learned this from ^a yours, That all *Prophecie* is by *Vision, Inſpiration, &c.* And that no *Vision* admits *Diſcuſſe* : That all *Prophecie* is an *Illumination*, not alwayes preſent, but when the Word of the ^b Lord came to them, and that was not by *Diſcuſſe*. And yet you ^c ſay againe, That this *Prophetick Infallibility of the Church* is not gotten without *ſtudy and induſtry*. You ſhould do well to tell us too, why God would put his Church to *ſtudy for the Spirit of Prophecie*, which never any *Particular Prophet* was put unto. ^d And whoſoever ſhall ſtudy for it, ſhall do it in vaine, ſince *Prophecie* is a ^e Gift, and can never bee an *acquired Habit*. And there is ſomewhat in it, that *Bellarmino*, in all his *Diſpute for the Authority of Generall Councells*, dares not come at this *Rocke*. ^f He prefers the *Concluſion*, and the *Canon*, before the *Acts* and the *Deliberations of Councells*, and ſo do we: but I do not remember, that ever he ſpeaks out, That the

Concluſion

^a *Prophetae audiebant à Deo interius inspirante. Tho. 2. 2a. q. 5. A. 1. ad 3.*

^b The word of the Lord came unto me, is common in the Prophets. *Stapl. Relect. Cont. 4. q. 2. p. 473.*

^d *Prophetiam Revelationem nullo pacto haberi poſſe, vel ope Nature, vel ſtudii, Contra Avicennam, Algazalem, Averroem, &c. Fran. Picus. 2. Prænot.*

^e 4.

^c 1. *Côr. 12. 10.*

^f *L. 2. de Conc. c. 12.*

Conclusion is delivered by Prophecie, or Revelation. Sure he founded the shore, and found danger here. He did found it: For a little before he speaks plainly (would his bad Cause let him be constant?) **Councils do deduce their Conclusions.* What? from Inspiration? No: *But out of the Word of God, and that per ratiocinationem, by Argumentation:* Neither have they, nor do they write any immediate Revelations.

The second Reason, why ^a*Stapleton* will have it Prophetick in the Conclusion, is, *Because that which is determined by the Church, is matter of Faith, not of Knowledge: And that therefore the Church proposing it to be believed, though it use Meanes, yet it stands not upon Art, or Meanes, or Argument, but the Revelation of the Holy Ghost: Els when we embrace the Conclusion proposed, it should not be an Assent of Faith, but an Habit of Knowledge:* This for the first part (That the Church uses the Meanes, but followes them not) is all one in substance with the former Reason. And for the later part, That then our admitting the Decree of a Council, would be no Assent of Faith, but an Habit of Knowledge; what great inconvenience is there, if it be granted? For I think it is undoubted Truth, That one, and the same Conclusion may be Faith to the Believer; that cannot prove, and Knowledge to the Learned, that can. And ^b*S. Augustine*, I am sure, in regard of one, and the same thing, even this, the very Wisdom of the Church in her Doctrine, ascribes Understanding to one sort of men, and Beliefe to another weaker sort. And *Thomas* goes with him.

Now for further satisfaction, if not of you, yet of others, this may well be thought on. Man lost by sin the Integrity of his Nature, and cannot have Light enough to see the way to Heaven, but by Grace. This Grace was first merited, after given by Christ: this Grace

Kk 2

* *Concilia non habent, neque scribunt immediatas Revelaciones. &c. sed ex Verbo Dei per ratiocinationem deducunt Conclusiones.* Bellar. l. 2. de Concil. A. 12. §. At Concilia non.

NUM. 4. ^a *Stap. 9b. p. 374*

^b *Cont. Fund. c. 4. Tho. p. 1. q. 2. A. 2. ad 1. Nihil prohibet illud, quod secundum se demonstrabile est, & scibile, ab aliquo accipi ut Credibile, qui Demonstrationem non capit.*

NUM. 5.

is

is first kindled in *Faith*; by which, if we agree not to some *Supernaturall Principles*, which no *Reason* can demonstrate simply, we can never see our way. But this *Light*, when it hath made *Reason* submit it self, clears the *Eye of Reason*, it never puts it out. In which sense, it may be, is that of ^a *Optatus*, *That the very Catholike Church it selfe is reasonable, as well as diffused every where.* By which ^b *Reason* inlightened (which is stronger then *Reason*) the Church in all Ages hath beene able, either to convert, or convince, or at least ^c *stop the mouthes of Philosophers*, and the great men of *Reason*, in the very Point of *Faith*, where it is at highest. To the present occasion then. The first, immediate, *Fundamentall Points of Faith*, without which there is no salvation, as they cannot be proved by *Reason*, so neither need they be determined by any *Councell*, nor ever were they attempted, they are so plaine set downe in the *Scripture*. If about the *sense*, and true meaning of these, or necessary *deduction* out of these *Prime Articles of Faith*, *Generall Councils* determine any thing, as they have done in *Nice*, and the rest; there is no inconvenience, that one and the same *Canon* of the *Councell* should be believed, as it reflects upon the *Articles* and *Grounds indemonstrable*; and ^d yet knowne to the Learned, by the Meanes and Proofs, by which that *Deduction* is vouched, and made good. And againe, the *Conclusion* of a *Councell*, suppose that in *Nice*, about the *Consubstantiality of Christ with the Father*, in it selfe considered, is indemonstrable by *Reason*; There I believe, and assent in *Faith*: But the same *Conclusion*, ^e if you give me the *Ground of Scripture*, and the *Creed* (and somewhat must be supposed in all, whether *Faith*, or *Knowledge*) is demonstrable by naturall *Reason*, against any *Arrian* in the world. And if it be demonstrable, I may know it, and have an Ha' it

^a L. 3. Rationalis & ubique diffusa.

^b Ut in ista fide valentiores facti, quod credimus intelligere mereamur, non jam hominibus, sed Deo intrinsecus mentem nostram firmante & illuminante. S. Aug. cont. Epist. Fundamenti. c. 14.

^c Omnia genera Ingeniorum subdita Scripturae. S. Aug. L. 2. cont. Faust. cap. 96.

^d Almain. 3. D. 24. q. 1. & Tho. 2. 2e. q. 1. & A. 5. C. Id quod est scitum ab uno homine etiam in statu vie, est ab alio Creditum, qui hoc Demonstrare non novit.

^e Concilium Nicenum deduxit Conclusionem ex Scripturis. Bel. l. r. 2. de Concil. c. 12. S. Sicetiam.

of it. And what inconvenience in this? For the weaker sort of Christians, which cannot deduce, when they have the *Principle* granted, they are to rest upon the *Definition* only, and their Assent is *meere Faith*: yea, and the *Learned* too, where there is not a *Demonstration* evident to them, assent by *Faith* onely and not by *knowledge*. And what inconvenience in this? Nay, the necessity of Nature is such, that these Principles once given, the understanding of man cannot rest, but it must be thus. And the † *Apostle* would † S. Pet. 3. 15. never have required a man to be able to give a Reason, and an account of the hope that is in him, if he might not be able to know his account, or have lawfull interest to give it, when he knew it, without prejudicing his *Faith* by his knowledge. And suppose exact knowledge and *meere Believe* cannot stand together in the same *Person*, in regard of the same thing, by the same means, yet that doth not make void this *Truth*. For where is that exact knowledge, or in whom, that must not meere, in points of *Faith*, believe the *Article*, or Ground upon which they rest? But when that is once believed, it can demonstrate many things from it. And *Definitions* of Councils are not *Principia Fidei*, Principles of Faith, but Deductions from them.

And now because you aske, *Wherein are we nearer* *Consid. 7.* *to unity by a Councell, if a Councell may erre?* *Num. 1.* Besides the Answer given, I promised to *consider* which Opinion was most agreeable with the Church, which most able to preserve, or reduce Christian Peace: The *Romane*, That a Councell cannot erre; Or the *Protestants*, That it can. And this I propose not as a *Rule*, but leave the Christian world to *consider* of it, as I doe.

First then I *Consider*, Whether in those Places of *Num. 2.* Scripture before mentioned, or any other, there bee promised to the pretent Church an *absolute Infallibility*?

* *Relat. Cont.*
4. q. 2. Notab. 3
Exacta & Om-
nimodā Infalli-
bilitate non indi-
get, sed satis est
semel acceptis.
c. c.

^a *L. 2 de Con. c.*
12. S. ult. Cum
utraq; sint in-
fallibilis veri-
tatis, æquē certa
dici possunt.

NUM. 3.

^b *Nam si Ecclesia Vniuersitati non est da-*
ta ulla Auctoritas; ergo nec Concilio Ge-
nerali, quatenus Ecclesiam Vniuersalem
repræsentat. Bellar. L. 2. de Concil. c. 16.
S. Quod si Ecclesie.

^c *Petrus personam Ecclesie Catholice su-*
stinet, & huic data sunt claves, quum
Petro data. De Agon. Chr. c. 30.

Or whether such an Infallibility will not serue the turne, as * Stapleton ; after much wrigling, is forced to acknowledge? One not every way exact : because it is enough, if the Church doe diligently insist upon that which was once received : and there is not need of so great certainty to open and explicate that which lyes hid in the seed of Faith sowne, and deduce from it ; as to seeke out, and teach that which was altogether unknowne. And if this be so, then sure the Church of the Apostles required guidance by a greater degree of Infallibility, then the present Church ; which yet, if it follow the Scripture, is Infallible enough, though it hath not the same degree of Certainty which the Apostles had, and the Scripture hath. Nor can I tell, what to make of Bellarmine, that in a whole Chapter disputes five Prerogatives, in Certainty of Truth, ^a that the Scripture hath above a Councell ; and at last Concludes, That They may be said to be equally certain in Infallible Truth.

The next thing I Consider, is : Suppose this not Exact, but congruous Infallibility in the Church ; Is it not residing according to Power and Right of Authority in the whole Church, and in a Generall Councell, on-

ly by Power deputed^b ; with Mandate to determine? The Places of Scripture, with Expositions of the Fathers upon them, make me apt to believe this. S. Peter (saith S. Augustine^c) did not receive the Keyes of the Church, but as sustaining the Person of

the Church. Now for this Particular, suppose the Key of Doctrine be to let in Truth, and shut out Error ; and suppose the Key rightly used, infallible in this : yet this Infallibility is primely in the Church ; in whose person, (not strictly, in his owne) S. Peter received the Keyes. But here Stapleton layes crosse my way againe, and would

would thrust me out of this *Consideration*. He * grants that S. Peter received these *Keyes* indeed, and in the *Person of the Church*; but (saith he) that was, because he was *Primate of the Church*; And therefore the Church received the *Keyes* finally, but S. Peter formally: that is (if I mistake him not) S. Peter for himselfe and his Successors received the *Keyes* in his owne *Right*; but to this end, to benefit the Church, of which he was made *Pastor*. But I keepe in my *Consideration* still, and I would have this considered, whether it be ever read in any *Classicke Author*, That to receive a thing in the *Person of another*, or sustaining the *Person of another*, is onely meant finally to receive it, that is, to his good, and not in his *Right*. I should thinke, he that receives any thing in the *Person of another*, receives it indeed to his good, and to his use, but in his right too: And that the *primary* and *formall right* is not in the receiver, but in him whose person he sustaines, while he receives it. A man purchases Land, and takes possession of it by an *Attourney*. I hope the † *Attourney* being the hand to receive it *Instrumentally*, and no more, shall take nor Use nor right from the Purchaser. A Man marries a Wife by a * *Proxy* (This is not unusuall among great Persons) But I hope he that hath the *Proxy*, and receives the woman with the Ceremonies of Mariage in the Others Name, must also leave her to be the Others Wife, who gave him power to receive her for him. This stumoling blocke then is nothing: and in my *Consideration* it stands still, That the Church in General by the hands of the Apostles and their Successors received the *Keyes*, and all Power signified by them, and by the assistance of Gods Spirit may be able to use them,

but

* *Rel. Cont. 6. 9. 3. A. 5. Sed propter Primum quem gerebat Ecclesia, ideoque et finaliter Ecclesia accipit, tamen formaliter Petrus accipit.*

† *Non est idem possidere, & alieno Nomine possidere. Nam possidet, cuius nom. ine possidetur. Procurator aliena rei prestat Ministerium, L. Quod meo, 18. in Princ. H. de acquir. Possess. Celsus.*

* *Quando Matrimonium fit per Procuratorem. — Procurator est tantum, Consensio sine qua non. Sanchez de matrim. L. 2. Dispnt. 11. q. 4. Nu. 28. p. 128.*

but still in and by the same hands, and perhaps to open, and shut in some things infallibly, when the Pope, and a Generall Councell too (forgetting both her, and her Rule, the Scripture) are to seek how to turne these Keyes in their wards.

NUM. 4.

The third Particular, I Consider, is : Suppose in the whole Catholike Church Militant, an *absolute Infallibility* in the Prime Foundations of Faith, *absolutely necessary* to Salvation ; and that this Power of not erring so , is

* Non omnia illa quæ tradit Ecclesia sub Definitione judiciali (i. in Concilio) sunt de Necessitate Salutis credenda, sed illa duntaxat quæ sic tradit concurrente Univerſali totius Ecclesiæ consensu, implicite, vel explicitè, verè, vel interpretative. Gerson. Tract. de Declaratione veritatum quæ credende sunt &c. §. 4. par. 1. p. 414.

† Possit tamen contingere quod quamvis Generale Concilium definiret aliquid contra Fidem, Ecclesia Dei non exponeretur periculo. Quia possit contingere quod congregati in Concilio Generali essent pauci & viles tam in re, quam in hominum reputatione, respectu illorum qui ad illud Concilium Generale minime convenissent. Et tunc illorum leviter Error extirparetur per multitudinem meliorum & sapientiorum & famosiorum illis. Quibus etiam multitudo simplicium adhereret magis. &c. Och. Dial. P. 3. l. 3. c. 13.

‡ Many of these were potent at Ariminum, and Seleucia.

§ Determinationibus quæ à Concilio, vel Pontifice Summo fiunt super iis dubitationibus, quæ substantiam fidei concernunt, necessario credendum est, dum Univerſalis Ecclesia non reclamet. Fr. Pic. Mirand. Theor. 8.

not * communicable to a Generall Councell, which represents it, but that the Councell is subject to error: This supposition doth not onely preserve that w^{ch} you desire in the Church, an *Infallibility*, but it meets wth all inconveniences, w^{ch} usually have done, and daily do perplex the Church. And here is still a Remedy for all things. For if *Private* respects, if * *Bandies* in a Faction, if power, and favour of some parties, if weaknesse of them which have the managing, if any unfit mixture of State Councils, if any departure from the Rule of the Word of God, if any thing else sway and wrench the Councell; the Whole ^a Church upon evidence found in expresse Scripture, or demonstration of this miscarriage, hath power to represent her selfe

in another Body, or Councell, and to take order for what was amisse, either practised, or concluded. So here is a meanes without any infringing any lawfull Authority of the Church, to preserve or reduce unity, and yet grant, as I did, and as the ^b Church of England doth,

^b Artic. 21.

doth. That a Generall Councell may erre, And this course the Church heretofore took, for she did cal, and represent her self in a new Councell, and define against the *Heretical Conclusions* of the former: as in the case at *Ariminum*, and the second of *Ephesus*, is evident: And in other Councels named by † *Bellarmino*. Now the Church is never more cunningly abused, then when men out of this Truth, that she may erre, infer this falshood, that she is not to be Obedied. For it will never follow, She may erre, Therefore She may not Govern. For he that sayes, Obey them which have the Rule over you, and submit yourselves, for they watch for your soules ^a *Heb. 13*. Commands Obedience, and expressly ascribes Rule to the Church. And this is not only a *Pastorall Power*, to teach and direct, but a *Prætorian* also, to Controll and Censure too, where Errors or Crimes are against *Points Fundamentall*, or of great Consequence. Els *S. Paul* would not have given the Rule for *Excommunication*, *1 Cor. 5*. Nor *Christ* himselfe have put the man that will not heare and Obey the Church into the place and condition of an *Ethnick* and a *Publican*, as he doth, *S. Mat. 18*. And *Salomon's* Rule is generall, and he hath it twice: My Son, forsake not the teaching or instruction of thy Mother. Now this is either spoked and meant of a naturall Mother; And her Authority over Children is confirmed, *Ecclus. 3*. And the foole will be ashamed of him, that despiseth her, *Prov. 15*: Or 'tis extended also to our Mysticall and Spirituall Mother, the Church. And so the *Genev.*^b Note upon the Place expresses: And I cannot but incline to this Opinion; For since the Blessings which accompany this Obedience are so many and great, as that they are not like to be the fruits of Obedience to a Naturall Mother only, as *Salomon* expresses them all, *Prov. 6*. And in all this, here's no Exception of the Mothers erring. For *Mater* errans*, an erring Mother looses

† *Bel. L. 2. de Concil. c. 16. §. Tertio, Concilium sine Papâ.*

^a *Heb. 13. 17.*

1 Cor. 5. 5.

S. Mat. 18. 17.

Prov. 1. 8. and Prov. 6. 20. (Via. S. Aug. 2. Conf. e. 3.) Ecclus. 3. 3. Prov. 15. 20.

^b *Forsake not thy Mothers instruction, that is, the Teaching of the Church, where in the faithfull are begotten by the incorruptible seed of Gods Word, Annot. in Prov. 1. 8. *Prov. 6. 22.*

L I

neither

neither the *right* nor the *power* of a Mother by her *error*. And I marvell what Sonne should shew reverence or Obedience, if no Mother, that hath erred, might exact it. 'Tis true, the Sonne is not to follow his *Mothers error*, or his *Mother into Error*. But 'tis true too, 'tis a grievous crime in a Sonne to cast off all obedience to his Mother, because at some time, or in some things she hath fallen into error. And howsoever, *this Consideration* meetes with this Inconvenience, as well as the rest, For suppose (as I said) in the whole Catholike Militant Church, an *absolute Infallibility* in the prime Foundations of Faith absolutely necessary to Salvation: And then, though the *Mother Church*, Provinciall, or Nationall may erre, yet if the *Grand-Mother*, the whole Vniverfall Church cannot in these necessary things, all remaines safe, and all Occasions of *Disobedience* taken from the possibility of the Churches erring, are quite taken away. Nor is this *Mother* lesse to be valued by her Children, because in some smaller things age had filled her face fuller of wrinkles. For where 'tis said, that *Christ makes to himselfe a Church with-*

Ephes. 5. 27.

out spot or wrinkle Eph. 5. That is not understood of the

** In id progrediuntur (Pelagiani) ut dicant vitam Iustorum in hoc seculo nullum omnino habere peccatum, & ex his Ecclesiam Christi in hac mortalitate perfici, ut sit omnino sine macula & ruga. Quasi non sit Christi Ecclesia, quæ in toto terrarum orbe clamat ad Deum: Dimitte nobis debita nostra, &c. S. Aug. L. de Haeresibus, Her. 88.*

Church Militant, but of the *Church Triumphant*. * And to maintaine the contrary, is a Branch of the spreading Heresy of Pelagianisme. Nor is the Church on earth any freer from wrinkles in Doctrine, and Discipline, then she is from Spots in Life and Conversation.

Num. 5.

The next thing I consider, is: Suppose a Generall Councell infallible in all things which are of Faith: If it prove not so, but that an *Error in the Faith* be concluded; the same *erring Opinion* that makes it thinke it selfe *infallible*, makes the *Error* of it seeme *irrevocable*.

And

And when Truth, which lay hid, shall be brought to light, the Church (who was lulled to sleepe by the opinion of *Infallibility*) is left open to all manner of Distractions, as it appears at this day. And that a Council may erre (besides all other instances, which are not few) appears by that *Error of the Council* of *Constance*. And one Instance is enough to overthrow a *Generall*, be it a *Council*.^a *Christ* instituted the Sacrament of his Body and Blood in both Kinde.

To breake *Christs Institution*, is a damnable Error, and so confessed by *Stapleton*. The Council is bold, and defines peremptorily, That to communicate in both kinds, is not necessary, with a Non obstante to the Institution of *Christ*. Consider now with me, Is this an Error, or not? ^d *Bellarmino*, and *Stapleton*, and you too, say 'tis not; because to receive under both kinds is not by *Divine Right*. No? no sure. For it was not *Christs* Precept, but his Example. Why, but I had thought, *Christs Institution* of a Sacrament had beene more then his Example only, and as binding for the *Necessaries* of a Sacrament, the Mat-

ter and Forme, ^e as a Precept: Therefore speake out, and deny it to bee *Christs Institution*, or els grant with *Stapleton*, It is a damnable Error to goe against it. If you can prove, that *Christs Institution* is not as binding to us as a Precept (which you shall never be able) take the Precept with it, ^g *Drinke ye All of this*, which though you shift as you can, yet you can never make it other then it is, A binding Precept. But *Bellarmino* hath yet one better Devise then this, to save the Council. He saith, it is a meere Calumny, and that the Council hath no such thing; That the Non obstante hath no reference to Receiving under both kinds, but to the time of receiving it, after Supper; in which the Council saith, the Custome of the Church is to be observed, Non obstante

L 1 2

notwithstanding

^a *Act*, 13.^b *S. Matth.* 26.
¹ *Cor.* 11. 23.^c *Returne of Vn-*
truths upon Mr.
Jewell, Ar. 2. un-
truth, 49.^d 4. *De Eucha-*
rist. c. 26.^e *Bellarmino*, *ibid.*
S. Vicefimo pro-
ferunt.^f And now lately in a Catechisme printed at *Paris*, 1637. without the Authors Name, 'tis twice affirmed thus. *The Institution of a Sacrament is of it selfe a Command.* Conference, 14. p. 244. And againe, p. 260. *Institution is a Precept.*^g *S. Matth.* 26.
¹ *Cor.* 11.*Μεμνημένοι τοῦ σώματος τοῦ αἵματος ἐν τῷ κύπελλῳ*
S. Chrysost.

notwithstanding Christs Example. How foule Bellarmine is in this, must appeare by the Words of the Councell,

** Licet Christus post Cœnam instituerit, & suis Discipulis administraverit sub utrâque specie Panis & Vini hoc venerabile Sacramentum, tamen hoc Non obstante, non debet confici post Cœnam, nec recipi nisi a jejunis. (Here Bellarmine stayes, and goes no farther, but the Councell goes on.) Et similiter quod licet in Primitivâ Ecclesiâ Sacramenta recipientur sub utrâque specie à fidelibus, tamen hac Consuetudo, ut à Laicis sub specie Panis tantum suscipiatur, habenda est pro Lege, quam non licet reprobare, Et asserere hanc esse illicitam, est Erroneum, Et pertinaciter asserentes sunt arcendi tanquam Heretici. Sess. 13.*

which are these. * Though Christ instituted this venerable Sacrament, and gave it his Disciples after Supper under both kindes of Bread and Wine, yet, Non obstante, notwithstanding this, it ought not to be Consecrated after Supper, nor received but fasting. And likewise, that though in the Primitive Church this Sacrament was received by the faithfull under both kindes, yet this Custome, that it should be received by Lay-men only under the kinde of Bread, is to be held for a Law, which may not be re-

fused. And to say, this is an unlawfull Custome of Receiving under one kinde, is erroneous; and they which persist in saying so, are to be punished, and driven out as Heretiks. Now, where is here any slander of the Councell? The words are plaine, and the Non obstante must necessarily (for ought I can yet see) be referred to both Clauses in the words following, because both Clauses went before it, & hath as much force against Receiving under both kindes, as against receiving after Supper. Yea, and the after-words of the Councell couple both together, in this Reference; for it followes, *Et similiter, And so likewise, that though in the Primitive Church &c.* And a man by the Definition of this Councell, may be an Heretike, for standing to Christs Institution, in the very matter of the Sacrament: And the Churches Law for One kinde may not be refused, but Christs Institution under Both kindes may. And yet this Councell did not erre; No, take heede of it.

NUM. 6.

But your opinion is more Unreasonable then this: for consider any Body Collective, be it more, or lesse Universal, whensoever it assembles it selfe, did it ever give more power to the Representing Body of it, then binding power upon

upon all particulars, and it self? And did it ever give this power otherwise, then with this *Reservation in Nature*, That it would call againe and reforme, yea, and if need were, abrogate any *Law*, or *Ordinance* upon just cause made evident, that this *Representing Body* had failed in *Trust*, or *Truth*? And this Power no *Body Collective*, Ecclesiasticall, or Civill can put out of it selfe, or give away to a *Parliament*, or *Councell*, or call it what you will, that represents it. Nay, in my *Consideration* it holds strongest in the Church. For a *Councell* hath power to order, settle, and Define differences arisen concerning *Faith*. This Power the *Councell* hath not by any immediate *Institution* from Christ, but it was prudently taken up in the Church, from the * *Apostles Example*. So that to hold Councells to this end; is apparent *Apostolicall Tradition* written: but the Power, which Councells so held have, is from the whole Catholike Church, whose members they are, and the Churches power from God. And† this Power the Church cannot farther give away to a Generali Councel, then that the Decrees of it shall binde all Particulars, and it self, but not binde the whole Church from calling againe, and in the After-Calls, upon just cause to order, yea, and if neede be, to abrogate former Acts. I say upon just cause. For if the Councel be lawfully called, and proceed orderly, and conclude according to the *Rule*, the *Scripture*, the whole Church cannot but approve the Councell, and then the *Definitions* of it, are Binding. And the Power of the Church hath no wrong in this, so long as no Power, but her own may meddle or offer to infringe any Definition of hers made in her *Representative Body*, a Lawfull Generall Councell. And certaine it is, no Power, but her owne may doe it. Nor doth this open any gap to private Spirits. For all Decisions in such a Councell, are binding: And because the Whole Church can meete no other way, the

* Act. 15. In Novo Testamento Exemplum celebrationis Conciliorum ab Apostolis habemus. &c. Ioh. de Turrecremata Sum. de Eccl. L. 3. c. 2. Et firmitas Conciliorum nititur Exemplis primi Concilii, Staple. Relict. Contr. 6. 9. 3. A. 4. Ad 3um.

† This is more reasonable a great deale then that of Bellarmine, 2. de Conc. c. 18. Pontificem non posse se subicere sententiae coactivae Conciliorum.

Councell shall remaine the Supreme, Externall, Living, Temporary, Ecclesiasticall Iudge of all Controversies. Only the whole Church, and she alone hath power, when Scripture or Demonstration is found, and peaceably tendered to her, to represent her selfe againe in a new Councell, and in it to order what was amisse.

NUM. 7.

^a Bellar. *L. 2. de Conciliis*, c. 16. & 17.

^b Canus *lib. 6. de Locis*, cap. 8. S. Et quidem in. Pontifices summi in Conclusione errare nequeunt, Rationes autem. &c.

[†] *Relect. Con. 6. q. 3. Art. 5. & ibid.* Quia ad compescendos importunos Hæreticos Concilii Generalis Definitio illustrior est &c. Et vulgo hominum magis satisfaciunt. &c.

^{*} 4. de Rom. Pont. c. 3. S. At contra, Nam. Ex quo apparet totam firmitatem Conciliorum Legitimorum esse à Pontifice, non partim a Pontifice, partim à Concilio.

Nay, your Opinion is yet more unreasonable: For you doe not only make the Definition of a Generall Councell, but the Sentence of the Pope infallible, nay more infallible then it. ^a For any Generall Councell may erre with you, if the Pope confirme it not. So be like this Infallibility rests not in the Representative Body, the Councell, nor in the Whole Body, the Church, but in your Head of the Church, the Pope of Rome. Now I may aske you, to what end such a trouble for a Generall Councell? Or wherin are we neerer to Unity, if the Pope confirme it not? You answer (though not in the Conference, yet elswhere) That the Pope erres not, especially giving Sentence in a Generall Councell. And why especially? Doth the Deliberation of a Councell helpe any thing to the Conclusion? Surely not in your Opinion: For you hold the Conclusion Propheticall, the Meanes fallible: and fallible Deliberations cannot advance to a Prophetik Conclusion. And just as the Council is in Stapletons Iudgment, for the Definition and the Proofes; so is the Pope, in the Iudgment of ^b Melch. Canus, and them which followed him, Propheticall in the Conclusion. The Councell then is called but only in effect to heare the Pope give his Sentence in more state. Els what meanes this of [†] Stapleton: The Pope by a Councell joyned unto him, acquires no new Power, or Authority, or Certainty in judging, no more then a Head is the wiser by joyning the Offices of the rest of the members to it, then it is without them? Or this of ^{*} Bellar. That all the firmesse and infallibility of a Generall Councell is only from the Pope,

not

not partly from the Pope, and partly from the Councell? So, belike the Presence is necessary, not the Assistance: Which opinion is the most groundlesse, and worthlesse, that ever offered to take possession of the Christian Church. And I am perswaded, many Learned Men among your selves scorne it at the very heart. And I avow it, I have heard some Learned and Iudicious Romane Catholikes utterly condemne it. And well they may. For no man can affirme it, but he shall make himselfe a scorne to all the Learned Men of Christendome, whose Iudgements are not Captivated by Romane Power. And for my owne part, I am cleare of ^a Jacobus Almain's Opinion: And a great wonder it is to me, That they which affirme the Pope cannot erre, do not affirme likewise, that he cannot sinne. And I verily believe they would be bold enough to affirme it, did not the daily Workes of the Popes compell them to believe the Contrary. For very many of them have led lives quite Contrary to the Gospell of Christ. Nay, such lives, as no Epicurean Monster storied out to the world hath out-gone them in sensuality, or other grosse Impiety, if their owne Historians be true. Take your choice of ^b John the thirteenth, about the yeare 966. Or of Sylvester the second, about the yeare 999. Or John the eighteenth, about the yeare 1003. Or Benedict the ninth, about the yeare 1033. Or Boniface the eighth, about the yeare 1294, Or Alexander the sixt, about the yeare 1492. And yet these, and their like, must be infallible in their Dictates and Conclusions of Faith. Do your owne believe it? Surely no: For ^c Alphonsus à Castro tels us plainly, That he doth not believe, that any man can be so grosse and impudent a flatterer of the Pope, as to attribute this unto him, that he can

^a Et mirum est quod aliqui non videntur esse ita simplices, ut credant, quod Pontifex non possit errare, nisi per divina Summa ad credenda dixerint. Almain. de Ambr. 10. p. 10.

^b plinius. Os. nup. 10. p. 10.

^c Non enim credo aliquem prudentem Papa Assentatorum, ut ei tribuere hoc velit, ut in Interpretatione SS. L. nari possit. Alphons. Advers. Hares. c. 4. confelles it pla. A recta ergo.

et adeo impudens, ut ei tribuere hoc velit, ut in Interpretatione SS. L. nari possit. Alphons. Advers. Hares. c. 4. confelles it pla. A recta ergo.

† *Harding his
Detection of Er-
rors against
Iewell. p. 64.*

* *Celestinus er-
ravit non solum
ut privata per-
sona, sed ut Pa-
pa, &c. Alph. à
Castro. L. 1. adv.
Heres. c. 4. Ibid.*

† *ἵνα καὶ γὰρ πεποι-
θὼς ὡς ἀδυνατείτων
καὶ ὡς ἐξ ὁρίσ κα-
νεύειν μοι. Li-
berius in Epist.
ad Athanas.
apud Atha-
nas. To. 1. p. 42.
Edit. Parisiens.
1608. Et Edit.
Paris. Latino-
Græc. 1627.*

neither erre, nor mistake in expounding the Holy Scripture. This comes home; And therefore it may well be thought it hath taken a shrewd Purge. For these words are Expresse in the Edition at Paris 1534. But they are not to be found in that at *Colen* 1539. Nor in that at *Antwerp*, 1556. Nor in that at *Paris*, 1571. † *Harding* sayes indeed, *Alphonsus* left it out, of himselfe, in the following Editions. Well: First, *Harding* sayes this, but proves it not; so I may chuse whether I will believe him, or no. Secondly, bee it so, that hee did, that cannot helpe their Cause a whit. For say hee did dislike the sharpnesse of the Phrase, or ought els in this speech, yet he alter'd not his judgment of the thing. For in all these later Editions he speakes as home, if not more then in the first; and sayes Expresse, * *That the Pope may erre, not onely as a private person, but as Pope.* And in difficult Cases he adds, That the Pope ought to Consult *Viros doctos*, men of Learning. And this also was the Opinion of the Ancient Church of Christ concerning the Pope and his Infallibility. For thus *Liberius*, and he a Pope himselfe, writes to *Athanasius*. Brother *Athanasius*, if you thinke in the presence of God, and Christ, as I doe, I pray subscribe this Confession, which is thought to be the true Faith of the Holy, Catholike, and Apostolike Church, that we may be the more certaine, that you thinke concerning the Faith as We doe. † *Vt ego etiam persuasus sim inhaesitantè, That I also may be perswaded without all doubting of those things which you shall be pleased to Command me.* Now I would faine know, if the Pope at that time were, or did thinke himselfe Infalible, how he should possibly be more certainly perswaded of any Truth belonging to the Faith by *Athanasius* his Concurring in judgment with him. For nothing can make Infallibility more certaine then it is: At least, not the Concurring Iudgement of

that is *Fallible*, as *S. Athanasius* was. Beside the *Pope* Complemented exceeding low, that would submit his unerring Iudgement to bee Comanded by *Athanasius*, who, hee well knew, could Erre.

Againe in the Case of *Easter* (which

made too great a noyse in the Church of old) ^a *Very many men*

called for *S. Ambrose* his Iudgement

in that Point, even after the Defi-

nition of the Church of *Alexandria*,

and the *Bishop of Rome*. And this I presume they

would not have done, had they then conceived

either the *Pope*, or his Church *Infallible*. And thus

it continued downe till *Lyra's*

time. For he sayes expressly, ^b *That*

many Popes as well as other Inferiours,

have not onely erred, but even quite

Apostatized from the Faith. And

yet now nothing but *Infallibility*

will serve their turnes. And sometimes they have

not onely taken upon them to bee *Infallible in Ca-*

thedrà, in their Chaire of Decision, but also to

Prophecie *Infallibly* out of the *Scripture*. But *Pro-*

pheticall Scripture (such as the *Revelation* is) was

too dangerous for men to meddle with, which

would bee carefull of their Credit in not Erring.

For it fell out in the time of *Innocent the third*, and

Honorius the third, (as ^c *Aventine*

tels us) *That the then Popes assured*

the world, that Destruction was at

hand to Saracens, Turks, and Ma-

humerans, which, the Event shewed, were notorious

untruths. And tis remarkeable which happened

Anno 1179. For then in a Councell held at *Rome*, *Pope*

Alexander the third Condemned *Peter Lombard* of

^a *Post Egyptiorum supputationes Alexandrine Ecclesie definitionem, Episcopi quoque Romane Ecclesie per iteras plerique meam adhuc expectant sententiam, quid existimem de die Pasche.* *S. Ambrosi, L. 10. Epist. 83.*

^b *Ex hoc patet quod Ecclesia non consistit in hominibus ratione Potestatis vel Dignitatis Ecclesiastica, vel secularis, quia multi Principes & summi Pontifices, & alii inferiores inventi sunt Apostatasse à Fide, &c.* *Lyra in S. Matth. 16. 18.*

^c *Rom. Pontifices ex S. Historia, &c. Que mendacissima esse exitus probavi.* *Aventin. Annal. Boiorum. L. 7. p. 529.* *Edit. Basil. 1580.*

Baron. An. 1179. N. 13.

Hereſie : And he lay under that *Damnation* for thirty and ſixe yeares, till *Innocent the third* reſtored him, and condemned his *Accuſers*. Now *Peter Lombard* was then *Condemned* for ſome thing which hee had written about the *humane Nature* of our Saviour *Chriſt*. So here was a great *Mystery of the Faith* in hand; ſomething about the *Incarnation*. And the *Pope* was in *Cathedrâ*, and that in a *Councell* of three hundred *Archbishops* and *Bishops*. And in this *Council* he condemned *Peter Lombard*, and, in him, his *Opinion* about the *Incarnation* : And therefore of neceſſity either *Pope Alexander* erred, and that in *Cathedrâ*, as *Pope*, in *Condemning* him : Or *Pope Innocentius*, in reſtoring him. The truth is, *Pope Alexander* had more of *Alexander the Great*, then of *S. Peter* in him. And being accuſtomed to warlike *Imployments*, he underſtood not that which *Peter Lombard* had written about this *Mystery* : And ſo He, and his *Learned Aſſiſtants* *Condemned* him unjuſtly.

NUM. 8.

* *Apud A. C. p.*
68.

And whereas you profeſſe* after, *That you hold nothing againſt your Conſcience*. I muſt ever wonder much, how that can be true, ſince you hold this of the *Pope's Infallibility*, eſpecially as being *Prophetical* in the *Concluſion*. If this be true, why doe you not lay all your ſtrength together, all of your whole *Society*, and make this one *Propoſition* evident? For all *Controverſies* about matters of *Faith* are ended, and without any great trouble to the *Chriſtian World*, if you can but make this one *Propoſition* good, *That the Pope is an Infallible Iudge*. Till then, this ſhame will follow you infallibly, and eternally, *That you ſhould make the Pope, a meere man, Principium Fidei, a Principle, or Authour of Faith*; and make the mouth of him, whom you call *Chriſt's Vicar*, ſole *Iudge*, both of *Chriſt's Word*, be it never ſo manifeſt, and

and of his Church, be she never so Learned, and carefull of his Truth. And for Conclusion of this Point, I would faine know (since this had beene so plaine, so easie a way, either to prevent all Divisions about the Faith, or to end all Controversies, did they arise) why this brieve, but most necessary Proposition, *The Bishop of Rome cannot erre in his Iudiciall Determinations concerning the Faith*, is not to be found either in Letter, or sense, in any Scripture, in any Councell, or in any Father of the Church, for the full space of a thousand yeares and more after Christ? For had this Proposition been true, and then received in the Church, how weake were all the Primitive Fathers, to prescribe so many Rules and Cautions for avoydance of Heresie, as Tertullian, and Vincentius Lirinensis, and others do, and to indure such hard Conflicts, as they did, and with so many various Hereticks; To see Christendome so rent, and torne by some distempered Councels, as that of Ariminum, the second of Ephesus, and others; Nay to see the whole world almost become Arrian, to the amazement of it selfe; And yet all this time not so much as call in this Necessary Assistance of the Pope, and let the world know, That the Bishop of Rome was infallible; that so in his Decision all differences might cease? For either the Fathers of the Church, Greeke, as well as Latine, knew this Proposition to be true, That the Pope cannot Erre Iudicially in matters belonging to the Faith, or they knew it not. If you say they knew it not; you charge them with a base, and unworthy Ignorance, no wayes like to over-cloud such, and so many Learned men, in a Matter so Necessary, and of such infinite use to Christendome. If you say they knew it, and durst not deliver this Truth, how can you charge them which durst die for Christ, with such Cowardise towards his Church?

And if you say they knew it and with-held it from the Church, you lay a most unjust Load upon those *Charitable Soules*, which loved Christ too well to imprison any Truth, but likely to make or keepe peace in his Church Catholike over the world. But certainly, as no

^a The wilde Extent of the Popes Infallibility and Jurisdiction is a Mistake. These are the Words of a Great *Romane Catholike* uttered to my selfe. But I will spare his Name, because he is living; and I will not draw your Envy upon him.

^b Puto quod ipsi etiam rideant, quum hoc audiunt, & tamen nisi hoc dicant, quod erubescant si dicant, non habent omnino quod dicant. Sed quid ad nos? Nemo in-videmus. Legant nobis hoc de Scripturis Sanctis, & credimus. S. August. de Vnit. Eccl. c. 17.

Divine of worth did then dreame of any such Infallibility in Him, so is it a meere dreame, or worse, of those *Moderne Divines*, who affirme it now ^a. And as ^b S. Augustine sometimes spake of the *Donatists*, and their absurd limiting the whole *Christian Church* to Africa onely; so may I truly say of the *Romanists* confining all *Christianity* to the Ro-

mane Doctrine, governed by the *Pope's Infallibility*: I verily perswade my selfe, That even the *Jesuites* themselves laugh at this. And yet unlesse they say this, which they cannot but blush while they say, they have nothing at all to say. But what's this to us? we envy no man! If the *Pope's* Decision bee infallible, Legant, Let them read it to us out of the Holy Scripture, and wee'l believe it.

NUM. 9.
^c Papa non solum
Errore Personali,
sed & Errore
Iudiciali potest
errare in Mate-
ria Fidei. Al-
main. L. de Au-
thor. Eccles. c. 10.

In the meane time, take this with you, that most certaine it is, That the *Pope* hath no Infal-
libility to attend his *Cathedrall Iudgement* in Things
belonging to the Faith. For first, besides the
silence of *Impartiall Antiquity*, Diverse of your
Owne confesse it, yea and proove it too, by sun-
dry Instances.

NUM. 10.
^d L. 2. de Regm.
Pont c. 30.
^e Si sit à Fide de-
vius. Diff. 40.
Can. Si Papa.

Secondly, there is a great Question among the
Learned, both *School-men* and *Controversers*, Whether
the *Pope* comming to bee an Hereticke may bee Deposed?
And 'tis learnedly disputed by ^d Bellarmine. The Opi-
nions are different. For the ^e Canon-Law saies expressly,
He

He may be judged and deposed by the Church in Case of Heresie. † lo. de Turrecremata is of Opinion, That the Pope is to be deposed by the Church so soone as he becomes an Hereticke, though as yet not a manifest one; Because he is already deposed by Divine Right. And recites another opinion, that the Pope cannot be deposed, though he fall into secret or manifest Heresie. * Cajetan thinkes that the Pope cannot be deposed, but for a manifest Heresie, and that then he is not deposed ipso facto, but must be deposed by the Church. † Bellarmine owne Opinion is, That if the Pope become a manifest Hereticke, he presently ceases to be Pope and Head of the Church, and may then be Judged and punished by the Church. Bellarmine hath disputed this very learnedly, and at large, and I will not fill this Discourse with another mans labours. The use I shall make of it, runnes through all these Opinions, and through all alike. And truly the very Question it selfe supposes, that A Pope may be an Hereticke. For if he cannot be an Hereticke, why doe they question, whether he can be deposed for being One? And if he can be one, then whether he can be deposed by the Church, Before he be manifest, or not till after, or neither before nor after, or which way they will, it comes all to one for my purpose. For the question not here his Deposition for his Heresie, but for Heresie. And I hope none of these Learned men, nor any other dare deny, but that if the Pope can be an Hereticke, he can erre. For every Heresie is an error, and more. For 'tis an Error oftentimes against the Errant knowledge, but ever with the pertinacie of his Will. Therefore out of all, even your owne Grounds; If the Pope can be an Hereticke, he can erre grossly, he can erre wilfully. And he that can so erre, cannot bee Infallible in his Judgement private or

+ *Iure Divino
Papam privatum
& c. lo. de
Turrecrem. L. 4.
Par. 2. c. 20. Et
Bellar. L. 2. de
Ro. Pont. c. 30.*

* *Papa factus Hereticus non est ipso facto,
vel jure Divino, vel humano depositus, sed
deponendus. Cajet. Tract. de Author. Papa
& Concilii. c. 20.*

† *Papa Hereticus manifestus per se desinit
esse Papa & Caput & c. Et iam potest
ab Ecclesia iudicari, & puniri. Bellar. L.
2. de Rom. Pont. c. 30. §. Eit ergo quintas*

publike. For if he can be an *Hereticke*, he can, and doubtlesse will *Iudge for his Heresie*, if the Church let him alone. And you your selves maintaine his *Deposition* lawfull, to prevent this. I verily believe ^a *Alb. Pighius* foresaw this blow. And therefore he is of Opinion. That the Pope cannot become an *Hereticke* at all. And though ^b *Bellarmino* favour him so farre, as to say his Opinion is probable: yet he is so honest as to adde, that the common Opinion of Divines is against him: Nay, though ^c he Labour hard to excuse Pope *Honorius* the first from the Heresie of the *Monothelites*, and sayes, that Pope *Adrian* was deceived, who thought him one, yet

^a Pighius L. 4. *Eccllesiastica Hierarchie*. c. 3.

^b Communis Opinio est in contrarium. *Bellarmino*. L. 2. de Ro. Pont. c. 30. §. 2.

^c L. 4. de Ro. Pont. cap. 11.

^d Tamen non possumus negare, quin Adrianus cum Romano Concilio, imò & tota Synodus octava Generalis senserit, in causa Heresis posse Rom. Pontificem judicari. Adde quod esset miserrima Conditio Ecclesie, si Luvum manifestè grassantem pro Pastore agnoscere cogeretur. *Bellarmino*. L. 2. de Ro. Pont. c. 30. §. 5.

^d He confesses, That Pope *Adrian* the second, with the Councell then held at Rome, and the eight Generall Synod did thinke that the Pope might be judged in the Cause of Heresie: And that the condition of the Church were most miserable, if it should be constrained to ac-

knowledge a *Wolfe* manifestly raging for her Shepheard. And here againe I have a Question to aske, whether you believe the eight Generall Councell, or not? If you believe it, then you see the Pope can erre, and so He not *Infallible*. If you believe it not, then in your Iudgement that Generall Councell erres, and so that not *Infallible*.

NUM. II.

Thirdly, It is altogether in vaine and to no use, that the Pope should be *Infallible*, and that according to your owne Principles. Now God and Nature make nothing in vaine. Therefore either the Pope is not *Infallible*, or at least God never made him so. That the *Infallibility* of the Pope (had he any in him) is altogether vaine, and uselesse, is manifest. For if it be of any use, 'tis for the settling of Truth and Peace in the Church, in all times of her Distraction. But neither the Church, nor any man can make any use of the Popes *Infallibility* that

that way ; Therefore it is of no use or benefit at all. And this also is as manifest, as the rest. For before the Church, or any particular man can make any use of *this Infallibility*, to settle him and his Conscience, hee must either *Know* or *Believe* that the *Pope is Infallible* ; But a man can neither *Know* nor *Believe* it. And first for *Believe* ; For if the Church, or any Christian man can believe it, he must believe it either by *Divine*, or by *Humane Faith*. *Divine Faith* cannot be had of it ; For (as is before prooved) it hath no Ground in the *Written Word of God*. Nay (to follow you closer) it was never delivered by any *Tradition* of the *Catholike Church*. And for *Humane Faith*, no *Rationall* man can possibly believe (having no Word of God to over-rule his *Vnderstanding*) that he which is *Fallible in the meanes*, as^a your selves confesse the *Pope is*, can possibly be *Infallible in the Conclusion*. And were it so that a *Rationall* man could have *Humane Faith* of this *Infallibility*, yet that neither is, nor ever can be sufficient to make the *Pope Infallible*. No more then my strong Beliefe of another mans *Honesty* can make him an *Honest* man, if he be not so. Now *secondly* for *Knowledge*, And that is altogether impossible too, that either the Church, or any Member of the Church, should ever know that *the Pope is Infallible*. And this I shall make evident also out of your owne *Principles*. For your^b *Councell* of *Florence* had told us *That three things are necessary to every Sacrament*, the *Matter*, the *Forme* of the *Sacrament*, And the *Intention of the Priest*, which *Administers* it, that he *intends* to do as the Church doth. Your^c *Councell* of *Trent* confirms it for the *Intention of the Priest*. Vpon this Ground (be it *Rocke* or *Sand*, it is all one, for you make it *Rocke*, and build upon it) I shall raise this *Battery* against the *Popes Infallibility*. First the *Pope* if he have any *Infallibility* at all, he hath it as he is *Bishop* of

^a Staple. Relect.
cont. 4. q. 2. Ne-
tab. 4.

^b Omnia Sacra-
menta tribus
perficiuntur &c.
Decret. Eugenii
4. in Concil. Flo-
ren.
^c Con. Trid. Sef.
7. Can. 1.

Bellar. *L. 4. de
Ro. Pont. c. 3. §
Alterum Privi-
legium est.*

† Constantinus
*ex Laico Papa
circa Ann. 767.
ejectus Papatu.
Et Steph. 3. qui
successit, habito
Concilio statuit,
ne quis nisi per
Gradus Ecclesi-
asticos ascendens
Pontificatū oc-
cupare auderet
sub penā Ana-
thematis. Decret
Dist. 79. c. Nul-
lus.*

of *Rome*, and *S. Peters Successor*. ^a This is granted. Secondly, the *Pope* cannot be *Bishop of Rome*, but he must be in *holy Orders first*. And if any man be chosen that is not so, the *Election* is void *ipso facto, propter errorem Personæ*, for the Errour of the Person. † This is also granted. Thirdly, He that is to be made *Pope* can never be in *Holy Orders*, but by receiving them from One that hath Power to Ordaine. This is notoriously knowne, So is it also, that with you *Order* is a *Sacrament properly so called*. And if so, then the *Pope*, when he did receive the *Order of Deacon*, or *Priesthood* at the hands of the *Bishop*, did also receive a *Sacrament*. Vpon these Grounds I raise my Argument thus. Neither the Church, nor any Member of the Church can know that this *Pope* which now sits, or any other that hath beene, or shall be, is *Infallible*. For he is not *Infallible*, unlesse he be *Pope*, and he is not *Pope*, unlesse he be in *Holy Orders*, And he cannot be so, unlesse he have received those *Holy Orders*, and that from one that had Power to Ordaine, And those *Holy Orders* in your Doctrine are a *Sacrament*, And a *Sacrament* is not perfectly given, if he that Administers it have not *intentionem faciendi quod facit Ecclesia*, an intention to doe that which the Church doth by *Sacraments*. Now who can possibly tell, that the *Bishop* which gave the *Pope Orders*, was first, a man qualified to give them: and secondly, so devoutly set upon his Worke, that he had, at the Instant of giving them, an *Intention* and purpose to doe therein as the Church doth? Surely none but that *Bishop* himselfe. And his testimony of himselfe, and his owne Act, such especially as, if faulty, he would be loth to Confesse, can neither give *Knowledge* nor *Beliefe* sufficient, that the *Pope*, according to this *Canon*, is in *Holy Orders*. So upon the Whole matter, let the *Romanists* take which they will (I give them free choyce) either

either this *Canon of the Council of Trent* is false Divinity, and there is no such *Intention* necessary to the *Essence* and *Being* of a *Sacrament*: Or if it be true, it is impossible for any man to know, and for any advised man to Believe, That the *Pope* is *Infallible* in his *Judiciall Sentences* in things belonging to the *Faith*. And so here againe a *Generall Council*, at least such an One, as that of *Trent* is, can *Erre*, or the *Pope* is not *Infallible*.

But this is an Argument *ad Hominem*, good NUM. 12.
against your *Partie* onely which maintaine this *Councill*. But the plaine Truth is, Both are *Errors*.

For neither is the *Bishop of Rome* *Infallible* in his *Judiciall* about the *Faith*: Nor is this *Intention* of either *Bishop* or *Priest* of *Absolute Necessity* to the *Essence* of a *Sacrament*; so, as to make void the gracious Institution of *Christ*, in case by any *Tentation* the *Priests* Thoughts should wander from his *Worke*, at the *Instant* of using the *Essentials* of a *Sacrament*, or have in him an *Actuall Intention* to scorne the *Church*. And you may remember, if you please, that a *Neopolitan*† *Bishop* then present at *Trent* disputed this *Case* very learnedly, and made it most evident that this *Opinion* cannot be defended, but that it must open a way for any unworthy *Priest* to make infinite *Nullities* in Administration of the *Sacraments*. And his Arguments were of such strength, * *ut ceteros Theologos dederint in stuporem*, as amazed the other *Divines* which were present.

† *Minorensis Episcopus fuit.*

* *L. Hist. Trident. p. 276. 277. Leidæ. An. 1622.*

And concluded, That no *Internall Intention* was required in the *Minister* of a *Sacrament*, but that *Intention* which did appeare *Opere externo*, in the *Worke* it selfe performed by him; And that if hee had unworthily any wandering thoughts, nay more, any contrary *Intention* within him, yet it neither did, nor could

N n

hinder

hinder the blessed effect of any Sacrament. And most certaine it is, if this be not true, besides all other Inconveniences, which are many, no man can secure himselfe upon any Doubt or trouble in his Conscience, that he hath truly, and really beene made partaker of any Sacrament whatsoever, No, not of Baptisme; and so by Consequence be left in Doubt whether he be a Christian or no, even after he is Baptised. Whereas 'tis most impossible; That *Christ* should so order his Sacraments, and so leave them to his Church, as that poore Believers in his Name, by any unworthinesse of any of his Priests, should not be able to know whether they have received His Sacraments or not, even while they have received them. And yet for all this such great lovers of Truth, and such Carefull Pastors over the Flock of Christ were these Trent Fathers, that they regarded none of this, but went on in the usuall track, and made their Decree for the Internall Intention, and purpose of the Priest, and that the Sacrament was invalid without it.

NUM. 13.

Nay, one Argument more there is, and from your owne Grounds too, that makes it more then manifest, That the Pope can erre, not Personally only, but Judicially also; and so teach false Doctrine to the Church; which

^a Bellarmine tels us No Pope hath done, or can doe. And a

^b maxime it is with you, That a Generall Councell can erre, if it be not confirmed by the Pope, ^b But if it be confirmed, then it cannot erre. Where first, this is very improper Language. For I hope no Councell is Confirmed, till it be finished. And when 'tis finished, even before the Popes Confirmation be put to it, either it hath Erred, or not erred. If it have Erred, the Pope ought not to Confirm it, and if he do, tis a Void Act. For no power can make falshood Truth: If it have not Erred then it was True before the Pope Confirmed it. So his Confirmation adds nothing

^a Summus Pontifex quum totam Ecclesiam docet, in his que ad fidem pertinent, nullo casu errare potest.

Bel. l. 4. De R. Pont. c. 3. §. 1.

^b Concilia Generalia à Pontificis Confirmatione errare non possunt. Bel. l. 2. de Con. c. 2. §. 1.

nothing but his owne *Aſſent*, Therefore his *Confirmation* of a *Generall Councell* (as you will needs call it) is at the moſt *Signum, non Cauſa*, A *Signe*, and that ſuch as may faile, but no *Cauſe* of the *Councels* not Erring. But then ſecondly, if a *Generall Councell* Confirmed (as you would have it) by the *Pope* have Erred, and ſo can Erre, then certainly the *Pope* can Erre *Judicially*. For he never gives a more *ſolemne Sentence for Truth*, then when he *Decrees* any thing in a *Generall Councell*. Therefore if he have Erred, and can Erre there, then certainly he can Erre in his *Definitive Sentence* about the Faith, and is not *Infallible*. Now that he hath Erred, and therefore can Erre in a *Generall Councell* Confirmed, in which he takes upon him to teach all *Chriſtendome*, is moſt cleere and evident. For the *Pope* teaches in, and by the ^a *Councell of Lateran* Confirmed by *Innocent the third*; *Chriſt* is preſent in the Sacrament by way of *Transubſtantiation*. And in, and by the ^b *Councell of Conſtance*, the *Adminiſtration* of the Bleſſed Sacrament to the Laity in one kinde, notwithstanding *Chriſts* Inſtitution of it in both kindes for all. And in, and by the ^c *Councell of Trent*, *Invocation of Saints*, and *Adoration of Images*, to the great Scandall of *Chriſtianity*, and as great hazard of the *Weake*. Now that theſe *Particulars*, among Many, are *Errours* in *Divinity*, and about the Faith, is manifeſt both by *Scripture*, and the *Judgement of the Primitive Church*. For *Transubſtantiation* firſt; That was never heard of in the *Primitive Church*, nor till the *Councell of Lateran*, nor can it bee prooved out of *Scripture*; And taken properly cannot ſtand with the *Grounds of Chriſtian Religion*. As for *Communion in one kinde*; *Chriſts* Inſtitution is cleere againſt that. And not only the *Primitive Church*, but the *Whole Church of Chriſt* kept it ſo, till within leſſe then *four hundred yeares*. For

^a *Conc. Lateran. Can. 1.*

^b *Concil. Conſtan. Seſſ. 13.*

^c *Concil. Trid. Seſſ. 25. Decret. de Invocatione.*

^a Provide in quibusdam Ecclesiis observatur, ut Populo Sanguis non detur. Thon. p. 3. q. 80. A. 12. c. 30. it was but in some Churches in his time, Negare non possumus etiam in Ecclesia Latinâ fuisse usum utriusque speciei, & usque ad tempora S. Thome durasse. Vasqu. in 3. Disput. 216. c. 3. n. 38.

^b Refecti cibo potuq; cœlesti, Deus noster, Te supplices exoramus &c. In proprio Missarum de Sanctis, Ianna. 15. Orat: post Communionem. Et Ianna. 21.

^a Aquinas confesses it was so in use even to his times; And he was both borne and dead during the Raigne of Henry the third of England. Nay, it stands yet as a Monument in the very ^b Missall, against the present Practice of the Church of Rome, That then it was usually Given and received in both kinde. And

for Invocation of Saints, though some of the Ancient Fathers have some Rhetoricall flourishes about it, for the stirring up of Devotion (as they thought) yet the Church then admitted not of the Invocation of them, but only of the Commemoration of the Martyrs, as appears

^c Ad quod Sacrificium suo loco & Ordine Homines Dei nominantur, non tamen à Sacerdote, qui Sacrificat, invocantur. S. Aug. L. 22. Civ. Dei. c. 10.

cleerely in ^c S. Augustine. And when the Church prayed to God for any thing, she desired to be heard for the Mercies and the Merits of Christ,

not for the Merits of any Saints whatsoever. For I much doubt this were to make the Saints more then Mediators of Intercession, which is all that ^d you will acknowledge you allow the Saints. For I pray, is not ^e by the Merits, more then by the Intercession? Did not Christ redeeme us by his Merits? And if God must heare our Prayers for the Merits of the Saints, how much fall

^d Bellarm. L. 1. De Sanctior. Beatitud. c. 20. S. Ad primum ergo locum &c.

^e Sunt Redemptores nostri aliquo modo & secundum aliquid. Bellar. L. 1. De Indulgen. c. 4. Et Sanctos appellat Numina. L. 2. de Imagin. Sanctorum. c. 20. § 3. Now if this word (Numen) signifie any thing else besides God himselfe, or the power of God, or the Oracle of God, let Bellarmine shew it; or A. C. for him.

^f Ut ejus Meritis & Precibus a Gehenna Incendii liberemur. In proprio Missarum de Sanctis, Decemb. 6.

they short of sharers in the ^e Mediation of Redemption. You may thinke of this. For such Prayers as these the Church of Rome makes at this day, and they stand (not without great scandall to Christ, and Christianity) used, and authorized to be used in the Missall. For instance.

^f Vpon the Feast of S. Nicolas you pray, That God by the Merits and Prayers of S. Nicolas, would

would deliver you from the fire of Hell. And upon the Octaves of S. Peter and S. Paul,

^a you desire God That you may Obtaine the Glory of Eternity by their Merits. And on the ^b Feast of S. Bonaventure you pray, that God would absolve you from all your sinnes by the Interceding Merits of Bonaventure. And for Adoration of Images, the ^c Ancient Church knew it not. And the Moderne Church of Rome is too

like to Paganisme in the Practice of it; and driven to scarce Intelligible Subtilties in her Servants Writings that defend it; And this without any Care had of Millions of Soules unable to understand her Subtilties, or shun her Practice. Did I say, the Moderne Church of Rome is grown too like Paganisme in this Point? And may this Speech seeme too hard? Well, if it doe, I'll give a double Account of it. The One is. 'Tis no harsher Expresssion then They of Rome use of the Protestants, and in Cases in which there is no shew or Resemblance. For ^d Becanus tels us, 'Tis no more lawfull to receive the Sacrament as the Calvinists receive it, then 'tis to worship Idols with the Ethnicks. And Gregory de Valentia enlarges it to more Points then one, but

with no more truth. The Sectaries of our times ^e (saith he) seeme to Erre culpably in more things then the Gentiles. This is easily said, but here's no Prooffe. Nor shall I hold it a sufficient warrant for me to sower

my Language, because these men have dipped their Pens in Gall. The other Account therefore which I shall give of this speech, shall come vouched both by Authority and Reason. And first for Authority; I

Nn 3

could

^a Ut Amborum Meritis eternitatem gloriam consequamur. I. id. Julii 6.

^b Ejus intercedentibus Meritis ab Omnibus nos absolve peccatis. Ibid. Julii 14.

^c In Optatus his time the Christians were much troubled upon but a false report, That an Image was to be placed upon the Altar. What would they have done, if Adoration had been Commended? &c. Et rectè dictum erat, si talis famam simulis veritas sequeretur. Optatus L. 3. ad suam.

^d Sicut non licet cum Ethnicis Idola colere. Becanus. L. de fide Hæret. servanda. c. 8.

^e Contingit aliquando Hæreticos circa plus errare quam Gentiles, ut Manichæos, inquit Thomas. Quod nos possumus verè dicere de nostri temporis Sectariis, qui culpabiliter in pleribus videntur errare. Valentia in 2. 2æ. Disp. 1. Q. 10. Puncto 3.

could set *Ludovicus Vives* against *Becanus*, if I would, who sayes expressly, *That the making of Feasts at the Oratories of the Martyrs* (which

^a *Quod quidem à Christianis melioribus non fit.* S. Aug. L. 8. de Civ. Dei. c. 27.

^b *Illà quasi Parentalia superstitioni Gentilium simillima.* Lud. Vives Ibid.

^c *Quod ergo mortuis litabatur, utique parentationi deputabatur, quæ species proinde Idololatriæ est, quoniam & Idololatria Parentationis est species.* Tertull. L. de Spectaculis. c. 12.

^a *S. Augustine* tels us, *The best Christians practised not*) are a kinde of ^b *Parentalia*, *Funerall Feasts too much resembling the superstition of the Gentiles.* Nay, *Vives* need not say, *resembling that superstition*, since *Tertullian* tels us plainly, that *Idolary* it selfe is but a kinde of *Parentation*. And

Vives dying in the Communion of the Church of Rome, is a better testimony against you, then *Becanus*, or *Valentia*, being bitter enemies to our Communion, can be against us. But I'll come nearer home to you, and prove it by more of your owne. For ^d *Cas-*

^d *Manifestius est, quàm ut multis verbis explicari debeat, Imaginum & simulachrorum cultum nimium invaluisse, & affectioni, seu potius superstitioni populi plus (atque indultum esse, ita ut ad summam adorationem quæ vel à Paganis, suis simulacris exhiberi consuevit, &c.* Casfand. Consult. Art. 21. C. De Imaginibus. Where he names diverse of your owne, as namely, *Durantus Mimatensis Episcopus*, *Iohn Billet*, *Gerson*, *Durand*, *Holkor*, and *Biel*, rejecting the Opinion of *Thomas*, and other superstitions concerning Images. Ibid.

^e *Non quod Credatur inesse aliqua in iis Divinitas, & veluti olim fiebat à Gentibus.* Conc. Trid. Sess. 25. Decret. de Invocatione.

^f *Et rudibus periculosi Erroris Occasionem, &c.* Ibid.

sander, who lived and died in your Communion, sayes it expressly, *That in this present Case of the Adoration of Images, you came full home to the Superstition of the Heathen.* And secondly, for Reason, I have (I think) too much to give, that the *Moderne Church of Rome* is growne too like to *Paganisme* in this Point. For the ^e *Councell of Trent* it selfe confesses, *That to believe there's any Divinity in Images, is to do as the Gentiles did by their Idols.* And though in some words after the *Fathers* of that Councell seeme very religiously carefull, that all ^f *Occasion of dangerous Errour be prevented*; yet the Doctrine it selfe is so full of danger, that it workes strongly, both upon the *Learned* and *Unlearned*, to the scandall of Religion, and the perverting of Truth. For the *Unlearned* first, how it workes upon them by whole Countries

Countries together, you may see by what happened in Asturia, Cantabria, Galetia, no small parts of Spaine. For there the People (so * He tels me that was an Eyewitness, and that since the Councell of Trent) are so addicted to their worme-eaten and deformed Images, that when the Bishops commanded new, and handfommer Images to be set up in their roomes, the poore people cried for their old, would not looke up to their new, as if they did not represent the same thing. And though he say, this is by little and little amended, yet I believe there's very little Amendment. And it workes upon the Learned too, more then it should. For it wrought so farre upon Lamas himselfe, who bemoaned the former Passage, as that he delivers this Doctrine, † That the Images of Christ, the Blessed Virgin, and the Saints, are not to be worshipped, as if there were any Divinity in the Images, as they are materiall things made by Art, but only as they represent Christ and the Saints; For els it were Idolatry. So then belike, according to the Divinity of this Casuist, a man may worship Images, and aske of them, and put his trust in them, as they Represent Christ, and the Saints. For so there is Divinity in them, though not as Things, yet as Representers. And what I pray did, or could any Pagan Priest say more then this? For the Proposition resolved is this. *The Images of Christ and the Saints, as they represent their Exemplars, have Deity or Divinity in them.* And now I pray A.C. doe you be Iudge, whether this Proposition do not teach Idolatry? And whether the Moderne Church of Rome be not growne too like to Paganisme in this Point? For my owne part, I heartily wish it were not. And that men of Learning would not straine their wits to spoile the Truth, and rent the Peace of the Church of Christ by such dangerous, such superstitious vanities. For better they are not; but they may be worse. Nay these and their like

* Et adeo Gens affecta est truncis corrosis & deformibus Imaginibus, ut me te-
ste, quoties Episcopi, accentes ponere jubent, veteres suas representant plorantes, &c. Hic on. Lamas summa. p. 3. c. 3.

† Imagines Christi & S. Mariæ ejus, & Sanctorum non sunt veneranda, ac si in ipsis imaginibus esset Divinitas, secundum quod sunt Materia Arte effigiatæ, & non, eundem quod representant Christum, & Sanctos, &c. Sic enim adorare, vel petere aliquid ab iis, esset IdololatRIA, Lamas Ibid.

* *Quis ferat populum in Templum irrudentem, cum in barā Sues? Certē non ob-sunt populo Ceremonia, sed pro-sunt, si moas in eis seruetur, & Caveamus ne nūpeppa nū ēgrov loco habeantur, hoc est, ne praci-puam pietatem in illis colloce-mus. Rhen. an-not. in Tertul. de Cor. Mil.*

like have given so great a *Scandall among us*, to some ignorant, though, I presume, well meaning men, that they are afraid to testify their *Duty to God*, even in his owne *House*, by any *Outward Gesture* at all. In so much that those very *Ceremonies*, which, by the Iudgement of Godly and Learned men, have now long continued in the practice of *this Church*, suffer hard measure for the *Romish Superstitions* sake. But I will conclude this Point with the saying of B. *Rhenanus*: *Who could indure the people (sayes hee) rushing into the Church like Swine into a Sty?* Doubtlesse, *Ceremonies* doe not hurt the people, but profit them, so there be a meane kept, and the By be not put for the *Maine*, that is, so we place not the principall part of our *Piety* in them.

The Conference growes to an end, and I must meet it againe ere we part. For you say,

F. *After this (we all rising) the Lady asked the B. whether she might be saved in the Romane Faith? He answered, She might.*

§. 34.
† *Cave ne dum vis alium notare culpa, ipse notaris Calumnia. S. Hier. L. 3. advers. Pelagianos.*

B. What? Not one † Answer perfectly related? My Answer to this was Generall, for the ignorant, that could not discern the Errours of that Church; so they held the *Foundation*, and conformed themselves to a Religious life. But why do you not speake out what I added in this Particular? *That it must needs go harder with the Lady, even in Point of Salvation, because she had beene brought to understand very much, for one of her Condition, in these Controverted Causes of Religion. And a Person that comes to know much, had need carefully bethinke himselfe, that he oppose not knowne Truth against the Church that made him a Christian.* For Salvation may be in the Church of Rome, and yet they not finde it, that

that make surest of it: Here A. C. is as confident as the Jesuite himselfe, *That I said expressly, That the Lady might be saved in the Romane Faith.* Truly, 'tis too long since now for me to speake any more then I have already, upon my memory: But this I am sure of, That whatsoever I said of her, were it never so particular, yet was it under the Conditions before expressed.

F. *I bad her marke that.*

B. This Answer (I am sure) troubles not you. But it seemes you would faine have it lay a load of envie upon mee, that you professe you bad the Lady, *so carefully marke that.* Well, you bad her *Marke that.* For what? For for e great matter? or for some new? Not for some New sure. or the Protestants have ever beene ready for Truth and in charity to grant as much as might be. And therefore from the beginning many Learned men granted this. So that you needed not have put such a serious Mark that upon

§. 35.
NUM. I.

† *Nos fateamur sub Papatu plurimum esse boni, imò omne bonum Christianum, atque etiam illinc ad nos devenisse, &c. Luther. contra Anabaptist. citante Bellarmino. L. 4. de Notis Eccles. c. 16. §. penult. Et Field. Appendice. par. 3. c. 2. Et Ios. Hall Bishop of Exeter. L. Of the Old Religion. c. 1. Many holding Christ the Foundation aright, and groaning under the burden of Popish trash, &c. by a generall repentance, and assured Faith in their Saviour, did finde favour with the Lord. D. Geo. Abbot late Archbishop of Cant. Answer to Hills ad Ration. 1. §. 30.*

For my part I dare not deny the possibility of their Salvation, who have beene the chiefest Instruments of ours, &c. Hooker in his Discourse of Iustitiae. §. 17. In former times a man might hold the generall Doctrine of those Churches, wherein our Fathers lived, and be saved. And yet since the Councell of Trent some are found in it in such degree of Orthodoxy, as we may well hope of their Salvation. Field. L. 3. Eccl. c. 47.

The Latine, or Welterne Church subject to the Romish Tyranny, was a true Church, in which a saving profession of the Truth of Christ was found. Ios. Hall B. of Exeter. L. Of the old Religion, fine. in his Adverserment to the Reader, p. 202.

Non pauci retinuerunt Christum Fundamentum, &c. Moræus Tract. de Ecclesia c. 9. fine.

Inter sordes istas, ista qua summo cum periculo expelletur salus, non ipsorum Additamentis, sed in qua nobiscum habent communia Fundamenti est attribuenda. Io. Prideaux Lectiōe 9. fine.

Papa aliquam adhuc Religionis formam relinquit, spem vite aeterna non tollit, &c. Calv. Instruct. advers. Libertinos, c. 4.

O o

my

my speech, as if none before had, or none but I would speake it. And if your Marke that were not for

^a Here *A. C.* gets another snatch, and tels us, *That to grant a Possibility of Salvation in the Romane Church, is the free Confession of an Adversary, and therefore is of force against us, and extorted by Truth: But to say that salvation is more securely, and easily to be had in the Protestant Faith, that's but their partiall Opinion in their own behalfe, and of no force, especially with Romane Catholikes.* I easily believe this latter part, That this, as *A. C.* and the rest use the matter with their *Profelytes*, shall be of little, or no force with *Romane Catholikes*. But it will behoove them, that it bee of force. For let any indifferent man weigh the *Necessary Requisites* to Salvation, and he shall finde this no partiall Opinion, but very plaine and reall Verity, That the Protestant living according to his belief, is upon the safer way to Heaven. And as for my Confession, let them enforce it as farre as they can against me, so they observe my Limitations, which if they do, *A. C.* and his fellowes will (of all the rest) have but little comfort in such a *limited Possibility*.

^b *L. 1. De Bapt. cont. Don. c. 3. Graviter peccarent in rebus ad salutem animæ pertinentibus, &c. eo solo quod certis incerta præponerent.*

^c *Propter incertitudinem propriae Iustitiæ, & periculum inanis gloriæ, tutissimū est fiduciam totā in solo Dei misericordiā & benignitate reponere* Bellar. *L. 5. de Iustif. c. 7. §. Sic tertia Propositio.*

was not, and judged it a great sinne, in Point of Salvation, for a man to preferre incerta certis, uncertainties and naked possibilities before an evident and certaine Course. And 'Bellarmine is of Opinion, and that in the Point of Iustification: That in regard of the uncertainty of our own Righteousnesse, and of the danger of vaine glory, tutissimū est, 'tis safest to repose our whole trust in the Mercy and Goodnesse of God. And surely, if there be One safer way then another, as he Confesses there is, he is no wise man, that in a matter of so great

some New matter, was it for some Great? Yes sure, it was. For what greater then Salvation? But then I pray, marke this too, That might be saved, grants but a ² Possibility, no sure, or safe way to Salvation. The Possibility I think cannot be denied, the Ignorants especially, because they hold the Foundation, and cannot survey the Building. And the Foundation can deceive no man that rests upon it. But a secure way they cannot goe, that hold with such corruptions, when they know them. Now whether it be wisdom, in such a Point as Salvation is, to forsake a Church, in the which the Ground of Salvation is firme, to follow a Church, in which it is but possible one may be saved, but very probable he may do worse, if he look not well to the Foundation, judge ye. I am sure ^b *S. Augustine* thought it

great moment will not betake himselfe to the safest way. And therefore even you your selves in the Point of *Condignity of Merit*, though you write it, and preach it boysterously to the People; yet you are content to dye, renouncing the condignity of all your owne *Merits*, and trust to *Christs*. Now surely, if you will not venture to dye as you live, live and beleeve in time, as you meane to die.

And one thing more, because you bid *Marke this*, NUM. 2. let me remember to tell you for the benefit of others.

Vpon this very Point (*That we acknowledge an honest ignorant Papist may be saved*) you and your like worke upon the advantage of our *Charity*, and your owne want of it, to abuse the weake. For thus I am told you worke upon them. You see the Protestants (at least many of them) confesse there may be salvation in our Church; We absolutely deny there is salvation in theirs: Therefore it is safer to come to Ours, then to stay in theirs; to be where, almost all grant Salvation, then where the greater part of the world deny it. This Argument is very prevailing with men, that cannot weigh it, and with women especially, that are put in feare by

* violent (though causelesse) denying Heaven unto them. And some of your party since this, have set out a Booke, called *Charity mistaken*. But beside the Answer fully given to it, this alone is sufficient to Confute it: First, that in this our *Charity* (what everyours be) is not mistaken, unlesse the *Charity of the Church her selfe* were mistaken in the Case of the *Donatists*, as shall † after appeare. Secondly, even † *Mistaken Charity* (if such it were) is farre better then none at all. And if the *Mistaken* be ours, the *None* is yours. Yea, but A. C. tells us, That this denyall of Salvation

* And this peece of Cunning to affright the weake was in use in *Iustin Martyrs* time. *Quosdam scimus &c. ad Iracundiam suam Evangelium pertrahentes &c. quibus si potestas ea obtigisset ut nonnullos Gebenna traderent, Orbem quoque Universum consumpissent: Iust. Martyr. Epist. ad Zenam & Serenum.* (And here * cis) *ad Iracundiam suam Ecclesiam pertrahentes &c.*

† S. 35. Nu. 3.

A. C. p. 65.

S. Matth. 18. 17.

^a And this is proved by the Creed, in which we professe our Beliefe of the Catholike, not of the *Roman* Church.

is grounded upon Charity, as were the like threats of Christ, and the Holy Fathers. For there is but one true Faith, and one true Church, and out of that there is no Salvation. And he that will not heare the Church, S. Matth. 18. let him be as a Heathen, and a Publicane, Therefore he sayes, 'tis more Charity to forewarne us of the danger, by these threats, then to let us runne into it, thorough a false security. 'Tis true, that there is but one true Faith, and but one true Church: But that one, both Faith, and Church, is the ^a Catholike Christian, not the Particular Roman. And this Catholike Christian Church, he that will not both heare, and obey, yea, and the Particular Church, in which he lives too, so farre as it in necessities agrees with the Univerfall, is in as bad condition as a Heathen and a Publican, and perhaps in some respects worse. And were we in this Case, we should thanke A. C. for giving us warning of our danger. But 'tis not so. For he thunders out all these threats, and denyall of salvation, because we joyne not with the *Roman Church*, in all things; as if her Corruptions were part of the Catholike Faith of Christ. So the whole passage is a meere begging of the Question, and then threatning upon it, without all ground of Reason or Charity. In the meane time

^b This is a free Confession of the Adversaries Argument against themselves, and therefore is of force. A. C. p. 64. But every Confession of Adversaries, or others is to be taken with its Qualities, and Conditions: If you leave out, or change these, you wrong the Confession, and then 'tis of no force. And so doth A. C. here. And though Bellarm. makes the Confession of the Adversary a note of the true Church. L. 4. de Notis Eccl. c. 16. yet in the very beginning, where he layes his Ground, S. 1. he layes it in a plaine fallacie à secundum quid ad simpliciter.

let A. C. looke to himselfe, that in his false security, he runne not into the danger, and losse of his owne salvation, while he would seeme to take such care of ours. But though this Argument prevails with the weake, yet it is much stronger in the cunning, then the true force of it. For all Arguments are very mooving, that lay their ground upon ^b the Adversaries Confession; especially

especially if it bee confessed, and avouched to bee true. But if you would speake truly, and say, Many Protestants indeed confesse, there is *salvation* possible to be attained in the *Romane Church*, but yet they say withall, that the Errours of that Church are so many * (and some so great, as weaken the *Foundation*) that it is very hard to goe that way to Heaven, especially to them that have had the Truth manifested; the heart of this *Argument* were utterly broken. Besides the force of this *Argument* lyes upon two things, one directly *Expressed*, the other but as upon the *By*.

* For they are no meane Differences that are betweene us, by *Bellarmines* owne Confession. *Agendum est non de rebus levibus, sed de gravissimis Quæstionibus quæ ad ipsa Fidei fundamenta pertinent.* &c. *Bellarmin*, in præfat. *Operibus præfixâ*. §. 3. And therefore the Errours in them, and the Corruptions of them cannot bee of small Consequence, by your owne Confession. Yes, by your owne indeed. For you *A. C.* say full as much, if not more then *Bellarmines*. Thus We Catholics hold all points, in which Protestants differ from us in Doctrine of Faith, to be Fundamentall, and necessary to bee Believed, or at least not denied. *A. C.* Relation of the first Conference, p. 28.

That which is *expressed*, is, We and our Adversaries consent, that there is *salvation* to some in the *Romane Church*. What? would you have us as malicious, (at least as rash) as your selves are to us, and deny you so much, as possibility of *Salvation*? If we should, we might make you in some things straine for a Prooofe? But we have not *learned Christ*, as either to return evill for evill in this headie course, or to deny *salvation* to some ignorant silly soules, whose humble peaceable obedience makes them safe among any part of men, that professe the *Foundation, Christ*; And therefore seek not to help our Cause by denying this comfort to silly Christians, as you most fiercely do, where you can come to worke upon them. And this was an old trick of the *Donatists*. For in the Point of *Baptisme* (Whether that *Sacrament* was true in the *Catholike Church*, or in the part of *Donatus*) they exhorted all to be baptised among them. Why? Because both parts granted, that *Baptisme* was true among the *Donatists*; which was

NUM. 3.

† *Esse verò apud
Donatistas Bap-
tismum, & illi
asserunt, & nos
concedimus &c.
L. i. de Bap. cont.
Donat. c. 3.*

peevish Sect most unjustly denied the *second part*, as S. † *Augustine* delivers it. I would aske now, Had not the Orthodox true *Baptisme* among them, because the Donatists denied it injuriously? Or should the Orthodox against Truth, have denied *Baptisme*, among the Donatists, either to cry quittance with them, or that their Argument might not be the stronger, because both parts granted? But Marke this, how farre you runne from all common Principles of *Christian Peace*, as well as *Christian Truth*, while you deny salvation most unjustly to us, from which you are farther off your selves. Besides, if this were, or could be made a concluding Argument, I pray, why doe not you believe with us in the Point of the *Eucharist*? For all

ⁱ *Corpus Christi manducatur in Cœna &c. tantum celesti
& spirituali ratione: Medium autem quo Corpus Christi
accipitur & manducatur in Cœnâ, Fides est. Eccl. Angl.
Art. 28.*

After a spirituall manner by Faith on our behalfe, and by the working of the Holy Ghost on the behalfe of Christ. *Fulk. in 1 Cor. 11. p. 528.*

*Christus se cum omnibus bonis suis in Cœnâ offert, & nos
eum recipimus fide &c. Calv. 4. Inst. c. 17. §. 5. Et Hooker.
L. 5. §. 67. p. 176.*

And say not you the same with us? *Spiritualis manduca-
tio, quæ per Animam fit, ad Christi Carnem in Sacramen-
to pertingit. Cajet. Tom. 2. Opusc. de Euchar. Tract. 2.
Cap. 5.*

*Sed spiritualiter, id est, invisibiliter, & per virtutem Spi-
ritus Sancti. Thom. p. 3. q. 75. A. 1. ad 1^{um}.*

*Spiritualiter manducandus est per Fidem & Charitatem.
Tena. in Heb. 13. Difficultate 8.*

† I would have no man troubled at the words *Truly* and *Really*. For that Blessed Sacrament received as it ought to be, doth *Truly* and *Really* exhibit and apply the Body and the Blood of Christ to the Receiver. So Bishop *White* in his Defence against *T. W. P.* Edit. London. 1617. p. 138. And *Calvin* in 1 *Cor. 10. 3.* Verè datur. &c. And againe in 1 *Cor. 11. 24.* Neque enim *Mortis tantum & Resurrectionis sue beneficium nobis offert Christus, sed Corpus ipsum in quo passus est, & resurrexit. Concludo Realiter (ut vulgò loquuntur) hoc est, Verè nobis in Cœnâ datur Christi Corpus, ut sit Animis nostris in cibum Salutarem. &c.*

fides agree in the Faith of the Church of England, That in the most Blessed Sacrament, the Worthy receiver is by his * Faith made spiritually partaker of the true and reall Body and Blood of Christ † truly, and really, and of all the Benefits of his Passion. Your *Romane Catholikes* adde a manner of this his Presence, *Transubstantiation*, which many deny; and the *Lutherans* a manner of this Presence, *Consubstantiation*, which more deny. If this argument be good, then even for this Consent

Consent, it is safer Communicating with the Church of England, then with the Roman, or Lutheran; Because all agree in this Truth, not in any other Opinion.

Nay † Suarez himselfe, and he a very Learned Adversary (what say you to this A.C? dōth Truth force this from him?) Confesses plainly,

† Hoc totum pendet ex Principiis Metaphysicis & philosophicis, & ad Fidei Doctrinam non est necessarium. Suarez. in 3. Thom. Disput. 50. §. 2.

† That to Believe Transubstantiation is not simply necessary to Salvation And yet he knew well the Church had Determined it. And * Bellarmine, after an intricate, tedious, and almost inexplicable Discourse about an Adductive Conversion (A thing which neither Divinity, nor Philosophy ever heard of till then) is at last forced to come to this: ^a Whatsoever is concerning the manner and formes of speech, illud tenendum est, this is to be held, that the Conversion of the Bread and Wine into the Body and the Blood of Christ, is substantiall, but after a secret

A. C. p. 64. 65.

* Bellar. L. 3. de Eucha. c. 18. §. Ex his colligitur.

and ineffable manner, and not like in all things to any naturall Conversion whatsoever. Now if he had left out Conversion, and affirmed only Christs reall Presence there, after a mysterious, and indeed an ineffable manner, no man could have spoke better. And therefore, if you will force the Argument alwayes to make that the safest way of Salvation, which differing Parties agree on; why doe you not yeeld to the force of the same Argument, in the Beliefe of the Sacrament, one of the most immediate meanes of Salvation, where not onely the most, but all agree; And your owne greatest Clarkes cannot tell what to say to the Contrary?

^a Sed quidquid sit de Modis loquendi, illud tenendum est, Conversionem Panis & Vini in Corpus & Sanguinem Christi esse substantialem, sed arcanam & ineffabilem, & nullis naturalibus Conversionibus per omnia similem. &c. Bellar. in Recognit. hujus loci. Et Vid. §. 38. Num. 3

I speake here for the force of the Argument; NUM. . which certainly in it selfe is nothing, though by A. C. made of great account; For he sayes, 'Tis a A. C. p. 64. Confession of Adversaries extorted by Truth. Just as

* Petilium

* *Sed quia ita
magnum firma-
mentum vanita-
tis vestre in hac
sententiâ esse ar-
bitramini, ut ad
hoc tibi termi-
nandam putares
Epistolam quo
quasi recentius
in animis Legē-
tium remaneret,
brevitèr respon-
deo. &c. S. Aug.
L. 2. cont. Lit.
Petil. c. 108.
And here A. C. ad
hoc sibi putavit
terminandâ Col-
lationem: sed
frustra ut appa-
rebit. Num. 6.*

* *Petilian the Donatist brag'd in the case of Baptisme. But in truth, 'tis nothing. For the Syllogisme, which it frames, is this. The Papists and the Protestants, which are the Parties differing, agree in this, That there is Salvation possible to be found in the Romane Church. But in Point of Faith and Salvation 'tis safest for a man to take that way, which the differing Parties agree on. Therefore 'tis safest for a man to be, and continue in the Romane Church. To the Major Proposition then; I observe first, that though many Learned Protestants grant this, all doe not. And then that Proposition is not Universall, nor able to sustaine the Conclusion. For they doe not in this all agree; nay I doubt not, but there are some Protestants, which can, and do as stiffly, and as churlishly deny them Salvation, as they doe us. And A. C. should doe well to consider, whether they doe it not upon as good reason at least. Next for the Minor Proposition; Namely, That in point of Faith and Salvation, 'tis safest for a man to take that way, which the Adversary confesses, or the Differing Parties agree on. I say, that is no Metaphysicall Principle, but a bare Contingent Proposition, and may be true, or false, as the matter is to which it is applyed, and so of no necessary truth in it selfe, nor able to lead in the Conclusion. Now that this Proposition (In point of Faith and Salvation, 'tis safest for a man, to take that way, which the differing Parties agree on, or which the Adversary Confesses) hath no strength in it selfe, but is sometimes true, and sometimes false, as the Matter is, about which it is conversant, is most evident. First, by Reason: Because Consent of disagreeing Parties, is neither Rule, nor Proove of Truth. For Herod and Pilate, disagreeing Parties enough, yet agreed against Truth it selfe. But Truth rather is, or should be the Rule to frame, if not to force Agreement. And secondly, by the two Instances † before given. For in the Instance betweene the Orthodox Church then, and*

and the *Donatists*, this *Proposition* is most false; For it was a Point of *Faith*, and so of *Salvation*, that they were upon, Namely, the right use, and administration of the Sacrament of *Baptisme*. And yet had it beene safest to take up that way, which the differing Parts agreed on, or which the adverse Part Confessed, men must needs have gone with the *Donatists* against the Church. And this must fall out as oft as any *Heretick* will cunningly take that way against the Church, which the *Donatists* did, if this *Principle* shall goe for currant. But in the second Instance, concerning the *Eucharist*, a matter of *Faith*, and so of *Salvation* too, the same *Proposition* is most true. And the *Reason* is, because here the matter is true; Namely, *The true, and reall participation of the Body and Blood of Christ in that Blessed Sacrament*. But in the former the matter was false, Namely, *That Rebaptization was necessary after Baptisme formally given by the Church*. So this *Proposition* (In Point of *Faith* and *Salvation* it is safest for a man to take that way, which the differing Parties agree in; or which the Adversary Confesses) is, you see, both true and false, as men have cunning to apply it, and as the matter is, about which it is Conversant. And is therefore no *Proposition* able, or fit to settle a *Conclusion* in any sober mans minde, till the *Matter* contained under it, bee well scanned, and examined. And yet as much use as you would make of this *Proposition* to amaze the weake, your selves dare not stand to it, no not where the matter is undenyably true, as shall appeare in divers Particulars beside this of the *Eucharist*.

But before I adde any other particular Instance Num. 5.

P p

ces

A. C. p. 65.

ces, I must tell you what *A. C.* sayes to the two former. For he tels us, *These two are nothing like the present case.* Nothing? That is strange indeed. Why in the first of those Cases concerning the *Donatists*, your Proposition is false; And so farre from being *safest*, that it was no way safe for a man to take that way of *Beliefe*, and so of *Salvation*, which both parts agreed on. And is this nothing? Nay, is not this full, and home to the present case? For the present case is this, and no more. *That it is safest taking that way of Beliefe, which the differing Parties agree on: or which the Adversary Confesses.* And in the second of those Cases concerning the *Eucharist*, your Proposition indeed is true, not by the Truth which it hath in it selfe; *Metaphysically*, and in *Abstract*, but only in regard of the matter, to which it is applyed; yet there you desert your owne Proposition, where it is true. And is this nothing? Nay, is not this also full, and home to the present case, since it appeares your Proposition is such as your selves dare not bide by, either when it is true, or when it is false? For in the Case of *Baptisme* administred by the *Donatist*, the Proposition is false, and you dare not bide by it, for *Truths* sake. And in the case of the *Eucharist*, the Proposition is true, and yet you dare not bide by it, for the *Church of Romes* sake. So that *Church* (with you) cannot erre, and yet will not suffer you to maintaine *Truth*, which not to doe is some degree of Errour, and that no small one.

NUM. 6.
A. C. p. 65.

Well, *A. C.* goes on, and gives his Reasons why these two Instances are nothing like the present Case. *For in these Cases (saith hee) there are annexed other Reasons of certainly knowne perill of damnable Schisme*
and

and Heresie, which wee should incurre by consenting to the Donatists denyall of true Baptisme among Catholikes: and to the Protestants denyall, or doubting of the true substantiall Presence of Christ in the Eucharist. But in this Case of Resolving to live and dye in the Cathelike Romane Church, there is confessedly no such perill of any damnable Heresie, or Schisme, or any other sume. Here I have many Particulars to observe upon A. C. and you shall have them, as briefly as I can set them downe.

And first, I take A. C. at his word, that in *Punct. 1.* the case of the Donatist, should it bee followed, there would bee knowne perill of damnable Schisme, and Heresie, by denying true Baptisme to be in the Orthodoxe Church. For by this you may see, what a sound proposition this is (*That where two Parties are dissenting, it is safest believing that in which both Parties agree, or which the Adversary confesses*) for here you may see by the case of the Donatist, is confessed, it may leade a man, that will universally lean to it, into knowne and damnable Schisme and Heresie. An excellent Guide, I promise you, this, is it not?

Nor secondly, are these, though A. C. calles them *Punct. 2.* so, annexed Reasons; For hee calls them so, but to *A. C. p. 65.* blanch the matter, as if they fell upon the proposition *ab extra*, accidentally, and from without, Whereas they are not annexed, or pinned on, but flow naturally out of the Proposition it selfe. For the Proposition would seeme to be Metaphysicall, and is applyable indifferently to any Common Beliefe of dissenting Parties, be the point in difference what it will. Therefore if there be any thing Hereticall, Schismaticall, or any way evill in the Point, this proposition being neither Universally, nor necessarily true, must needs

cast him, that relies upon it, upon all these Rocks of *Heresie*, *Schisme*, or what ever else followes the matter of the Proposition.

Punct. 3.
A.C. p. 66.

Thirdly, A.C. doth extremely ill to joine these Cases of the *Donatists* for Baptisme, and the *Protestant* for the *Eucharist* together, as he doth. For this Proposition in the first concerning the *Donatists*, leades a man (as is confessed by himselfe) into knowne and damnable *Schisme* and *Heresie* : but by A. C. good leave the later concerning the *Protestants*, and the *Eucharist*, nothing so. For I hope A. C. dare not

* *Ceterum his absurditatibus sublati, quicquid ad Exprimendam veram substantiallemque Corporis ac sanguinis Domini Communicationem, qua sub sacris Cæne symbolis, fidelibus exhibetur, facere potest, libenter recipio. Calvin. L. 4. Inst. c. 17. S. 19.*

In Cæne mysteria, per symbola Panis & Vini Christus vere nobis exhibetur &c. Et nos participes substantiæ ejus facti sumus, Ibid. S. 11.

say, That to believe the true* substantiall Presence of Christ, is either knowne, or damnable *Schisme*, or *Heresie*. Now as many, and as Learned † *Protestants* believe and maintaine this, as doe believe possibility of Salvation (as before is limited) in the *Romane Church* :

Therefore they in that not guilt

† S. 35. N. 3.

ty of either knowne, or damnable *Schisme*, or *Heresie*, though the *Donatists* were of both.

Punct. 4.
A.C. p. 66.

Fourthly, whereas he imposes upon the *Protestants*, The denyall or doubting of the true and Reall Presence of Christ in the *Eucharist*; he is a great deale more bold, then true, in that also: For understand them right, and they certainly, neither deny, nor doubt it. For as for the *Lutherans* (as they are commonly called) their very Opinion of *Consubstantiation* makes it knowne to the world, that they neither deny, nor doubt of his true, and Reall Presence there. And they are *Protestants*. And for the *Calvinists*, if they might bee rightly understood, they also maintaine a most true and Reall Presence, though they cannot permit their judgement to be *Transubstantiated*. And they are *Protestants* too.

too. And this is so knowne a Truth, that^a Bellarmine confesses it. For hee saith, Protestants do often grant, that the true and reall Body of Christ is in the Eucharist: But he adds, That they never say (so farre as he hath read) That it is there Truly and Really, unlesse they speake of the Supper, which shall be in Heaven. Well, first if they grant that the true, and Reall Body of Christ, is in that Blessed Sacrament (as Bellarmine confesses they doe, and 'tis most true) then A.C. is false, who charges all the Protestants with deniall, or doubtfulnessse in this Point. And secondly, Bellarmine himselfe also shewes here his Ignorance, or his Malice; Ignorance, if he knew it not: Malice, if he would not know it. For the Calvinists, at least they which follow Calvin himself, do not onely believe that the true and reall Body of Christ is received in the Eucharist, but that it is there, and that we partake of it verè & realiter, which are^b Calvin's owne words; and yet Bellarmine boldly affirms, that to his reading, no one Protestant will ever affirme it. And I, for my part, cannot believe that Bellarmine had read Calvin, and very carefully, both so frequently and so mainly Oppose him. I can that Place by any Art be shifted, or by any way be wrested from Calvin's true meaning of the Presence of Christ in and at the blessed Sacrament of the Eucharist to any Supper in Heaven whatsoever. But most manifest it is, that *Quod legerim*, doth not serve Bellarmine to Excuse him. For he himselfe going before, quotes for which he says expressly, that the Sacrament the Body and the

^a Bellarm. L. 1. de Euchar. c. 2. §. Quinto dicit. *Sacramentarii saepe dicunt reale Corpus Christi in Canâ adesse, sed realiter adesse nunquam dicunt, quod legerim, nisi forte loquuntur de Canâ quæ sit in Cælo, &c.*

And that he meanes to brand Protestants under the name of *Sacramentarii*, is plaine. For he sayes the Councell of Trent opposed this word *realiter*, *Figmento Calvinistico*, to the Calvinisticall figment. *Ibid.*

A.C. p. 65.

^b Calv. in 1. Cor. 10. 3. verè, &c. & in 1. Cor. 11. 24. realiter. *Vide supra. Num. 3.*

^c Bellar. L. 1. de Eucharistia. c. 1. §. Secundo, docet.

So *Calvine* sayes it foure times, and *Bellarmino* quotes the places; and yet he sayes in the very next Chapter, That never any Protestant said so, to his Reading. And for the Church of England, nothing is more plaine, then that it believes and teaches the true and reall Pre-

* The *Body of Christ* is given, taken, and eaten in the Supper (of the Lord) onely after an Heavenly and Spirituall manner. And the meanes whereby the *Body of Christ* is received and eaten, is Faith, *Eccl. Ang. Art. 28.* So here's the Manner of *Transubstantiation* denied, but the *Body of Christ* twice affirmed. And in the prayer before Consecration, thus, *Grant us Gracious Lord so to eat the Flesh of thy deare Sonne Jesus Christ, and to drinke his Blood, &c.* And againe, in the second Prayer or Thanksgiving after Consecration, thus, *We give thee Thanks, for that thou dost vouchsafe to feed us which have duly received these holy Mysteries with the spirituall food of the most precious Body and Blood of thy Sonne our Saviour Jesus Christ, &c.*

sence of *Christ* in the * *Eucharist*, unlesse *A.C.* can make a Body, no Body, and Blood, no Blood (as perhaps he can by *Transubstantiation*) as well as Bread, no Bread, & Wine, no Wine. And the Church of England is Protestant too. So Protestants of all sorts maintain a true and reall Presence of *Christ* in the *Eucharist*, and then, where's any known, or damnable Heresie here? As for the Learned of those zealous men that died in this Cause in *Q. Maries* dayes, they denied not the Reall Presence simply taken, but as their Opposites forced *Transubstan-*

tiation upon them, as if that, and the Reall Presence had beene all one. Whereas all the Ancient Christians ever believed the one, and none but moderne and superstitious Christians believe the other; If they do believe it, for I, for my part, doubt they do not. And as for the Unlearned in those times, and all times, their zeale (they holding the Foundation) may eat out their Ignorances, and leave them safe. Now that the Learned Protestants in *Q. Maries* dayes, did not denie, nay did maintaine the Reall Presence, will manifestly appeare. For when the Commissioners obtruded to *Io. Frith* the Presence of *Christ's* naturall Body in the Sacrament, and that without all figure, or similitude: *Io. Frith* acknowledges, † That the inward man doth as verily receive *Christ's* Body, as the outward man receives the Sacrament with his

† *Io. Fox Martyrolog. To. 2. London. 1597. pag. 943.*

Mouth:

or in any *false Worship* that attends it. For so *Elias* lived among the *Ten Tribes*, and was not *Schismaticall*, 3. Reg. 17. And after him *Elizau*, 4. Reg. 3. But then neither of them either countenanced the *Schisme*, or worshipped the *Calves* in *Dan*, or in *Bethel*. And so also beside these *Prophets*, did those *Thousands* live in a *Schismaticall Church*, yet never bowed their knee to *Baal*, 3. Reg. 19. But 'tis quite another thing to live in a *Schismaticall Church*, and *Communicate* with it in the *Schisme*, and in all the *Superstitions* and *Corruptions*, which that Church teaches, nay to live and die in them. For certainly here no man can so live in a *Schismaticall Church*, but if he be of capacity enough, and understand it, he must needs be a *Formall Schismatick*, or an *Involved One*, if he understand it not. And in this case the *Church of Rome* is either farre worse, or more cruell then the *Church of Israel*, even under *Ahab* and *Jezabel*, was. The *Synagogue* indeed was corrupted a long time, and in a great degree. But I do not finde, that this *Doctrine*, *You must sacrifice in the high places*: Or this, *You may not go and worship at the one Altar in Ierusalem*, was either taught by the *Priests*, or maintained by the *Prophets*, or enjoined the people by the *Sanedrim*: Nay, can you shew me when any *Iew* living there devoutly according to the *Law*, was ever punished for omitting the *One* of these, or doing the *Other*? But the *Church of Rome* hath solemnly decreed her *Errours*: And erring, hath yet decreed withall, *That she cannot erre*. And imposed upon *Learned men*, disputed and improbable *Opinions*, *Transubstantiation*, *Purgatorie*, and *Forbearance of the Cup* in the blessed *Eucharist*, even against the expresse *Command* of our *Saviour*, and that for *Articles of Faith*. And to keepe off *Disobedience*, what ever the *Corruption* be, she hath bound

3. Reg. 13. 11.

up her *Decrees* upon paine of *Excommunication*, and all that followes upon it. Nay, this is not enough, unlesse the *fagot* be kindled to light them the way. This then may be enough for us to leave *Rome*, though the old *Prophet* forsooke not *Israel*, 3. Reg. 13. And therefore in this present case there's perill, great perill of damnable both *Schisme* and *Hereſe*, and other sinne, by living and dying in the *Romane Faith*, tainted with so many *superſtitions*, as at this day it is, and their

Tyrannie to boot. So that here I may answer *A. C.* just as **S. Augustine* answered *Petilian the Donatist*, in the fore-named case of *Baptisme*. For when *Petilian* pleaded the Concession of his Adversaries, That *Baptisme*, as the *Donatists* administred it, was good and lawfull, and thence inferred (just as the *Leſuite* doth against me) that it was better for men to joyne with his *Congregation*, then with the Church. *S. Augustine* answers; We do indeed approve among *Hereticks* *Baptisme*, but so, not as it is the *Baptisme* of *Hereticks*, but as it is the *Baptisme* of *Christ*.

Just as we approve the *Baptisme* of *Adulterers*, *Idolaters*, *Witches*, and yet not as 'tis theirs; but as 'tis *Christ's Baptisme*. For none of these, for all their *Baptisme*, shall inherit the *Kingdome* of *God*. And the *Apoſtle* reckons *Hereticks* among them. *aGal. ut. 5.* And againe afterwards: It is not therefore yours (saith † *Saint Augustine*) which wee feare to destroy, but *Christ's*, which, even among the *Sacrilegiours*, is of, and in it selfe, holy. Now you shall see how full this comes home to our *Petilianist A. C.* (for

* *Petilianus dixit, Venite ad Ecclesiam populi, & auſugite Traditores (ita Orthodoxos tum appellavit) si cuius iisdem perire non vultis. Nam ut facile cognoscatis quod ipsi sunt rei, de fide nostra optime judicant. Ego illorum infectos baptizo. Illi meos (quod absit) recipiant baptizatos, quia omnino non facerent, si in Baptismo nostro culpas aliquas agnovissent. Videte ergo quod damus, quam sanctum sit, quod destruere metuit Sacrilegus Inimicus. S. August. respondet. Sic approbamus in Hereticis Baptismum, non Hereticorum, sed Christi, sicut in Fornicatoribus, Idololatriis, Veneficiis, &c. approbamus Baptismum non eorum, sed Christi. Omnes enim isti, inter quos & Heretici sunt, sicut dicit Apostolus: Regnum Dei non possidebunt, &c. S. August. L. 2. cont. Lit. Petiliani, c. 108.*

aGal. 5. 19. 20. 21.

† *Non ergo vestrum est quod destruere metui-mus, sed Christi; quod & in sacrilegis per se sanctum est. S. Aug. Ibid.*

(for hee is one of the Contracters of the Church of Christ to Rome, as the *Donatists* confined it to *Africke*) And he cries out, *That a Possibility of Salvation, is a free Confession of the Adversaries, and is of force against them, and to bee thought extorted from them by force of Truth it selfe.* I Answer. I doe indeed for my part (leaving other men free to their owne judgement) acknowledge a Possibility of Salvation in the *Romane Church*. But so, as that which I grant to *Romanists*, is not as they are *Romanists*, but as they are *Christians*, that is, as they believe the *Creed*, and hold the *Foundation* *Christ* himselfe, not as they associate themselves wittingly and knowingly to the grosse Superstitions of the *Romish Church*. Nor doe I feare to destroy *quod ipsorum est*, that which is theirs, but yet I dare not proceed so roughly, as with theirs, or for theirs to deny, or weaken the *Foundation*, which is *Christs*, even among them; and which is, and remains holy even in the midst of their Superstitions; And I am willing to hope there are many among them, which keep within that Church, and yet wish the Superstitions abolished which they know, and which pray to God to forgive their errours in what they know not, and which hold the *Foundation* firme, and live accordingly, and which would have all things amended that are amisse, were it in their power. And to such I dare not deny a *Possibility of Salvation*, for that which is *Christs* in them, though they hazzard themselves extremely by keeping so close to that, which is *Superstition*, and in the *Cafe of Images*, comes too neere *Idolatry*. Nor can *A. C.* shift this off by adding, *living and dying in the Romane Church*. For this *living and dying in the Romane Church*, (as is before expressed) cannot take away the

Qq 2

Possibility

Possibility of Salvation from them which believe, and repent of whatsoever is error, or sinne in them,

† For though *Prateolus* will make *Donatus*, and from him the *Donatists*, to be guilty of an impious Heresie (I doubt he meanes *Arrianisme*, though he name it not) in making the Sonne of God lesse then the Father, and the Holy Ghost lesse then the Sonne. *L. 4. de Hæres. Her. 14.* yet these things are most manifest out of *S. Aug.* concerning them, who lived with them both in time and place, and understood them, and their *Tenets* farre better then *Prateolus* could.

And first, *S. Aug.* tells us concerning them: *Arriani, Patris, & Filii, & Spiritus Sancti, diversas substantias esse dicunt. Donatista autem unam Trinitatis substantiam consueverunt.* So they are no *Arrians*.

Secondly, *Si aliqui eorum minorem Filium esse dixerunt quam Pater est, ejusdem tamen substantie non negaverunt.* But this is but *si aliqui*, if any: so 'twas doubtful, this too, though *Prateolus* delivers it positively.

Thirdly, *Plurimi verò in his hoc se dicunt, omnino credere de Patre, & Filio, & Spiritu Sancto, quod Catholica credit Ecclesia. Nec ipsa cum illis vertitur Quæstio, sed de sola Communione inæqualiter litigant, &c. De sola.* Onely about the Union with the Church. Therefore they erred not in Fundamentall Points of Faith. And

Lastly, All that can farther be said against them, is, That some of them, to win the *Goths* to them, when they were powerfull, said, *Hoc se Credere quod & illi Credunt.* Now the *Goths* (for the most) were *Arrians*. But then, saith *S. Aug.* they were but *nonnulli*, some of them. And of this some it was no more Certaine, then *sicut audivimus*, as we have heard, *S. Aug.* knew it not. And then if it were true of some, yet *Majorum suorum Auctoritate convincuntur; Quia nec Donatus ipse sic credidisse asseritur, de cuius parte se esse gloriantur.* *S. Aug. Epist. 50.* Where *Prateolus* is againe deceived; for he sayes expressely, that *Donatus* affirmed the Sonne to be lesse then the Father. *Impius ille assererat, &c.* But then indeed, (and which perchance deceived *Prateolus*) beside *Donatus* the founder of this Heresie, there was another *Donatus*, who succeeded *Majorinus* at *Carthage*, and he was guilty of the Heresie, which *Prateolus* mentions, *Et extant scripta ejus ubi apparet, as S. Aug. confesses, L. 1. de Hæres. Her. 69.* But then *S. Aug.* adds there also, *nec facile in his quisquam*, that scarce any of the *Donatists* did so much as know, that this *Donatus* held that Opinion, much lesse did they believe it themselves. *S. Aug. Ibid.*

be it sinne knowne to them, or be it not. But then perhaps *A.C.* will reply, that if this be so, I must then maintaine, that a *Donatist* also, living and dying in Schisme, might be saved. To which I answer two wayes. First, that a plaine honest *Donatist*, having (as is confessed) true Baptisme, and holding the Foundation (as for ought I know, the † *Donatists* did) and repenting of what ever was sinne in him, and would have repented of the Schisme, had it beene known to him, might be saved. Secondly, that in this Particular, the *Romanist* and the *Donatist* differ much; And that therefore it is not of necessity consequence, that if a *Romanist* now (upon the Conditions before expressed) may be saved; Therefore a *Donatist* heretofore might.

For

For in regard of the *Schisme* the *Donatist* was in one respect worse, and in greater danger of damnation then the *Romanist* now is: And in an other respect better, and in lesse danger. The *Donatist* was in greater danger of damnation, if you consider the *Schisme* it selfe then; for they brake from the *Orthodox Church* without any cause given them. And here it doth not follow, if the *Romanist* have a *Possibility of Salvation*, therefore a *Donatist* hath. But if you consider the *Cause* of the *Schisme* now, then the *Donatist* was in lesse danger of Damnation then the *Romanist* is; Because the *Church of Rome* gave the first and the greatest *cause* of the *Schisme* (as is proved [†] before.) And therefore here it doth not follow, That if a *Donatist* have possibility of Salvation, Therefore a *Romanist* hath; For a lesser Offender may have that possibility of safety, which a greater hath not.

† §. 21. N. 1 & C.

And last of all, whereas *A. C.* addes, that *confess- edly there is no such Perill*. That's a most lowd untruth, and an Ingenuous man would never have said it. For in the same * place, where I grant a possibility of Salvation in the *Romane Church*, I presently adde, that it is no secure way, in regard of *Romane Corruptions*. And *A. C.* cannot plead for himself that he either knew not this, or that he overlook'd it; for himselfe disputes against it as strongly as he can. What modesty, or Truth call you this? For he that confesses a *possibility of Salvation*, doth not thereby confesse no perill of Damnation in the same way. Yea but if some *Protestants* should say there is perill of Damnation to live and dye in the *Romane Faith*, their saying is nothing in comparison of the number or worth of those that say, there is none. So *A. C.* againe, And beside, they which say it, are contradicted by their owne more Learned Brethren. Here *A. C.* speakes very confusedly. But whether he speake of *Protestants*, or *Romanists*,

Punct. 6.

A. C. p. 66.

* §. 35. N. 1. 2.

A. C. p. 66.

or mixes both, the matter is not great. For as for the *Number* and *Worth* of men, they are no necessary Concluders for Truth Not *Number*; for who would be

† *Ingemuit totus Orbis, & Arrianum se esse miratus est.* S. Hier. *advers. Luciferian.* post medium. To. 2. *Arrianorum Venenum non jam portunculam quandam, sed penè Orbem totum contaminaverat, adeo ut propè cunctis Latini Sermoneis Episcopis partim vi, partim fraude deceptis, caligo quadam mentibus offunderetur.* &c. Vin. *Lir. cont. Hares.* c. 6. *Ecclesia non Parietibus consistit, sed in Dogmatum veritate. Ecclesia ibi est, ubi fides vera est. Ceterum ante annos quindecim, aut viginti, Parietes omnes hic Ecclesiarum Hæretici (de Arianis & aliis Hæreticis loquitur) possidebant &c. Ecclesia autem illic erat, ubi fides vera erat.* S. Hier. in *Psal.* 133. *Constantius. Tantane Orbis terre pars, Liberi, in te resides, ut tu solus homini Impio (de Athanasio loquitur) subsidio venire, & pacem Orbis ac Mundi totius dirimere audeas.* Liberius. *Esto quod ego solus sim, non tamen propterea Causa fidei sit inferior, nam olim tres solum erant reperti, qui Regis mandato resisterent &c.* Theod. L. 2. *Hist. Eccles.* c. 16. *Dialogo inter Constant. Imp. & Liberium Papam.* So that Pope did not think *Multitudo* any great note of the true Church. *Vbi sunt. &c. qui Ecclesiam multitudine definiunt, & parvum gregem aspernantur.* &c. Greg. Naz. *Orat.* 29. *prin.* Nay the *Arrians* were grown to that boldness that they Objected to the Catholics of that time *Paucitatem*, the thinness of their number, Greg. Naz. *Carm. de vita sua,* p. 24. *Edit. Paris.* 1611. *Quum ejelli tamen essent de Civitatibus, jactabant in desertis suis Synagogis illud: Multi vocati, pauci electi, Socr. L. 1. Hist. Eccl.* c. 10.

* *Error Origenis & Tertulliani magna fuit in Ecclesia Dei Populi tentatio,* Vin *Lir. cont. Har.* c. 23 & 24.

judged by the *Many*? The time was when the † *Arrians* were too many for the Orthodox. Not *Worth* simply, for that once* misled, is of all other the greatest misleader. And yet God forbid, that to *Worth* weaker men should not yeeld in difficult and *Perplexed Questions*; yet so, as that when *Matters Fundamentall* in the Faith come in Question they finally rest upon an higher, and clearer certainty then can be found in either *Number* or *Weight* of men. Besides, if you meane your own *Partie*

you have not yet proved your *Partie* more worthy for Life or Learning then the *Protestants*. Prove that first, and then it will be time to tell you, how worthy many of your *Popes* have beene for either *Life* or *Learning*. As for the rest, you may blush to say it. For all *Protestants* unanimously agree in this, That there is great perill of *Damnation* for any man to live and dye in the *Romane perswasion*. And you are not able to produce any one *Protestant*, that ever said the contrary. And therefore that is a most notorious slander, where

where you say, that they which affirme this perill of Damnation, are contradicted by their owne more Learned Brethren.

A. C. p. 66.

And thus having cleared the way against the Exceptions of A. C. to the two former Instances, I will now proceed (as I[†] promised) to make this farther appeare, that A. C. and his fellowes dare not stand to that ground, which is here laid downe. Namely, *That in Poynt of Faith and Salvation, it is safest for a man to take that way which the Adversary Confesses to be true, or whereon the differing Parties agree.* And that if they doe stand to it, they must be forced to maintaine the Church of England in many things against the Church of Rome.

NUM. 7.

† S. 35. N. 4.

And first, I Instance in the Article of our Saviour *Christ's Descent into Hell.* I hope the Church of Rome believes this Article, and withall that Hell is the place of the Damned, so doth the Church of England. In this then these dissenting Churches agree: Therefore according to the former Rule (yea and here in Truth too) 'tis safest for a man to believe this Article of the Creed, as both agree: That is, that Christ descended in Soule into the Place of the Damned. But this the Romanists will not endure at any hand. For the[†] Schoole agree in it, *That the Soule of Christ in the time of his death went really no farther then in Limbum Patrum, which is not the place of the Damned, but a Region or Quarter in the upper part of Hell, (as they call it) built up there by the Romanists, without Licence of either Scripture, or the Primitive Church.* And a man would wonder how those Builders with intempered mortar found light enough in that darke Place to build as they have done.

Punct. 1.

† Sequuntur enim Thom. p. 3. q. 52. Ar. 2. c. Verba ejus sunt. Anima Christi per suam essentiam descendit scilicet ad locum inferni, in quo iusti detinebantur. &c. Ezech. 13. 10.

Secondly, I Instance in the Institution of the Sacrament in both kinds. That Christ Instituted it so, is confessed by both Churches; that the Ancient Churches received it so, is agreed by both Churches. Therefore according

Punct. 2.

**Basilienſe Concilium conceſſit Bohemis utriusque ſpeciei uſum: modo ſacerentur id ſibi concedi ab Eccleſiā, non autem ad hoc tene- ri Divino jure. Bel. L. 1. de Sa- crament. in gene- re. c. 2. §. 2.*

†*Tho. p. 3. q. 76. A. 2. c. & alibi paſſim.*

according to the former *Rule* (and here in *Truth* too) 'tis ſafeſt for a man to receive this Sacrament in both kindes. And yet here this Ground of *A. C.* muſt not ſtand for good, no not at *Rome*, but to receive in one kinde is enough for the *Laity*. And the poore * *Bohemians* muſt have a *Dispensation*, that it may be lawfull for them to receive the Sacrament as Chriſt commanded them. And this muſt not be granted to them neither, unleſſe they will acknowledge (moſt oppoſite to *Truth*) that they are not bound by *Divine Law* to receive it in both kindes. And here their Building with untampered *Mortar* appeares moſt manifeſtly. For they have no ſhew to maintaine this, but the fiction of *Thomas of Aquin*, That he which receives the *Body of Chriſt*, receives alſo his *Blood* per † *concomitantiam*, by concomitancy; becauſe the *Blood* goes alwayes with the *Body*, of which Terme † *Thomas* was the firſt Author I can yet finde. Firſt then, if this be true, I hope Chriſt knew it: And then why did he ſo unuſefully inſtitute it in both kindes? Next, if this be true, *Concomitancy* accompanys the *Prieſt*, as well as the *People*; and then why may not he receive it in one kinde alſo? Thirdly, this is apparently not true; For the *Eucharist* is a Sacrament *Sanguinis effuſi*, of *Blood* ſhed, and poured out; And *Blood* poured out, and ſo ſevered from the *Body*, goes not along with the *Body* per *concomitantiam*. And yet Chriſt muſt rather erre, or proceed I know not how in the Inſtitution of the Sacrament in both kindes, rather then the *Holy* warring Church of *Rome* may doe amiſſe in the Determination for it, and the Adminiſtration of it in one kinde. Nor will the Diſtinction, That Chriſt inſtituted this as a Sacrifice, to which both kindes were neceſſary, ſerve the turne; For ſuppoſe that true, yet hee inſtituted it, as a Sacrament alſo,

or

or els that Sacrament had no Institution from Christ, which I presume A. C. dares not affirme. And that Institution which this Sacrament had from Christ, was in *both kinds*.

And since here's mention happen'd of Sacrifice, my *Punct. 3.*

Third Instance shall be in the Sacrifice which is offer'd up to God in that *Great and High Mystery* of our *Redemption* by the death of *Christ*: For as Christ offer'd up^a himselfe once for all, a full and all-sufficient Sacrifice for the sinne of the *whole world*. So did He Institute, and Command^b a Memory of this Sacrifice in a Sacrament, even till his comming againe. For at, and in the *Eucharist*, wee offer up to God *three Sacrifices*. One by the *Priest* onely, that's the^c *Commemorative Sacrifice* of *Christs Death* represented in Bread broken, and Wine

^a Christ by his owne Blood entred once into the Holy Place, and obtained eternall Redemption for us. *Heb. 9. 12.* And this was done by way of Sacrifice. By the offering of the Body of Iesus Christ once made. *Heb. 10. 10.* Christ gave himselfe for us, to be an Offering, and a Sacrifice of a sweet smelling savour unto God. *Eph. 5. 2.* Out of which place the Schoole infers, *Passionem Christi verum Sacrificium fuisse*. *Tho. p. 3. q. 48. Art. 3. c.* Christ did suffer Death upon the Crosse for our Redemption, and made there, by his one Oblation of himselfe once offered, a full, perfect, and sufficient Sacrifice, Oblation and Satisfaction for the sinnes of the whole World. *Eccles. Ang. in Canone Consecrationis, Euchar.*

^b And Christ did Institute, and in his Holy Gospell Command us to continue a Perpetuall Memory of that his precious Death, untill his Comming againe. *Eccles. Ang. ibid.*

^c *Sacramentum hoc est Commemorative Dominice Passionis, quæ fuit verum Sacrificium; & sic Nominatur Sacrificium* *Tho. p. 3. q. 73. A. 4. C.* Christ being Offer'd up once for all in his owne proper Person, is yet said to be Offer'd up &c. in the Celebration of the Sacrament; Because his Oblation once for ever made, is thereby Represented. *Lambert in Fox his Martyrolog. Vol. 2. Edit. Lond. 1597. p. 1033 Et postea.* 'Tis a Memoriall, or Representation thereof. *Ibid.* The Master of the Sentences judged truly in this Point, saying: That which is offer'd and Consecrated of the Priest, is called a Sacrifice and Oblation, because it is a Memory, and Representation of the true Sacrifice, and Holy Oblation made on the Altar of the Crosse. *Arch-Bishop Cranmer* in his Answer to Bishop *Gardner* concerning the most Holy Sacrament. *L. 5. p. 377.* And againe this shortly is the minde of *Lombardus*, That the thing which is done at Gods Board is a Sacrifice, and so is that also which was made upon the Crosse, but not after one manner of understanding, For this was the Thing indeed, and that is the Commemoration of the Thing. *Ibid.* So likewise Bishop *Jewel* acknowledgeth *incruentum & rationabile Sacrificium*, spoken of by *Euseb. De Demonstrat. Evang. L. 1. Jewels Reply against Harding. Art. 7. Divis. 9.* Againe, The ministrat[i]on of the Holy Communion is sometimes of the Ancient Fathers called an *Vnbloody-Sacrifice*, not in respect of any Corporall or fleshy presence, that is imagined to be there without Blood-shedding, but for that it representeth, and reporteth to our minds that one, and everlasting Sacrifice that Christ made in his

Rr

poured

Body upon the Crosse. This Bishop Jewel dililiketh not in his Answer to Harding: *Art. 17. Divis. 14. Patres Cœnam Dominicam duplici de causa vocarunt Sacrificium incruentum. Tum quod sit imago & solennis representatio illius Sacrificii inæstus quod Christus cum sanguinis effusione obtulit in Cruce: Tum quod sit etiam Eucharisticum Sacrificium, id est, Sacrificium Laudis & gratiarum actionis, cum pro beneficiis omnibus, tum pro redemptione imprimis per Christi mortem peractâ.* Zanch. in 2. *Præcep. Decal. T. 4. p. 459* And D. Fulke also acknowledges a Sacrifice in the Eucharist. In *S. Mat. 26. 26. Non dissimulaverint Christiani in Cœna Domini, sive ut ipsi loquebantur, in Sacrificio Altaris peculiari quodam modo præsentem se venerari Deum Christianorum, sed quæ esset forma ejus sacrificii quod per Symbola Panis & vini peragitur, hoc Veteres præ se non ferebant.* Isa, Casaub. *Exercit. 16. ad Annal. Baron. §. 43. p. 560.*

* In the Liturgie of the Church of England we pray to God immediately after the reception of the Sacrament, That He would bee pleased to accept this *our Sacrifice of Praise and Thanksgiving &c.* And *Heb. 13. 15.* The Sacrifice Propitiatory was made by Christ himselfe only, but the Sacrifice Commemorative and Gratulatory is made by the Priest and the People. *Archbishop Cranmer* in his Answer to *Bishop Gardner.* L. 5 p. 377.

† I beseech you Brethren by the mercies of God, that you give up your Bodies a living Sacrifice, holy, and acceptable unto God. *Rom. 12. 1.* We offer, and present unto thee, O Lord, our selves, our soules, and bodies, to be a reasonable, holy and living Sacrifice unto thee. So the *Church of England* in the Prayer after the receiving of the Blessed Sacrament.

poured out. Another by the * Priest & the People, joyntly, and that is the *Sacrifice of Praise and Thanksgiving*, for all the Benefits and graces we receive by the precious Death of Christ. The Third, † by every particular man for himselfe only, and that is the *Sacrifice of every mans Body, and Soul*, to serve him in both, all the rest of his life, for this blessing thus bestowed on him.

Now thus farre these dissenting Churches agree, that in the *Eucharist*, there is a *Sacrifice of Duty*, and a *Sacrifice of Praise*, and a *Sacrifice of Commemoration* of Christ. Therefore according to the former Rule (and here in truth too) 'tis safest for a man to believe the Commemorative, the Praising, and the Performing Sacrifice, and to offer them duly to God, and leave the *Church of Rome* in this Particular to her Superstitions, that I may say no more. And would the *Church of Rome* stand to *A. C^s* Rule, and believe dissenting Parties where they agree, were it but in this, and that before, of the *Reall Presence*, it would work farre toward the Peace of *Christendome*. But the *Truth* is; They pretend the *Peace of Christendome*, but care no more for it, then

then as it may uphold at least, if not increase their owne Greatnesse.

My fourth Instance shall be in the Sacrament of Baptisme, and the things required as necessary to make it effectually to the Receiver. They in the common received Doctrine of the Church of Rome are three. The Matter, the Forme, and the Intention of the Priest, to doe that which the Church doth, and intends he should doe. Now all other Divines, as well ancient as moderne, and both the dissenting Churches also, agree in the two former; but many deny that the Intention of the Priest is necessary. Will A. C. hold his Rule, That 'tis safest to believe in a controverted Point of Faith that which the dissenting Parties agree on, or which the Adverse Part Confesses? If he will not, then why should he presse that, as a Rule to direct others, which he will not be guided by himselfe? And if he will, then he must goe professedly against the * Council of Trent, which hath determined it as *de fide*, as a Point of Faith, that the Intention of the Priest is necessary to make the Baptisme true and valid. Though in the † History of that Council, 'tis most apparent the Bishops and other Divines there could not tell what to answer to the Bishop of Mmors, a Neapolitane, who declared his Iudgement openly against it, in the face of that Council.

Punct. 4.

* *Con. Trid. Sess. 7. Can. 11.*

† *Histor. Con. Trid. L. 2. p. 277. Edit. Lat. Lej² de. 1622.*

My fifth Instance is. Wee say, and can easily prove there are divers Errors, and some grosse ones in the Roman Missall. But I my selfe have heard some Jesuites confesse, that in the Liturgie of the Church of England, there's noe positive errour. And being pressed, why then they refused to come to our Churches, and serve God with us? They answered, they could not doe it; Because though our Liturgie had in it nothing ill, yet it wanted a great deale of that which was good, and was in their Service. Now

Punct. 5.

here let *A. C.* consider againe, Here is a plaine *Concession of the adverse Part*: And Both agree, there's nothing in our *Service*, but that which is holy and good. What will the *Iesuite*, or *A. C.* say to this? If hee forlake his ground, then it is not safest in point of Divine Worship to joyne in Faith as the dissenting Parties agree, or to stand to the Adversaries owne Confession. If hee be so hardy as to maintaine it, then the *English Liturgie* is better, and safer to worship God by, then the *Romane Masse*. Which yet, I presume, *A. C.* will not confesse.

NUM. 8.

In all these *Instances* (the Matter so falling out of it selfe, for the Argument enforces it not) the thing is true, but not therefore true, because the dissenting Parties agree in it, or because the adverse Part Confesses it. Yet least the *Iesuite*, or *A. C.* for him, farther to deceive the weake, should inferre that this Rule in so many Instances is true, and false in none, but that one concerning *Baptisme* among the *Donatists*, and therefore the Argument is true *ut plerumq;*, as for the most, and that therefore 'tis the safest way to believe that which dissenting Parties agree on; I will lay downe some other *Particulars* of as great Consequence, as any can be in, or about *Christian Religion*. And if in them *A. C.* or any *Iesuite* dare say, that 'tis safest to believe as the dissenting Parties agree, or as the adverse Partie confesses, I dare say he shall bee an *Heretick* in the highest degree, if not an *Infidell*.

Punct. 1.

And First, where the Question was betwixt the *Orthodox*, and the *Arrian*, whether the Son of God were consubstantiall with the Father. The *Orthodox* said he was *ὁμοούσιος* of the same substance. The *Arrian* came with in a Letter of the Truth, and said he was *ὁμοιόσιος* of like substance. Now hee that sayes, hee is of the same substance, confesses hee is of like substance, and

and more, that is, *Identity* of Substance; for *Identity* contains in it all Degrees of likenesse, and more. But hee that acknowledges, and believes, that Hee is of like nature, and no more, denies the *Identity*: Therefore if this Rule be true, That it is safest to believe that, in which the dissenting Parties agree, or which the Adverse Part Confesses, (which A. C. makes such great vaunt of) then 'tis safest for a Christian to believe that Christ is of like nature with God the Father, and bee free from Beliefe, that Hee is Consubstantiall with him, which yet is Concluded by the ^a Councell of Nice as necessary to Salvation, and the Contrary Condemned for Damnable Heresie.

A. C. p. 64. 65.

^a Con. Nicen.
Fides vel Sym-
bolum in fine
Concil.

Secondly, in the Question about the Resurrecti- Punct. 2.

on, betweene the Orthodoxe, and diverse Groſſe ^b Heretickes of old, and the Anabaptists and Libertines of late. For all, or most of these

^b Saturninus, Basilides, Carpocrates, Cerinthus, Valentinus, Cerdon, Apelles, &c. Tertull. de praescript. advers. Haeret. c. 46. 48. 49. 51. &c.

dissenting Parties agree, that there ought to bee a Resurrection from sinne to a state of Grace, and that this Resurrection onely is meant in diverse Passages of holy Scripture, together with the Life of the Soule, which they are

content to say is Immortall. But they utterly deny any Resurrection of the Body after Death: So with them that Article of the Creed is gone. Now then if any man will guide his Faith by this Rule of A. C. The Consent of dissenting Parties, or the Confession of the Adverse Part, hee must denie the

^c Libertini rident spem omnem quam de Resurrectione habemus, idque jam nobis evenisse dicunt, quod adhuc expectamus, &c. ut Homo sciat Animam suam Spiritum immortalem esse perpetuo viventem in Coelis, &c. Calv. instructione advers. Libertinos c. 22. princ. Sunt etiam hodie Libertini qui eam irridunt, & Resurrectionem qua tractatur in Scripturis, tantum ad Animas referunt. Pet. Mart. Loc. Com. Class. 3. Ca. 15. Num. 4.

Resurrection of the Body from the Grave to Glory,

Punct. 3.

and believe none but that of the Soule, from sinne to Grace, which the *Adversaries* Confesse, and in which the *Dissenting Parties* agree.

Thirdly, in the great Dispute of all others, about the *Unity of the Godhead*. All dissenting parties, *Jew*, *Turke*, and *Christian*: Among Christians *Orthodoxe*, and *Anti-Trinitarian* of old: And in these later times, *Orthodoxe* and *Socinian* (that Horrid and mighty monster of all *Heresies*) agree in this, That there is but one God. And I hope it is as necessary to believe one God our Father, as one Church our Mother. Now will A.C. say here, 'tis safest believing as the dissenting Parties agree, or as the Adverse Parties Confesse, namely, That there is but one God, and so deny the Trinity, and therefore with the Sonne of God the Saviour of the world?

Punct. 4.

Fourthly, in a Point as Fundamentall in the Faith, as this, Namely, whether Christ be true and very God.

For which very Point, most of the ^a Martyrs in the Primitive Church laid down their lives. The dissenting Parties here were the *Orthodoxe* Believers, who affirme Hee is both God and Man; for so our Creed teaches us: And all those *Hereticks*, which affirme Christ to bee Man, but denie him to bee God, as the ^b Arrians, and ^c Carpocratians, and ^d Cerinthus, and ^e Hebion, with others: and at this day the ^f Socinians. These dissenting Parties agree fully and clearly, That Christ is Man. Well then. Dare A.C. sticke to his Rule here, and say 'tis safest for a Christian in this great Point of Faith to governe his Beliefe by

^a Hebr. 11. 37. *Cyrellus Alexandrinus malè audivit, quod Ammonium Martyrem appellavit, quem constituit temeritatis pœnas dedisse, & non Necessitate negandi Christi in tormentis esse mortuum.* Socr. *Hist. Eccl. L. 7. c. 14.*

^b Optatus L. 4. *Cont. Parmen.*

^c Tertul. L. de *Præscrip.* c. 48.

^d Tertul. *Ibid.*

^e Tertul. L. de *Carne Christi.* c. 14.

^f *Si ad Iesu Christi respicias Essentiam atque Naturam, non nisi Hominem eum fuisse constantè affirmamus.* Volkelius Lib. 3. de *Religione Christiana.* cap. 1.

by the Consent of these dissenting Parties, or the Confession and acknowledgement of the Adverse Partie, and so settle his Beliefe, that Christ is a meere Man, and not God? I hope hee dares not. So then, this Rule, To Resolve a mans Faith into that, in which the Dissenting Parties agree, or which the Adverse Part confesses, is as often false, as true. And false in as Great, if not Greater Matters, then those, in which it is true. And where 'tis true, A. C. and his fellowes dare not governe themselves by it, the Church of Rome condemning those things which that Rule proves. And yet while they talke of Certainty, nay of Infallibility, (lesse will not serve their turnes) they are driven to make use of such poore shifts as these, which have no certainty at all of Truth in them, but inferre falshood and Truth alike. And yet for this also men will be so weake, or so wilfull, as to be seduced by them.

I told you * before, That the force of the preceding Argument lies upon two things. The one expressed, and that's past; the other upon the Bye, which comes now to be handled: And that is your continual poore Out-cry against us, That we cannot be saved, because we are out of the Church. Sure if I thought I were out, I would get in as fast as

I could. For we confesse as well as you, That ^a Out of the Catholike Church of Christ there is no Salvation. But what do you meane by Out of the Church? Sure out of the ^b Ro-

^a *Extra Ecclesiam neminem Divificat Spiritus Sanctus. S. Aug. Epist. 50. ad simonem. Field. L. 1. de Eccles. c. 13. Una est Fidelium Universalis Ecclesia, extra quam nullus salvatur. Conc. Lateran. Can. 1.* And yet even there, there's no mention of the Romane Church.

mane Church. Why but the Romane Church and the Church of England are but two distinct members of that Catholike Church which is spread over the face of the earth. Therefore Rome is not the House where the Church dwels, but Rome it selfe, as well as other particular

^b And to doth A. C. too: Out of the Catholike Romane Church there is no Possibility of Salvation. A. C. p. 65.

Particular Churches, dwells in this great Univerſall

* And *Daughter Zion* was God's owne phraſe of old of the Church, *Iſa. 1. 8.* ἡ πόλις ἥτις Ἰερουσαλὴμ ὅτερον τὸν λόγον περιπεριλειπεν, καὶ ἡ πόλις Σιών τῆς πλεως. ἡ πόλις τῆς ἐκκλησίας. Hyppol. *Orat. de Conſum. mundi. Et omnis Eccleſia Virgo appellata eſt.* S. Aug. *Tr. 13. in S. Ioh.*

† For Chriſt was to be preached to all Nations, but that Preaching was to begin at *Ieruſalem*, S. *Luc. 24. 47.* according to the Propheſie, *Mic. 4. 2.* And the Diſciples were firſt called *Chriſtians* at *Antioch*, *Act. 11. 26.* And therefore there was a Church there, before ever S. *Peter* came thence to ſettle One at *Rome*. Nor is it an Opinion deſtitute either of Authority, or Probability, That the Faith of Chriſt was preached, and the Sacraments adminiſtred here in *England*, before any ſettlement of a Church in *Rome*. For S. *Gildas* the Ancienteſt monument we have, and whom the Romaniſts themſelves reverence, ſayes expreſly, That the Religion of Chriſt was received in *Britannie*, *Tempore (ut ſcimus) ſummo Tiberii Caſaris, &c.* In the later time of *Tiberius Caſar*, *Gildas* de excid. *Brit.* whereas S. *Peter* kept in *Jewrie* long after *Tiberius* his death. Therefore the firſt Conſervation of this Iſland to the Faith, was not by S. *Peter*. Nor from *Rome*, which was not then a Church, Againſt this *Rich. Broughton* in his Eccleſiaſticall Hiſtory of *Great Brittain*, *Centur. 1. C. 8. §. 4.* ſayes expreſly: *That the Proteſtants do freely acknowledge, that this Clauſe of the time of Tiberius (tempore ſummo Tiberii Caſaris) is wanting in other Copies of that holy Writer, and namely in that which was ſet forth by Pol. Virgil, and others.* Whereas firſt theſe words are expreſſe in a moſt faire, and ancient Manuſcript of *Gildas* to be ſeene in S^r. *Rob. Cotton's* Study, if any doubt it. Secondly, theſe words are as expreſſe in the printed Edition of *Gildas* by *Polyd. Virg.* which Edition was printed at *London*, *An. 1525.* and was never reprinted ſince. Thirdly, theſe words are as expreſſe in the Edition of *Gildas*, by *Io. Iofelin*, printed at *London* alſo, *An. 1568.* And this falſhood of *Broughton* is ſo much the more foule, becauſe he boatts (Præfat. to his Reader, ſine.) *That he hath ſeene and diligently peruſed the moſt, and beſt Monuments and Antiquities extant, &c.* For if he did not ſee and peruſe theſe, he is vainly falſe to ſay it: if he did ſee them, he is moſt maliciously falſe to belie them. And laſtly, whereas he ſayes: The Proteſtants themſelves confeſſe ſo much, I muſt believe he is as falſe in this as in the former, till he name the *Proteſtants* to me, which do confeſſe it. And when he doth, he ſhall gaine but this from me, That thoſe Proteſtants which confeſſed it, were miſtaken. For the thing is miſtaken.

House, unleſſe you will ſhut up the Church in *Rome*, as the *Donatiſts* did in *Africke*. I come a little lower. *Rome* and other *Nationall Churches* are in this Univerſall Catholike Houſe as ſo many * *Daughters*, to whom (under Chriſt) the care of the Houſehold is committed by God the Father, and the Catholike Church the Mother of all Chriſtians. *Rome*, as an *Elder Siſter*, but not the *Elderſt* neither, had a great Care committed unto her, in, and from the prime times of the Church, and to her *Biſhop* in Her: but at this time (to let paſſe many brawles that have formerly beene in the Houſe) *England*, and ſome other *Siſters* of hers are fallen out in the Family. What then? Will the Father, and the Mother, God, and the Church, caſt one Child out, becauſe another is angry

angry with it? when did Christ give that power to an Elder Sister, that She, and her Steward, the Bishop there, should thrust out what Child shee pleased? Especially when shee her selfe is justly accused to have given the Offence that is taken in the House? Or will not both Father, and Mother be sharper to Her for this unjust and unnaturall usage of her younger Sisters, but their deare Children? Nay, is it not the next way to make them turne her out of doores, that is so unnaturall to the rest? It is well for all Christian men and Churches, that the Father and Mother of them are not so curst as some would have them. And Salvation need not bee feared of any dutifull Child, nor Outing from the Church, because this Elder Sisters faults are discovered in the House, and shee growne froward for it against them that complained. But as Children cry when they are waked out of sleepe, so doe you, and wrangle with all that come neare you. And * Stapleton confesses, *That yee were in a dead sleep, and over-much rest, when the Protestants stole upon you.* Now if you can prove that Rome is properly The † Catholike Church it selfe (as you commonly call it) speak out and prove it. In the meane time, you may Marke this too, if you will, and it seemes you doe; for here you forget not what the Bishop said to you.

* *Returne of Untruths upon M. Jewell.*
Art. 4. Vntruth 105.

† For I am sure there is a Romane Church, that is but a Particular. *Bel-larm. L. 4. de Rom. Pont. c. 4.* And then you must either shew me another Romane Church, which is *The Catholike*: Or you must shew how One and the same Romane Church is in different Respects or Relations *A Particular*, and yet *The Catholike*. Which is not yet done. And I do not say, *A Particular*, and yet *A Catholike*; But *A Particular*, and yet *The Catholike Church*: For so you speake. For that which Card. Peron hath, That the *Romane Church* is the *Catholike Causality*, because it infuses Vniversality into all the whole Body of the Catholike Church, can, I thinke, satisfie no man that reads it. That a Particular should infuse Vniversality into an Vniversall. *Peron L. 4. of his Reply. c. 9.*

F. *The Lady which doubted (said the Bishop to mee) may be better saved in it, then you.*

§. 36.

* Rom. 14. 4.

B. I said so indeed. Marke that too. Where yet by the way, these words (*Then you*) doe not suppose Person only. For I will ludge * no man, that hath another Master to stand or fall to. But they suppose Calling and Sufficiency in the Person. Then you, that is, Then any man of your Calling and knowledge, of whom more is required. And then no question of the truth of this speech, That that Person may better be saved (that is easier)

† *Ceteram turbam non intelligendi vivacitas, sed credendi simplicitas tutissimam facit. S. Aug. cont. Fund. c. 4.*

Σά'ει πολλὰ κ' ἴδῃ λαὸν ἰδὲ ἁλοαμένον. Ναζ. Γρατ. 21. Omission of Inquiry many times saves the People * Heretickes in respect of the Profession of sundry Divine Verities which they still retain in common with right Believers, &c. doe still pertaine to the Church Field, L. 1. de Eccles. c. 14. *Potest aliquis Ecclesia membrum esse secundum quid, qui tamen simpliciter non est. Hæreticus recedens à Fide, non dimittitur ut Paganus, sed propter Baptismi Characterem, puniatur ut transfuga, & excommunicationis gladio Spiritualiter occiditur. Stapl. Contro. 1. q. 2. A. 3. Notabili. 3.*

The Apostle pronounces some gone out, S. *Iob*, 2. 19. from the fellowship of sound Believers, when as yet the Christian Religion they had not utterly cast off. In like sense and meaning, throughout all Ages, Heretikes have justly bene hated as Branches cut off from the true Vine, yet onely so far forth cut off, as the Hæresies have extended. For both Hæresie, and many other Crimes which wholly sever from God, doe sever from the Church of God, but in part only. Hooker. L. 5, Eccles. Pol. §. 68.

then you, then any man that knowes so much of truth, and opposes against it, as you, and others of your Calling doe. How far you know Truth other men may judge by your Proofes, and Causes of knowledge; but how far you oppose Truth knowne to you, that is within, and no man can know, but God and yourselves. Howsoever, where the Foundation is but held, there for † ordinary men, it is not the vivacity of understanding, but the simplicity of Believing, that makes them safe. For S. Augustine speaks there, of men in the Church; and no * man can be said simply to be Out of the Visible

Church, that is Baptized, and holds the Foundation. And as it is the simplicity of believing, that makes them safe, yea safest, so is it sometimes, A quicknesse of Understanding

Understanding, that loving it selfe, and some by-respects too well, makes men take up an unsafe way about the *Faith*. So that there's no question, but many were saved in corrupted times of the Church, when their ^a *Leaders*, unless they repented before death, were lost. And ^b *S. Augustine's Rule* will bee true, That in all Corruptions of the Church, there will ever bee a difference betweene an Hereticke, and a plaine well meaning man that is misled, and believes an Hereticke. Yet here let mee adde this for fuller Expression: This must bee understood of such *Leaders* and *Hereticks* as ^c refuse to heare the Churches Instruction, or to use all the meanes they can, to come to the knowledge of the Truth. For else, if they doe this, *Erre* they may, but *Heretickes* they are not, as is most manifest in ^d *S. Cyprian's Case* of *Rebaptization*. For here, though he were a maine *Leader* in that *Error*, yet all the whole Church grant him safe; and his ^e *Followers* in danger of damnation. But if any man be a *Leader*, and a *Teaching Heretick*, and will add ^f *Schisme* to *Heresie*, and bee obstinate in both, he without repentance must needs bee lost, while many that succeed him in the *Error* onely, without the *Obstinacie*, may bee saved. For, they which are misled, and swayed with the Current of the time, hold the same Errours with their misleaders, yet not *supinely*, but with all sober diligence to finde out the Truth: Not *pertinaciously*, but with all readinesse to submit to Truth, so soone as it shall bee found: Not *uncharitably*, but

^a *Ipsis Magistris percunibus: nisi forte ante mortem resipuerint.* Luth. de Serv. Arbit.
^b *Hereticarum plures peccant, quam alii qui Heresim aliquam sunt secuti.* Supplem. Tho q. 99. A. 4. c
^c *Si mihi videtur unus & idem Hereticus, & Hereticis credens homo, &c.* S. Aug. L. 1. de Util. Cred. c. 1.

^c *S. Mat. 18. 17. Qui oppugnant Regulam Veritatis.* S. Aug. L. de Hereticis: versus finem.

^d *Cyprianum Beatus, & Martyr.* S. Aug. L. 1. de Bapt. cont. Donatist. c. 18.

^e *Donatiste vero (qui de Cypriani Auctoritate sibi carnaliter blandiuntur.* S. Aug. L. 1. de Bapt. cont. Donat. c. 18.) *nimum miseri, & nisi se corrigant, à semetipsis omnino damnati, qui hoc in tanto viro eligunt imitari.* Ibid. c. 19.

^f *Rei falsitatis (circa accusatum Coccilianum) deprehensum Donatistam, pertinacis dissensione firmatam, schisma in Heresim verterunt.* S. Aug. L. de Hares. Har. 69. *Et Tales sub Vocabulo Christiano doctrinerecesserunt Christiane.* S. Aug. L. 18. de Civ. Dei. c. 51. prin.

retaining an *internall Communion* with the Whole Visible Church of Christ in the Fundamentall Points of Faith, and performance of Acts of Charity, not *factiously*, but with an earnest desire, and a sincere endeavour (as their Place, and Calling gives them meanes) for a perfect Union, and Communion of all Christians in *Truth* as well as *Peace*. I say these, however misled, are neither *Hetericks*, nor *Schismatics* in the sight of God, and are therefore in a state of Salvation. And were not this true *Divinity*, it would go very hard with many poore Christian soules, that have been, and are misled on all sides in these and other *Distracted times* of the Church of Christ; Whereas thus *habituated* in them-

* *Qui etsi ipsi postmodum ad Ecclesiam redeunt, restituere tamen eos, & secum revocare non possunt, qui ab iis seducti sunt, & foris morte praeveniti extra Ecclesiam sine Communicatione & pace perierunt, quorum Anima in die Iudicii de ipsorum manibus expetetur, qui perditionis Authores, & duces extiterunt.*
S. Cypr. L. 2, Epist. 1.

selves, they are, by God's mercy, safe in the midst of those waves, in which their *Misleaders* perish. I pray you *Marke this*, and so, by God's Grace will I. For our *reckoning will bee heavier, if wee thus mislead on either side, then *theirs* that follow us. But I see,

I must look to my selfe; for you are secure: For,

F. D. White (said I) hath secured mee, that none of our *Errours* be damnable, so long as we hold them not against our *Conscience*. And I hold none against my *Conscience*.

§. 37.
NUM. I.

B. It seemes then you have two Securities: D. White's Assertion, and your Conscience. What Assurance D. White gave you, I cannot tell of my selfe; nor, as things stand, may I rest upon your Relation. It may be you use him no better then you do mee. And sure it is so. For I have since spoken
with

with D. White the late Reverend B. of Ely, and he avows this, and no other Answer. He was asked in the Conference betwene you, Whether Popish Errours were Fundamentall? To this he gave an Answer, by Distinction of the Persons which held and professed the Errours: Namely, that the Errours were Fundamentall reductive, by a Reducement, if they which embraced them, did pertinaciously adhere to them, having sufficient meanes to be better informed: Nay farther, that they were materially and in the very kinde and Nature of them, Leaven, Dross,^a Hay, and Stubble. Yet he ^a I Cor. 3. 12. thought withall, that such as were misled by education, or long custome, or over valuing the Sovereignty of the Roman Church, and did in simplicity of heart embrace them, might by their generall Repentance, and Faith in the Merit of Christ, attended with Charity, and other Vertues, finde mercy at Gods hands. But that he should say signanter, and expresly, That none either of yours, or your Fellowes Errours were damnable, so long as you hold them not against Conscience, that he utterly disavowes. You delivered nothing to extort such a Confession from him. And for your selfe, he could observe but small love of Truth, few signes of Grace in you (as he told me:) Yet he will not presume to judge you, or your salvation; It is the ^b Word of Christ that must judge you at the later day. For ^b S Iohn 12. 48. your Conscience, you are the happier in your Errour, that you hold nothing against it, especially if you speak not against it, while you say so. But this no man can know, but your selfe; ^c For no man knowes the thoughts of a man, but the Spirit of a man that is within him, to which I ^c I Cor. 2. 11. leave you.

To this A. C. replies. And first he grants, that ^{NUM. 2.} D. White did not signanter and expresly say these precise words. ^{A.C.p.67.} So then here's his plaine Confession: Not these precise words. Secondly he saith, that neither did D. White signanter and expresly make the Answer above mentioned. But to this I can make no Answer, since I

was not present at the first or second Conference. Thirdly, he saith that the Reason which moved the Iesuite, to say D. White had secured him, was because the said Doctor had granted in his first Conference with the Iesuite these things following. First, That there must be one or other Church continually visible. Though D. White, late Bishop of Ely, was more able to Answer for himselfe, yet since he is now dead, and is thus drawne into this Discourse, I shall, as well as I can, doe him the right, which his Learning, and Paines for the Church deserved. And to this first, I grant as well as he, That there must be some one Church or other continually visible: Or that the Militant Church of Christ must alwayes be visible in some Particulars, or Particular at least (expresse it as you please.) For if this be not so, then there may be a time in which there shall not any where be a visible Profession of the Name of Christ; which is contrary to the whole scope and promise of the Gospell.

NUM. 3.
A.C.p. 67.

Well. What then? Why then A.C. addes, That D. White confessed that this Visible Church had in all ages taught that unchanged Faith of Christ in all Points Fundamentall. D. White had reason to say that the Visible Church taught so; but that this or that Particular Visible Church did so teach, sure D. White affirmed not; unlesse in case the whole Visible Church of Christ were reduced to one Particular only.

NUM. 4.
A.C.p. 67.

But suppose this. What then? Why then A.C. telles us, that D. White being urged to assigne such a Church, expressly granted he could assigne none different from the Romane, which held in all ages all Points Fundamentall. Now here I would faine know what A.C. meanes by a Church different from the Romane. For if he mean different in Place; 'Tis easie to affirme the Greeke Church (which as hath * before beene prooved) hath ever held, and taught the Foundation in the midst of all her Pressures.

* §. 2.

And

And if he meane *different* in Doctrinall Things, and those about the Faith, he cannot assigne the Church of Rome for holding them in all ages. But if he meane *different* in the Foundation it selfe, the Creed, then his urging to assigne a Church, is void, be it Rome, or any other. For if any other Church shall thus differ from Rome, or Rome from it selfe, as to deny this Foundation, it doth not, it cannot remaine a Differing Church, *sed transit in Non Ecclesiam*, but passes away into No-Church, upon the Denyall of the Creed.

Now what A. C. meanes, he expresses not, nor can I tell, but I may peradventure guesse neare it, by that which out of these Premises, he would inferre. For hence he tels us, *he gathered that D. White's Opinion was, That the Romane Church held and taught in all ages unchanged Faith in all Fundamentall Points, and did not in any age erre in any Point Fundamentall.* This is very well. For A. C. confesses, he did but gather, that this was Doctor White's Opinion. And what if he gathered that, which grew not there, nor thence? For suppose all the Premises true, yet no Cartrope can draw this Conclusion out of them. And then all A. C's. labour's lost. For grant some one Church or other must still be Visible: And grant that this Visible Church held all Fundamentals of the Faith in all ages. And grant againe that D. White could not assigne any Church *differing from the Romane*, that did this; Yet this will not follow, that therefore the Romane did it. And that because there's more in the Conclusion, then in the Premises. For A. C's. Conclusion is, *That in D. White's Opinion the Romane Church held and taught in all ages unchanged Faith in all Fundamentall Points,* And so farre perhaps the Conclusion may stand, taking Fundamentall Points in their literall sense, as they are expressed in Creedes, and approved Councils. But then he addes, *And did not in any age erre in any Point*

NUM. 5.

A. C. p. 67.

A. C. p. 67.

Point Fundamentall. Now this can never follow out of the *Premises* before laid downe. For say some one Church or other may still be Visible; And that Visible Church hold all *Fundamentall Points* in all Ages; And no man be able to name another Church different from the *Church of Rome*, that hath done this; yet it followes not therefore, *That the Church of Rome did not erre in any age in any Point Fundamentall.* For a Church may hold the *Fundamentall Point Literally*, and as long as it staves there, be without controule, and yet erre grossly, dangerously, nay dammally in the *Exposition* of it. And this is the *Church of Romes* case. For most true it is, it hath in all ages maintained the Faith unchanged in the Expression of the *Articles* themselves; but it hath in the exposition both of *Creeds*, and *Councils*, quite changed, and lost the sense, and the meaning of some of them. So the Faith is in many things changed both for life and belife, and yet seems the same. Now that which deceives the world is, That because the *Barke* is the same, men thinke this old decayed Tree, is as sound as it was at first, and not weather-beaten in any age. But when they can make me believe that *Painting* is true *Beauty*, I'll believe too, that *Rome* is not only sound, but beautifull.

NUM. 6.
A. C. p. 67.

But *A. C.* goes on and tels us, *That hereupon the Iesuite asked, whether Errors in Points not Fundamental were damnable? And that D. White answered, they were not, unlesse they were held against conscience.* Tis true, that Error in Points not *Fundamentall* is the more damnable, the more it is held against conscience; But it is true too, that Error in Points not *Fundamentall* may be damnable to some men, though they hold it not against their conscience. As namely, when they hold an *Error* in some *Dangerous Points*, which grate upon the *Foundation*, and yet will neither seeke the *meanes* to know the *Truth*,

nor

nor accept and believe Truth when 'tis known, especially being men able to Judge: which I feare, is the case of too many day in the *Romane Church*. Out of all which, as, *The Iesuite collected*, that *D. White's Opinion was*, That the *Romane Church* held all *Points Fundamentall* and only erred in *Points not Fundamentall*, which he accounted not damnable, so long as he did not hold them against his *Conscience*; And that thereupon hee said *D. White* had secured him, since he held no Faith different from the *Romane*, nor contrary to his *Conscience*. Here againe, wee have but *A C's.* and the *Iesuites Collection*: But if the *Iesuite*, or *A. C.* will collect amisse, who can helpeit?

I have spokèn before in this very *Paragraph* to all the *Passages of A. C.* as supposing them true: and set downe what is to be answered to them, in case they proove so. But now 'tis most apparent by *D. White's Answer*, set downe before † at large, that he never said, that the *Church of Rome* erred onely in *Points not Fundamentall*, as *A. C.* would have it. But that hee said the contrary, *Namely, that some errors of that Church were Fundamentall* reductivè, by a *Reducement*, if they which embraced them, did pertinaciously adhere to them, having sufficient meanes of information. And againe expressely, That hee did not say, that none were damnable, so long as they were not held against *Conscience*. Now where is *A. C's. Collection*? For if a *Iesuite*, or any other may collect *Propositions*, which are not granted him, nay contrary to those which are granted him, hee may inferre what hee please. And he is much too blame, that will not inferre a strong *Conclusion* for him selfe, that may frame his owne *Premises*, for his Adversary what hee will. And just so doe *A. C.* bring in his *Conclusion*, to secure himsel

4. C. p. 68.

NUM. 7.

† §. 37. N. 1.

T t

of

A. C. p. 67.

A. C. p. 67.

* *A. C.* in his relation of that Conference, p. 26.

† For so 'tis said in the Title-page, by *A. C.*

^a §. 37. *N^o. 1.*

N^o. 1.

of salvation, *because he holds no Faith but the Romane, nor that Contrary to his Conscience*: Presupposing it granted, that the Church of Rome erres only in not *Fundamentals*, and such *Errours* not *Damnab*le, which is absolutely and clearly denied by *D. White*. To this *A. C.* sayes nothing, but that *D. VWhite* did not give this Answer at the Conference. I was not present at the Conference betweene them, so, to that I can say nothing as a witnesse. But I thinke all that knew *D. White*, will believe his affirmation as soone as the *Iesuites*; To say no more. And whereas *A. C.* referres to the Relation of the Conference betweene *D. White* and *M. Fisher*, most true it is, there * *D. VWhite* is charged to have made that Answer twise. But all this rests upon the credit of *A. C.* only (For † he is said to have made that Relation too, as well as this.) And against his Credit I must engage *D. Whites*, who hath avowed another Answer, as ^a before is set downe.

And since *A. C.* relates to that Conference, which it seemes hee makes some good account of, I shall here once for all take occasion to assure the Reader; That most of the *Points of Moment* in that Conference with *D. VWhite*, are repeated againe and againe, and urged in this Conference, or the Relation of *A. C.* and are here answered by me. For instance: In the Relation of the first Conference, the *Iesuite* takes on him to prove the *Unwritten Word of God* out of *2. Thes. 2. pag. 15.* And so he doth in the Relation of this Conference with me. (1) *pag. 50.* In the first he stands upon it, That the Protestants upon their Principles cannot hold, that all *Fundamentall points of Faith* are contained in the Creed, *pag. 19.* And so he doth (2) in this, *pag. 46.* In the first, he would faine through *M. Roger's* sides wound the Church of England, as if shee were unsetled in the Article of *Christ's Descent into Hell. pag 21.* And he endeavours the same in this, *pag. 46.* In the

the first he is very earnest to prove, That the Schisme was made by the Protestants. pag. 23. And he is as earnest for it in this. pag. 55. In the first he layes it for 2 Ground, That Corruption of Manners is no just Cause of separation from Faith, or Church. pag. 24. And the same Ground he layes in this. pag. 55. In the first he will have it, That the Holy Ghost gives continuall, and Infallible Assistance to the Church. pag. 24. And just so will he have it in this. p 53. In the first he makes much adoe about the Erring of the Greeke Church. page 28. And as much makes he in this. page 44. In the first, he makes a great noyse about the place in S. Augustine, *Ferendus est disputator errans &c.* page 18. and 24. And so doth hee here also, page 45. In the first he would make his Profelytes believe, That he and his Cause have mighty advantage by that Sentence of S. Bernard, 'Tis intolerable Pride: And that of S. Augustine, 'Tis insolent madnesse to oppose the Doctrin, or Practice of the Catholike Church. page 25. And twise he is at the same Art in this. page 56. and. 73. In the first, he tels us, That * Calvin confesses, That in the Reformation, there was a Departure from the whole world. page 25. And though I conceive Calvine spake this but of the Roman world, and of no Voluntary, but a forced Departure, and wrote this to Melancthon, to worke Vnity among the Reformers, not any way to blast the Reformation: Yet we must heare of it againe in this. page 56. But over and above the rest, one Place with his owne glossse upon it pleases him extremely, 'Tis out of S. Athanasius his Creed. That whosoever doth not hold it entire, that is, (saith he) in all Points: and Inviolat, that is, (saith hee) in the true, unchanged, and uncorrupted sense proposed unto us by the Pastors of his Catholike Church, without doubt he shall perish everlastingly. This he hath almost verbatim in the first, page 20. And in the Epistle of the Publisher of that Relation to the Reader, under the Name of

(4)

(5)

(6)

(7)

(8)

(9)

(10)

* Postquam dis-
cessionem a toto
mundo facere
coacti sumus.
Calv. Epist. 141.

(11)

* In the beginning of the Conference set out by A. C.

VV. I. and then againe the very same in this, if not with some more disadvantage to himselfe. *page 70.* And perhaps (had I leasure to search after them) more Points then these. Now the Reasons which mooved mee to set downe these *Particulars* thus distinctly, are *two*. The *One*, that whereas the **Iesuite* affirms, that in a *second* Conference all the speech was about Particular matters, and little or nothing about the maine, and great generall Point of a *Continuall, Infallible, Visible Church*, in which that Lady required satisfaction, and that therefore this *third* Conference was held; It may here-by appeare that the most materiall, both Points, and Proofes are upon the matter the very same in all the *three* Conferences, though little bee related of the *second* Conference by *A. C.* as appeares in the Preface of the Publisher *VV. I.* to the Reader. So this tends to nothing but *Ostentation*, and shew. The *Other* is, that Whereas these men boast so much of their Cause and their Ability to defend it; It cannot but appeare by this, and their handling of other Points in *Divinity*, that they labour indeed, but no otherwise, then like an *Horse in a Mill*; round about in the same Circle; no farther at night then at noone; The same thing over and over againe; from *Tu es Petrus*, to *Pasce oves*, from thou art *Peter*, to Do thou feed my Sheepe; And backe againe the same way.

F. The Lady asked, Whether she might be saved in the Protestant Faith? Upon my soule (said the Bishop) you may. Upon my soule (said I) there is but one saving Faith, and that is the *Romane*.

§. 38.
NUM. I.

B So (it seems) I was confident for the Faith professed in the Church of England, els I would not have

have taken the salvation of another upon my soule. And sure I had reason of this my Confidence. For to believe the *Scripture*, and the *Creeds*; to believe these in the sense of the Ancient *Primitive Church*; To receive the foure great *Generall Councils*, so much magnified by Antiquity; To believe all Points of Doctrine, generally received as Fundamentall in the *Church of Christ*, is a *Faith*, in which to live and die, cannot but give salvation. And therefore I went upon a sure ground in the adventure of my soule upon that *Faith*. Besides, in all the Points of Doctrine that are controverted betweene us, I would faine see any one Point maintained by the *Church of England*, that can be proved to depart from the *Foundation*. You have many dangerous Errours about the very *Foundation*, in that which you call the *Romane Faith*: But there I leave you to looke to your owne soule, and theirs whom you seduce. Yet this is true too, That there is but *one saving Faith*. But then every thing which you call *De Fide*, of the *Faith*, because some *Councell* or other hath defined it, is not such a Breach from that *One saving Faith*, as that he which expresly believes it not, nay, as that he which believes the Contrary, is excluded from Salvation, so his^a *Disobedience* therewhile offer no violence to the *Peace* of the *Church*, nor the *Charity*, which ought to be among *Christians*. And^b *Bellarmino* is forced to grant this, *There are many Things de Fide, which are not absolutely necessary to salvation*.^c Therefore there is a *Latitude* in the *Faith*, especially in reference to different mens *salvation*. To set^d Bounds to this, and strictly to define it for particular men, *Just thus farre* you must believe in every Particular, or incur *Damnation*, is no worke for my *Pen*. These *two* things I am sure of. *One*, That your peremptory establishing of so many things, that are remote

Tt 3

Deductions

^a §. 32. Nu. 5.^b *Multa sunt de fide, quæ non sunt absolute necessaria ad salutem.* Bellar. L. 3. de Eccl. Milit. c. 14. §. Quinto, si esset.^c Wald, Doct.*Fid. l. 2. Ar. 2.*

§. 23.

^d §. 38. Nu. 8.

Deductions from the *Foundation*, to bee believed as Matters of Faith necessary to Salvation, hath, with other Errours, lost the *Peace* and *Unity* of the Church, for which you will one day Answer. And the other, That you of *Rome* are gone farther from the *Foundation* of this *One saving Faith*, then can ever be proved, we of the *Church of England* have done:

NUM. 2.

A. C. p. 68.

But here A. C. bestirres himselfe, finding that he is come upon the Point, which is indeed most consi-

derable. And first hee answers,

* *Pope Pelagius the second* thought it was sufficient. For when the *Bishops of Istria* deserted his Communion in *Causatrium Capitulum*. He first gives them an Account of his Faith, that he embraced that Faith, which the *Apostles* had delivered, and the *four Synods* explicated. And then he adds: *Ubi ergo de Fidei firmitate nulla vobis poterit questio, vel suspicio generari, &c. Concil. To. 4. p. 473. Edit. Paris.* So then, that *Pope* thought there could be no question made, or suspicion had of any mans faith, that professed that Faith, which the *Apostles* delivered, as 'tis explicated by those *Great Councils*. And yet now with A. C. 'tis not sufficient. Or els he holds the Faith of our Lord *Iesus Christ* in such respect of persons (contrary to the *Apostles Rule*, *S. James 2. 12.*) as that profession of it, which was sufficient for *Pope Pelagius*, shall not be sufficient for the poore *Protestants*.

That it is *not sufficient to beget a Confidence in this Case, to say wee believe the *Scriptures* and the *Creeds*, in the same sense which the *Ancient Primitive Church* believed them, &c.

Most true, if we onely say, and do not believe. And let them which believe not, while they say they doe, looke to it on all sides, for on all sides I doubt not, but such there are. But if we doe say it, you are bound in Charity to believe us, (unlesse you can prove the Contrary) For I know no other prooffe to men of any Point of Faith, but *Confession* of it, and *Subscription* to it. And for these particulars, we

have made the one, and done the other. So 'tis no bare saying, but you have all the prooffe that can be had, or that ever any Church required: For how farre that Beliefe, or any other sinks into a mans heart, is for none to judge but God.

NUM. 3.

A. C. p. 68.

Next, A. C. Answers, That if to say this be a sufficient Cause of Confidence, he marvels why I make such difficulty to bee Confident of the Salvation of *Romane Catholikes*,

Catholikes, who believe all this in a farre better manner then Protestants doe. Truly, to say this, is not a sufficient cause, but to say and believe it, is. And to take off A. C's. wonder why I make difficulty, great difficulty of the salvation of *Romane Catholikes, who, he sayes, believe all this, and in a farre better manner then Protestants doe.* I must be bold to tell him, That *Romanists* are so farre from believing this in a better manner then we do, that, under favour, they believe not part of this at all. And this is most manifest: For the *Romanists* dare not believe, but as the *Romane Church* believes: And the *Romane Church* at this day doth not believe the Scripture and the Creeds in the sense, in the which the Ancient Primitive Church received them. For the Primitive Church never interpreted Christ's descent into Hell to be no lower then *Limbus Patrum*. Nor did it acknowledge a *Purgatory* in a side-part of Hell. Nor did it ever interpret away halfe the Sacrament from Christ's owne Institution, which to breake, * Stapleton confesses expressly, is a damnable Error; Nor make the Intention of the Priest of the Essence of Baptisme; Nor believe worship due to Images; Nor dreame of a Transubstantiation, which the Learned of the *Romane Partie* dare not understand properly, for a change of one substance into another, for then they must grant that Christ's real and true Body is made of the Bread, and the Bread changed into it, which is properly Transubstan-

tiation Nor yet can they expresse it in a credible way, as appeares by † Bellarmine's

† *Est totalis Conversio substantia Panis & Vini in Corpus & Sanguinem Domini.* Bellar. L. 3. de Euchar. c. 18. §. 1. *Substantialis conversio, seu Transubstantiatio, sicut Ecclesia appellat.* Greg. de Valen. To. 4. Disp 6. q. 3. punct. 3. Now you shall see what stuffe Bellarmine makes of this. *Conversio Panis in Corpus Domini, nec est Productiva, nec Conservativa, sed Adductiva. Nam Corpus Domini praeexistit ante Conversionem, sed non sub speciebus Panis. Conversio igitur non facit, ut Corpus Christi simpliciter esse incipiat, sed ut incipiat esse sub speciebus Panis, &c.* Bellar. L. 3. de Euchar. c. 18. §. Ex his colligimus. So upon the whole matter, there shall be a totall Conversion of the Bread into the Body of

* Stapl. Returne
of Vntruths up-
on B. Jewell.
Art 2. Vntruth
49 fol. 44.

struggle

Christ: And yet there shall be no Conversion at all, but a Bringing of the Body of Christ before præexistent, to be now under the Species of Bread, where before it was not. Now this is merely *Translocation*, 'tis not *Transsubstantiation*. And I would have *Bellarmin*, or any *Iesuite* for him, shew where *Conversio Adductiva* is read in any good Author. But when *Bellarmin* comes to the Recognition of his workes, upon this place he tels us, That some excepted against him, as if this were *Translocation*, rather then *Transsubstantiation* so in this charge upon him I am not alone. And faine would he shutt off this, but it will not be. But while he is at it, he runs into two pretty Errours, beside the maine one. The first is, That the body of Christ in the Sacrament begins to be, *non ut in loco, sed ut substantia sub Accidentibus*. Now let *Bellarmin* or *A. C.* for him give me any one Instance, That a Bodily Substance under Accidents, is, or can be any where, and not *ut in loco*, as in some place, and he sayes somewhat. The second is, That some Fathers and others seeme (he sayes, but I see it not) to approve of his manner of speech of Conversion by *Adduction*. And he tels us for this, that *Bonaventure* sayes expressly, *In Transsubstantiatione fit, ut quod erat alicubi, sine sui mutatione fit alibi*. Now first here's nothing that can be drawne with Cart-ropes to prove conversion by *Adduction*. For if there be Conversion, there must be Change: And this is *sine mutatione sui*. And secondly, I would faine know, how a Body that is *alicubi*, shall be *alibi*, without change of it selfe, and yet that this shall be rather *Transsubstantiation* then *Translocation*. Besides, 'tis a Phrase of very sowre Consequence (should a man squeeze it) which *Bellarmin* uses there even in his Recognition. *Panis transiit in Corpus Christi*.

† A Scandall, and a grievous one. For this grosse Opinion was but confirmed in the Councell of *Lateran*: It had got some footing in the Church, the two blinde ages before. For *Berengarius* was made recant in such Terms, as the *Romanists* are put to their liues to excuse. *Bellarmin*. L. 3. de *Enchar.* c. 24. S. Quartum Argumentum. For he sayes expressly: *Corpus Christi posse in Sacramento sensualiter manibus Sacerdotum tractari, & frangi, & fidelium dentibus atteri*. Decr. par. 3. de Consecratione. Dist. 2. C. Ego *Berengarius*. Now this Recantation was made about the yeare 1050. And the Councell of *Lateran* was in the yeare 1215. Betwene this grosse Recantation of *Berengarius*, and that Councell, the great Learned Physician and Philosopher *Averroes* lived, and tooke scandall at the whole Body of Christian Religion for this. And thus he saith: *Mundum peragravi, &c. & non vidi Sectam deteriorem, aut magis fatuam Christianam, quia Deum, quem colunt, dentibus devorant*. *Esperæus* L. 4. de *Enchar.* adoratione. c. 3.

* Num. 4.

A. C. p. 69.

last a *Confession* here, that they may be prooved to depart from the *Foundation*, though not so much, or so farre as the *Protestants* doe. I do not meane to answer this, and prove that the *Romanists* do depart as farre, or farther from the *Foundation*, then the *Protestants*. for then *A. C.* would take me at the same list, and say I granted a departure too. Briefly therefore, I have named

struggle about it, wch yet in the end cannot bee, or bee called *Transsubstantiation*, and is that, which at this day is a scandall to both Jew & Gentile, and the Church of God.

*For all this *A. C.* goes on, and tels us, That they (of Rome) cannot be prooved to depart frō the *Foundation* so much as *Protestants* doe. So then, We have at

named here more *Instances* then one; In some of which they have erred in the *Foundation*, or very neare it. But for the *Church of England*, let *A.C.* instance, if he can, in any one point, in which She hath departed from the *Foundation*. Well, that *A.C.* will do; For he sayes, *The Protestants erre against the Foundation, by denying Infallible Authority to a Generall Councell, for that is in effect to deny Infallibility to the whole Catholike Church.* ^a No, ^a *A.C. p. 69.* ^b *S. 33. Confid. 4. Nu. 1.* there's a great deale of difference betweene a *Generall Councell* and the *whole Body of the Church*. And when a *Generall Councell* erres, as the *second of Ephesus* did, out of that great *Catholike Body* another may be gathered, as was then that of *Chalcedon*, to doe the *Truth of Christ* that right, which belongs unto it. Now if it were all one in effect to say, a *Generall Councell* can erre, and that the *Whole Church* can erre, ^c *S. 33. Confid. 7. Nu. 4.* there were no Remedy left against a *Generall Councell* erring; ^b which is your *Cate* now at *Rome*, and which hath thrust the *Church of Christ* into more straits then any one thing besides. But I know where you would be. A *Generall Councell* is *Infallible*, if it be confirmed by the *Pope*; and the *Pope* he is *Infallible*, els he could not make the *Councell* so. And they which deny the *Councils Infallibility*, deny the *Pope's* which confirms it. And then indeed the *Protestants* depart a mighty way from this great *Foundation of Faith*, the *Popes Infallibility*. But God be thanked, this is only from the *Foundation* of the present *Romane Faith*, (as *A.C.* and the *Iesuite* call it) not from any *Foundation* of the *Christian Faith*, to which this *Infallibility* was ever a stranger. ^d *A.C. p. 68.*

From Answering, *A.C.* fals to asking *Questions*. I thinke he meanes to try whether he can win any thing upon me, by the cunning way *A multis Interrogationibus simul*, by asking many things at once, to see if any one may make me slip into a

NUM. 5.

A. C. p. 69.

Confession inconvenient. And *first*, he asks, *How Protestants, admitting no Infallible Rule of Faith, but Scripture onely, can be infallibly sure that they believe the same entire Scripture, and Creed, and the Foure first Generall Councils, and in the same incorrupted sense in which the Primitive Church believed?* 'Tis just as I said. Here are many Questions in one, and I might easily be caught, would I answer in grosse to them all together; but I shall go more distinctly to worke. Well then; I admit no ordinary Rule left now in the Church, of Divine and Infallible Verity, and so of Faith, but the Scripture. And I believe the entire Scripture, *first* by the Tradition of the Church; Then by all other credible Motives, as is before expressed: And *last* of all, by the light which shines in the Scripture it selfe, kindled in Believers by the Spirit of God. Then I believe the entire Scripture Infallibly, and by a Divine Infallibility am sure of my Object: Then am I as sure of my Believing, which is the Act of my Faith, conversant about this Object: For no man believes, but he must needs know in himselfe whether he believes or no, and wherein, and how farre he doubts. Then I am infallibly assured of my Creed, the Tradition of the Church inducing, and the Scripture confirming it. And I believe both Scripture and Creed in the same uncorrupted sense which the Primitive Church believed them, and am sure that I do so Believe them, because I crosse not in my Beliefe any thing delivered by the Primitive Church: And this againe I am sure of, because I take the Beliefe of the Primitive Church, as it is expressed, and delivered by the Councils, and Ancient Fathers of those times. As for the Foure Councils, if A. C. aske how I have them, that is, their true and entire Copies? I answer, I have them from the Church-Tradition onely: And that's Assurance enough for this. And so I am fully

fully as sure as *A. C.* is, or can make mee. But if hee aske how I know infallibly I believe them in their *true and uncorrupted sense*? Then I answer, There's no man of knowledge, but hee can understand the plaine and simple Decision expressed in the *Canon* of the *Councell*, where 'tis necessary to Salvation. And for all other *debates* in the *Councils*, or *Decisions* of it in things of lesse moment, 'tis not necessary that I, or any man else, have *Infallible Assurance* of them; though I thinke 'tis possible to attaine, even in these things, as much *Infallible Assurance* of the uncorrupted sense of them, as *A. C.* or any other *Iesuites* have.

A. C. askes againe, *What Text of Scripture tels, Num. 6. 1*
That Protestants now living do believe all this, or that all A. C. p. 69.
this is expressed in those particular Bibles, or in the
Writings of the Fathers and Councils, which now are in
the Protestants hands? Good God! Whither will not a strong Bias carrie even a learned Iudgement! Why, what Consequence is there in this? The Scripture now is the onely Ordinary *Infallible Rule* of Divine Faith, Therefore the *Protestants* cannot believe all this before mentioned, unlesse a particular Text of Scripture can be shewed for it. Is it not made plaine before, how we believe Scripture to be Scripture, and by Divine and *Infallible Faith* too, and yet wee can shew no particular Text for it? Beside, were a Text of Scripture necessary, yet that is for the *Object* and the thing which we are to believe, not for the *Act* of our believing, which is meerely from God, and in our selves, and for which wee cannot have any *Warrant* from, or by Scripture, more then that we ought to believe; but not that we in our particular do believe. The rest of the Question is farre more insequent, *Whether*

all this bee expressed in the Bibles which are in Protestants hands? For first, we have the same Bibles in our hands, which the Romanists have in theirs; Therefore either we are Infallibly sure of ours, or they are not Infallibly sure of theirs; For we have the same Booke, and delivered unto us by the same hands; and all is expressed in ours, that is in theirs. Nor is it of moment in this Argument, that we account more *Apocryphall* then they do; For I will acknowledge every *Fundamentall* point of Faith as proveable out of the Canon, as we account it, as if the *Apocryphall* were added unto it. Secondly, *A. C.* is here extremely out of himselte, and his way; For his Question is, *Whether all this be expressed in the Bibles which we have? All this? All what? why,* before there is mention of the *four* *Generall Councils*; and in this Question here's mention of the *Writings of the Fathers and the Councils*. And what will *A. C.* look that we must shew a Text of Scripture for all this, and an expresse one too? I thought, and doe so still, 'tis enough to ground Beliefe upon * *Necessary Consequence* out of Scripture, as well as upon expresse Text. And

* Non potest aliquid certum esse certitudine Fidei, nisi aut immediate contineatur in verbo Dei: aut ex verbo Dei per evidentem Consequentiam deducatur. Bellar. L. 3. de Justif. c. 8. §. 2.

† Nec ego Nicenum. nec tu debes Ariminense tanquam præjudicaturus proferre Concilium. Nec ego huius Authoritate, nec tu illius detineris. Scripturarum Authoritatibus, &c. Res cum re, Causa cum causa, Ratio cum ratione concertet. S. Aug. L. 3. cont. Maximinum. c. 14. Testimonia Divina in fundamento ponenda sunt. S. Aug. L. 20. de Civ. Dei. c. 1. Quia principia huius Doctrina per Revelationem habentur, &c. Tho. p. 1. q. 1. A. 8. ad 2. Solis Scripturarum Libris Canonicis didici hunc honorem deferre, ut nullum Authorem eorum in scribendo errasse aliquid firmissimè credam. Alios autem ita lego, ut quantalibet sanctitate, doctrinæque præpollent, non ideo verum putem, quod ipsi ita senserunt, vel scripserunt. S. Aug. Epist. 19.

this I am sure of, that neither I, nor any man else is bound to believe any thing as Necessary to Salvation, be it found in *Councils*, or *Fathers*, or where you will, † if it be Contrary to expresse Scripture, or necessary Consequence from it. And for the Copies of the *Councils* and *Fathers* which are in our hands, they are the same that are in the hands of the *Romanists*, and delivered to Posterity by Tradition of the Church, which is abundantly sufficient to warrant that. So we are as

Infallibly

Infallibly sure of this as 'tis possible for any of you to bee. Nay, are wee not more sure? For wee have used no *Index Expurgatorius* upon the Writings of the *Fathers* *, as you have done: So that Posterity hereafter must thanke us for true Copies both of *Councils* and *Fathers*, and not you.

* *Sixtus Senens.*
in *Epist. ad Pi-*
um quintum.

But *A. C.* goes on, and askes still, *Whether Protestants bee Infallibly sure that they rightly understand the sense of all which is expressed in their Books, according to that which was understood by the Primitive Church, and the Fathers which were present at the foure first Generall Councils?* *A. C.* may aske everlastingly, if hee will aske the same over and over againe. For I pray wherein doth this differ from his † first Question, save only that here *Scripture* is not named? For there the Question was of our *Assurance of the Incorrupted sense*: And therefore thither I refer you for Answer, with this; That it is not required either of us, or of them, that there should be had an *Infallic* assurance that wee rightly understand the sense of all that is expressed in our *Bookes*. And I thinke I may believe without sinne, that there are many things expressed in these *Bookes* (for they are theirs as well as ours) which *A. C.* and his *Fellowes* have not *Infallic* assurance that they rightly understand in the sense of the *Primitive Church*, or the *Fathers* present in those *Councils*. And if they say, yes, they can, because when a difficulty crosses them, they believe them in the Churches sense: Yet that dry shift will not serve. For believe of them in the Churches sense is an *Implicit Faith*; but it works nothing distinctly upon the understanding. For by an *Implicite Faith* no man can be infallibly assured that hee doth rightly understand the sense (which is *A. C.*s. Question) whatever perhaps he may rightly believe. And an *Implicite Faith*, and an *Infallic* understanding of the same thing

NUM. 7.
A. C. p. 69.

† §. 38. N. 5.

under the same Considerations cannot possibly stand together in the same man at the same time.

N^{UM.} 8.
A.C.p.69.

A.C. hath not done asking yet: But he would farther know, *Whether Protestants can be Infallibly sure that all and onely those points which Protestants account Fundamentall and necessary to be expressely knowne by all, were so accounted by the Primitive Church? Truly, Vnity in the Faith is very Considerable in the Church. And in this the Protestants agree, and as Vniiformely as you, and have as Infalible Assurance as you can have, of all points which they account Fundamentall; yea, and of all, which were so accounted by the Primitive Church. And these are but the Creed, and some few, and those Immediate deductions from it. And* [†]*Tertullian and* ^{*}*Ruffinus upon the very Clause of the Catholike Church to decypher it, make a recitall only of the Fundamentall Points of Faith. And for the first of these, the Creed, you see what the sense of the Primitive Church*

[†]*Tert. praescript. adversus Hares. c. 13. &c.*
^{*}*Ruffin. in Symb.*

^a *Et neque qui valde potens est in dicendo ex Ecclesia Praefectis alia ab his dicet &c. Neque debilis in dicendo hanc Traditionem imminuet. Quum enim una & eadem fides sit, neque is, qui multum de ea dicere potest, plusquam oportet, dicit, neque qui parum, ipsam imminuit. Irenae. L. 1. Adv. Har. c. 2. & 3. Et S. Basil. Serm. de Fide To. 2. p. 195. Edit Basil. 1505. Vna & Immobiles Regula. &c. Tert. de veland. Virg. c. 1.*

^b *Quantum ad prima Credibilia, quae sunt Articuli Fidei, tenetur homo Explicitè credere, sicut & tenetur habere fidem. Quantum autem ad alia Credibilia &c. non tenetur Explicitè credere, nisi quando hoc ei confiterit in Doctrinâ Fidei contineri. Tho. 2. 2. q. 2. A. 5. c. Potest quis Errare Credendo oppositum Alicui Articulo subtili, ad cuius fidem explicitam non omnes tenentur. Holkot. in 1. sent. q. 1. ad quartum.*

was by that famous and knowne place of ^a *Irenaeus*: where after hee had recited the Creed, as the Epitome or Briefe of the Faith, he addes, That none of the Governors of the Church, be they never so potent to Expresse themselves, can say alia ab his, other things from these: Nor none so weake in Expression as to diminish this Tradition. For since the Faith is One, and the same, He that can say much of it, sayes no more then he ought, Nor doth he diminish it, that can say but little. And in this the Protestants all agree. And for the second the immediate Deductions, they are not formally Fundamentall for all men, but for such ^b as are able to make or understand them

them. And for others, tis enough if they doe not obstinately or Schismatically refuse them, after they are once revealed. Indeed you account many things *Fundamentall*, which were never so accounted in any sense by the *Primitive Church*; such as are all the *Decrees of Generall Councils*, which may be all true, but can never be all *Fundamentall in the Faith*. For it is not in the power of *the whole Church, much lesse

of a *Generall Councell*, to make any thing *Fundamentall in the Faith*, that is not contained in the *Letter or sense*, of that common Faith, which was once given. (and but once for all)

to the *Saints*, *S. Iude 3*. But if it be *A.C's* meaning to call for an *Infallible Assurance* of all such *Points of Faith* as are *Decreed by Generall Councils*: Then I must be bold to tell him: All those *Decrees* are not necessary to all mens salvation. Neither doe the *Romanists* themselves agree in all such determined *Points of Faith*; Be they determined by *Councils*, or by *Popes*. For Instance. After those *Bookes* (which wee account *Apocryphall* were † defined to be *Canonicall*, and an *Anathema* pronounced in the Case, ^a *Sixtus Senensis* makes scruple of some of them. And after, *Pope Leo the tenth* had defined the *Pope* to

be about a *Generall Councell*, yet many *Romane Catholikes* defend the Contrary; And so doe all the *Sorbonists* at this very day. Therefore if these be *Fundamentall in the Faith*, the *Romanists* differ one from another in the Faith, nay, in the *Fundamentals of the Faith*; And therefore cannot have *Infallible Assurance* of them. Nor is there that *Unity in the Faith* amongst them, which they so much, and so often boast of. For what *Scripture is Canonicall* is a great point of Faith. And I believe they

* *Resolutio Ockam est, Quod nec tota Ecclesia, nec Concilium Generale, nec summus Pontifex potest facere Articulum quod non fuit Articulus. Articulus enim est ex eo solo, qui Deo Revelatus est. Almain. in 3. sent. D. 15. q. unica. Conclus. 4. Dub 3.*

S. Iude vers. 3.

† *Concil. Frid. Sess. 4.*

^a *Six. Sen. in Biblioth. Sanct. L. 1.*

^b *Non e' necessario credendum Determinatis per Sum. Pontificem &c. Almain. in 3. sent. D. 15. q. unica Conclus. 6. Dubio. 6. sine.*

will

will not now Confesse, That the *Popes* power over a *Generall Councell* is a small one. And so let *A. C.* looke to his owne *Infallible Assurance* of Fundamentals in the Faith : for ours, God be thanked, is well. And since he is pleased to call for a *particular Text of Scripture* to proove all and every thing of this nature, which is ridiculous in it selfe, and unreasonable to demand (as hath beene * *shewed*) yet when he shall bee pleased to bring forth but a *particular knowne Tradition*, to proove all and every thing of this on their side, it will then be perhaps time for him to call for, and for us to give farther *Answer* about *particular Texts* of Scripture.

* §. 38. N. 6.

NUM. 9.
A. C. p. 69.

After all this Questioning *A. C.* inferres. *That I had need seeke out some other Infallible Rule, and meanes, by which I may know these things infalli^{bly}, or else that I have no reason to be so confident, as to adventure my soule, that one may be saved living and dying in the Protestant faith.* How weake this *Inference* is, will easily appeare, by that which I have already said to the *premises* ; And yet I have somewhat left to say to this *Inference* also. And first, I have lived, and shall (God willing) dye in the Faith of *Christ*, as it was professed in the *Ancient Primitive Church*, and as it is professed in the present *Church of England*. And for the *Rule* which governes me herein, if I cannot bee confident for my soule upon the *Scripture*, and the *Primitive Church* expounding and declaring it, I will be confident upon no other. And secondly, I have all the reason in the world to be confident upon this *Rule*, for this can never deceive me ; Another (that very other which *A. C.* proposes) namely, the *Faith of the Romane Church*) may. Therefore with *A. C.*'s leave, I will venture my salvation upon the *Rule* aforesaid, and not trouble my selfe to seeke another of *mans making*, to the forsaking or weakening of this which God hath given me. For I know they
Committed

A. C. p. 72.

Committed two Evills, which forsooke the Fountaine of Living Waters, to hew out to themselves Cisternes, broken Cisternes, that can hold no Water. *Ier. 2.* For here's the Evill of Desertion of that which was right: and the Evill of a bad Choise, of that which is hew'd out with much paines and care, and is after Vselesse and Vnprofitable. But then *Thirdly*, I finde that a Romanist may make use of an *Implicite Faith* (at his pleasure,) but a Protestant must know all these things *Infalibly*; that's A.C.s. word, *Know these things*; Why, but is it not enough to believe them? Now God forbid. What shall become of Millions of poore Christians in the world, which cannot know all these things, much lesse know them *Infalibly*? Well, I would not have A.C. weaken the Beliefe of poore Christians in this fashion. But for things that may be knowne as well as believed, nor I, nor any other shall need forsake the Scripture, to seeke another Rule to direct either our Conscience, or our Confidence.

In the next place A. C. observes, That the Iesuite was as confident for his part, with this difference, that he had sufficient reason of his Confidence, but I had not for mine. This is said with the Confidence of a Iesuite, but as yet, but said. Therefore he goes on and tels us, That the Iesuite had reason of his Confidence, out of expresse Scriptures, and Fathers, and the infallible Authority of the Church. Now truly, Expresse Scriptures, with A. C.s. patience, he hath not named one that is expresse, nor can he. And the few Scriptures which he hath alledged, I have* Answered, and I have others. As for Fathers, he hath named very few, and with what successe, I leave to the Censurers judgement. And for the Authority of the Catholick Church, I hold it^a as Infalible as he, and, upon better grounds, but not so of a Generall Councell, which he here meane, as appears^b after. And for

Ier. 2. 13.

NUM. 10.
A.C.p 69.

A.C.p 70.

* S. 25. N. 5.
S. 33. Consha 3.
N. 1.

* S. 21. N. 5.

b A.C.p. 71.

A.C.p.70.

Ephes.4.5.

**.S.35.N.1.*

Rom.14.4.

† S.35.N.2.

A.C.p.70

^a S.33.N.12.

S.35.N.7.

my part I must yet thinke (and I doubt *A.C.* will not be able to disprove it) that expresse *Scripture*, and *Fathers*, and the *Authority of the Church* will rather be found proofes to warrant my Confidence, then his. Yea, but *A.C.* saith, That I did not then taxe the *Iesuite* with any rashnesse. It may be so. Nor did he me. So there we parted even. Yea but he saith again, that I acknowledge there is but one saving Faith, and that the Lady might be saved in the *Romane faith*, which was all the *Iesuite* tooke upon his soule. Why, but if this be all, I will confesse it again. The first, That there is but one faith, I confesse with *S. Paul*, *Ephes.4.* And the other, that the Lady might be saved in the *Romane Faith or Church* *, I confesse with that charity which *S. Paul* teacheth me, Namely, to leave all men, especially the weaker both sex and sort, which hold the *Foundation*, to stand or fall to their owne Master. *Rom.4.* And this is no mistaken charity. As for the inference which you would draw out of it, that's answered at large † already. But then *A.C.* addes, that I say, but without any prooffe, that the *Romanists* have many dangerous errors, but that I neither tell them which they be, nor why I think them dangerous, but that I leave them to looke to their owne soules; which (he sayes) they doe, and have no cause to doubt. How much the *Iesuite* and *A.C.* have said in this Conference, without any solid prooffe, I againe submit to judgement, as also what proofes I have made. If in this very place I have added none, 'tis because I had made prooffe enough of the selfe samething a before. Where lest hee should want and call for prooffe againe, I have plainly laid together, some of the many *Dangerous errors* which are charged upon them. So I tell you which, at least, some of which they be: and their very naming, will shew their danger. And if I did remit you to looke to your own soules, I hope there was no offence in that, if you doe it,

it, and do it so that you have no cause to doubt. And the reason why you doubt not, *A.C.* tells us, is, *Because* ^{*A.C. p. 70.*} you had no new devise of your owne, or any other mens, nor any thing contrary to Scripture, but all most conformable to Scriptures interpreted by Union, Consent of Fathers, and Definitions of Councils. Indeed, if this were true, you had little cause to doubt in point of your Beliefe. But the Truth is, you doe hold new devises of your owne, which the *Primitive Church* was never acquainted with. And some of those so farre from being conformable, as that they are little lesse then contradictory to Scripture. In which particulars, and divers others, the Scriptures ^{*§. 33. R. 12.*} ^{*§. 35. N. 7.*} ^{*Conc. Lateran. can. 1.*} ^{*Conc. Constantin. Sess. 13.*} are not interpreted by

Union, or Consent of Fathers, or Definitions of Councils, unless perhaps by some late Councils, packed of purpose to doe that ill service. I have given instances enough ^{*before*}, yet some you shall have here, lest you should say againe, that I affirme without prooffe or Instance. ^{*a*} I pray then whose devise was *transubstantiation*? And whose Communion under one kinde? ^{*†*} And whose Deposition and Enthroning, nay killing of Princes, & the like, if they were not yours. For I dare say, and am able to proove, there's none of these but

^{*†*} *Propter haresin Rex non solum Regno privatur, sed & filii ejus à Regni successione pelluntur. Simanca Cathol. Instit. tit. 9. §. 259. Absoluti sunt Subditi a Debito fidelitatis: Et custodes arcium &c. Ibid. tit. 46. §. 7.* It was stily avowed not long since by ——— That nō man could shew any one *Romane Catholike* of note and learning, that affirmed it lawfull to kill *Kings* upon any pretext whatsoever. Now surely he that sayes (as *Romanists* doe) that 'tis lawfull to Depose a King, sayes upon the matter 'tis lawfull to kill him. For *Kings* doe not use to be long-lived after their Deposition: And they lei. one stay till griefe breake their hearts. They have *Assassins* ready to make thorter worke. But since he is so confident, I'll give him an Author of note, and very Learned, that speaks it out. *Rex debet occidi, si sollicitus populum colere Idola, vel deferere Legem Dei.* Tostat. in 2 Sam. c. 11. q. 17. And he makes bold with Scripture to prove it. *Deut. 17.* And *Emmanuel Sa* in his Aphorismes. *Verbo Tyrannus*, yet he is to moderate, that he would not have this done, till he be *Sentenc'd*: but then *Quisquis potest fieri Executor. Mariana* is farre worke, For he sayes it is lawfull to kill him, *postquam à paucis Seditiosis, sed doctis caperit Tyrannus appellari. L. 1. de Rege. & Reg. Institutione. c. 6.* Yea but *Mariana* was disclaimed for this by the *Jesuites*. Yea but for all that, there was an *Apology* printed in *Italy. An. 1610. permissu Superiorum.* And there 'tis said, They were all Enemies of the Holy name of *Iesus*; that condemned *Mariana* for any such Doctrine. As for *Tostatus* no Sentence hath touched upon him at all for it.

are rather contrary then conformable to *Scripture*.

* *Corpus Christi veraciter esse in Eucharistiā ex Evangelio habemus : Conversionem vero Panis in Corpus Christi Evangelium non explicavit, sed expresse ab Ecclesiā accepimus. Cajetan in Thom.*

3. q. 76. Art. 1.

† *De Transubstantiatione Panis in Corpus Christi rara est in antiquis Scripturis mentio. Alph. a Castro L. 8. ad vers. Har. Verbo Indulgentia.*

^a *Conc. Lateran.*

Can. 1.

^b *Conc. Constan.*

Sess. 13.

which two are moderne at least, farre downward from the *Primitive Church*, and have done more mischief to the Church, by those their *Determinations*, then will be cured I feare in many *Generations*. So whatever *A. C.* thinks, yet I had reason enough to leave the *Iesuite* to looke to his owne soule.

NUM. II.

A. C. p. 70.

^c §. 35. N. 1. &

§. 38. N. 10.

But *A. C.* having as it seemes little new matter, is at the same againe, and over and over it must goe, That there is but one saving faith : That this one Faith was once the *Romane*. And that I granted, one might bee saved in the *Romane Faith*. To all which I have abundantly answered before: Marry then hee inferres, That hee sees not how we can have our soules saved, without we entirely hold this faith, being the *Catholike faith*, which *S. Athanasius* saith, unlesse a man hold entirely he cannot be saved. Now here againe is more in the *Conclusion* then in the *premises*, and so the *Inference* failes. For say there was a time in which the *Catholike* and the *Romane Faith* were one, and such a time there was, when the *Romane faith* was *Catholike* and famous through the world. *Rom. 1.* Yet it doth not follow, since the ^d *Council of Trent* hath added a new *Creed*, that this *Romane faith* is now the *Catholike*. For it hath added *extranea*, things without the *Foundation*, disputable, if not false *Conclusions* to the faith. So that now a man may Believe the whole and entire *Catholike Faith*,
even

Rom. 1. 8.

^d *Concil. Triden.*

Bulla Pii 4. super

formā Juramenti

professionis Fidei

ad finem Concil.

Trident.

even as *S. Athanasius* requires, and yet justly refuse for drosse a great part of that which is now ^a the *Romane Faith*. And *Athanasius* himselfe, as if he meant to arme the *Catholike Faith* against all corrupting additions, hath in the beginning of his ^b *Creed*, these words, *This is the Catholike Faith*, *This* and no other: *This* and no Other, then here followes. And againe at the end of his *Creed*, ^c *This is the Catholike Faith*, ^d *This* and no more then is here delivered (alwaies presupposing the *Apostles Creed*, as *Athanasius* did) and this is the largest of all *Creeds*. So that if *A.C.* would wipe his eyes from the mist which rises about *Tyber*, he might see how our soules may be saved, believing the *Catholike Faith*, and that entire, without the Addition of *Romane Leaven*. But if he cannot, or, I doubt, will not see it, 'tis enough that by God's Grace wee see it. And therefore once more I leave him and his, to looke to their owne soules.

After this *A.C.* is busie in unfolding the meaning of this great Father of the Church, *S. Athanasius*. And he tels us, *That he sayes in his Creed, that without doubt every man shall perish, that holds not the Catholike Faith entire (that is, saith A.C. in every point of it) and inviolate (that is, in the right sense, and for the true formall reason of divine Revelation, sufficiently applied to our understanding by the Infallible Authority of the Catholike Church proposing to us by her Pastours this Revelation. Well, we shall not differ much from A.C. in expounding the meaning of S. Athanasius; yet some few*

^a And this is so much the more Remarkable, if it be true which *Thomas* hath. *S. Athanasium non composuisse hanc Manifestationem Fidei, per modum Symboli, sed per modum Doctrinae, &c. Et deinde Auctoritate summi Pontificis receptam esse, ut quasi Regula fidei habeatur. Tho. 2. 2^e. q. 1. A. 10. ad 3. Symbolo Apostolorum addita sunt duo alia, scilicet Symbolum Nicenum, & S. Athanasii, ad maiorem Fidei Explanationem. Biel. in 3. Sent. D. 25. q. unica. A. 1. D.*

^b *S. Athanasius*, in *Symb.*
^c And yet the Councell of *Trent* having added twelve new Articles, sayes thus of them alio. *Hec est vera Catholica Fides, extra quam nemo salvus esse potest, &c. Bulla Pii 4. super forma Inamenti professionis Fidei. In fine Co. II. Trident.*
^d *Integram Fidei Veritatem, ejus Doctrina breviter continet. Tho. 2. 2^e. q. 1. A. 10. ad 3.*

NUM. 12.

A.C.p.72.

things I shall here observe. And *first*, I agree that he which hopes for salvation, must believe the *Catholike Faith whole and entire* in every point. *Next*, I agree, that he must likewise hold it *inviolable*, if to believe it in the right sense, be to hold it *inviolable*. But by *A. Cs.* leave, the Believing of the *Creed* in the right sense, is comprehended in the first branch: *The keeping of it whole and entire*. For no man can properly be said to believe the *Whole Creed*, that believes not the *Whole Sense*, as well as the *Letter* of it; and as *entirely*. But *thirdly*, for the word *inviolable*, 'tis indeed used by him that translated *Athanasius*. But the *Father's* owne words are: That he that will be saved must keepe the *Faith* ὅλην καὶ ἀμωμον. Now ὅλην, is the sound and entire Faith. And it cannot be a *sound Faith*, unlessse the *Sense* be as *whole* and *entire* as the *Letter* of the *Creed*. And ἀμωμος is compounded of the privative particle (ἀ) and μωμος, which is, reproach or infamie. So that ἀμωμος signifies the holding of the entire Faith in such holiness of life and conversation, as is without all infamy and reproach. That is, as our *English* renders that *Creed* exceeding well: *Which Faith unlessse a man do keep whole and* * *undefiled*, even with such a life as *Momus* himselfe shall not be able to carpe at. So *Athanasius* (who certainly was passing able to expresse himselfe in his owne language) in the beginning of that his *Creed* requires, That we keepe it *entire*, without diminution: and *undefiled*, without blame: And at the end, that we believe it *faithfully*, without wavering. But [*Inviolable*] is the mistaken word of the old *Interpreter*, and with no great knowledge made use of by *A. C.* And then *fourthly*, though this be true *Divinity*, that he which hopes for salvation, must believe the *whole Creed*, and in the *right sense* too (if he be able to comprehend it) yet I take the *true and first meaning* of

* Sic Ecclesia
dicitur ἀμωμος,
Eph. 5. 27. & in
veteri Glossario,
Immaculatus,
ἀμωμος.

of *Inviolable* [could *Athanasius* his word ἀμωτος have signified so] not to be the holding of the *true sense*, but not to offer *violence*, or a *forced sense* or *meaning* upon the *Creed*, which every man doth not, that yet believes it not in a true sense. For not to believe the *true sense* of the *Creed*, is one thing: But 'tis quite another, to force a *wrong sense* upon it. *Fifthly*, a reason would be given also, why *A.C.* is so earnest for the *whole faith*, and bawkes the word which goes with it, which is *holy* or *undefiled*. For *Athanasius* doth alike exclude from salvation those which keepe not the *Catholike Faith holy*, as well as these which keepe it not *whole*. I doubt this was to spare many of his † *holy* † §. 33. *N^o. 6.* *Fathers, the Popes*, who were as farre as any (the very lewddest among men without exception) from keeping the *Catholike Faith holy*. *Sixtly*, I agree to the next part of his Exposition, That a man that will be saved must believe the whole *Creed* for the true *formall reason of divine Revelation*. For upon the Truth of God thus revealed by himselfe, lies the *Infallible certainty* of the *Christian Faith*. But I do not grant, that this is within the Compasse of *S. Athanasius* his word ἀμωτος, nor of the word *Inviolable*. But in that respect 'tis a meere straine of *A.C.* And then *lastly*, though the whole *Catholike Church* be sufficient in applying this to us and our *Beliefe*, not our *Understanding*, which *A.C.* is at againe, yet *Infallible* She is not, in the proposall of this *Revelation* to us by every of her *Pastours*. Some where- of amongst you, as well as others, neglect, or forget at least to feed *Christ's sheepe*, as *Christ* and his *Church* hath fed them. *A.C.p. 70.*

But now that *A.C.* hath taught us (as you see) the meaning of *S. Athanasius*, in the next place he tels us, *That if we did believe any one Article, we finding the same formall Reason in all, and applied sufficiently by the same* *NUM. 13.* *A.C.p. 70.* *meanes*

A. C. p. 70.

A. C. p. 70.

Num. 14.
A. C. p. 71.

meanes to all) would easily believe all. Why surely we do not believe any one Article onely, but all the Articles of the Christian Faith; And we believe them for the same formall Reason in all, namely, *Because they are revealed from and by God*, and sufficiently applied in his Word, and by his Churches Ministrations. But so long as they do not believe all in this sort (saith A. C.) Looke you; He tels us we do not believe all, when we professe we do. Is this man become as God, that he can better tell what we believe, then we our selves? Surely we do believe all, and in that sort too: Though, I believe, were S. Athanasius himsele alive againe, and a plaine man should come to him, and tell him he believed his Creed in all and every particular; he would admit him for a good Catholike Christian, though he were not able to expresse to him the formall reason of that his belief. Yea but (saith A. C.) while they will, as all Heretickes doe, make choice of what they will, and what they will not believe, without relying upon the Infallible Authority of the Catholike Church, they cannot have that one saving Faith in any one Article. Why, but whatsoever Hereticks doe, we are not such, nor do we so. For they which believe all the Articles (as once againe I tell you, we do) make no choice; And we do relie upon the Infallible Authority of the Word of God, and the whole Catholike Church; And therefore we both can have, and have that one saving Faith which believes all the Articles entirely, though we cannot believe that any particular Church is infallible.

And yet againe A. C. will not thus be satisfied, but on he goes, and adds, *That although we believe the same truth which other good Catholikes doe in some Articles, yet not believing them for the same formall reason of Divine Revelation sufficiently applied by Infallible Church Authority, &c. we cannot be said to have one and the same*
Infallible

Infallible and Divine Faith which other good Catholike Christians have, who believe the Articles for this formall Reason, sufficiently made knowne to them, not by their owne fancy, nor the fallible Author humane deductions, but by the Infallible Authority of the Church of God. If A.C. will still say the same thing, I must still give the same answer. First, he confesses we believe the same Truth in some Articles (I pray marke his phrase) the same Truth in some Articles with other good Catholike Christians: so farre his pen hath told Truth against his will: for he doth not (I wot well) intend to call us Catholikes, and yet his pen being truer then himselfe, hath let it fall. For the word (other) cannot be so used as here it is, but that we, as well as they, must be good Catholikes: For he that shall say, the old Romans were valiant, as well as other men, supposes the Romans to be valiant men; And he that shall say, The Protestants believe some Articles, as well as other good Catholikes, must in propriety of speech suppose them to be good Catholikes. Secondly, as we do believe those some Articles, so do we believe them, and all other Articles of Faith, for the same formall reason, and so applied, as but just ^{}before I have expressed. Nor do we believe any one Article of Faith by our own fancy, or by fallible Authority of humane deductions; but next to the Infallible Authority of God's Word, we are guided by his Church. But then A.C. steps into a Conclusion, whither we cannot follow him: For he sayes, that the Articles to be believed must be sufficiently made known unto us by the Infallible Authority of the Church of God, that is, of men Infallibly assisted by the Spirit of God, as all lawfully called, continued, and confirmed Generall Councils are assisted. That the whole Church of God is infallibly assisted by the Spirit of God, so that it cannot by any error fall away totally from Christ the Foundation, I make no doubt. For if it could, the gates*

* § 38. N^o. 13.

A.C. p. 71.

† S. 21. N^o. 5.

Matth. 16. 18.

of hell had prevailed against it, which, our Saviour assures me, S. Matth. 16. they shall never be able to doe. But that all *Generall Councils*, be they never so lawfully called, continued, and confirmed, have *Infallible Assistance*, I utterly deny. 'Tis true, that a *Generall Councell de post facto*, after 'tis ended, and admitted by the whole Church, is then *Infallible*, for it cannot erre in that which it hath already clearely and truly determined without Errour. But that a *Generall Councell à parte ante*, when it first sits down and continues to deliberate, may truly be said to be *Infallible* in all its *after-determinations*, whatsoever they shall be, I utterly deny. And it may be it was not without cunning that A.C. shuffled these words together, *Called, Continued, and Confirmed*; for be it never so lawfully called, and continued, it may erre. But after 'tis confirmed, that is, admitted by the whole Church, then being found true, it is also *Infallible*, that is, it deceives no man. For so all Truth is, and is to us, when 'tis once knowne to be Truth. But then many times that Truth, which being known is necessary and *Infallible*, was before both *contingent* and *fallible*, in the way of proving it, and to us. And so here, a *Generall Councell* is a most probable, but yet a *fallible* way of inducing Truth, though the Truth once induced may be (after 'tis found) necessary and *Infallible*. And so likewise the very Councell it selfe for that particular in which it hath concluded Truth. But A.C. must both speake and meane of a Councell set downe to deliberate, or els he sayes nothing.

NUM. 15.
A. C. p. 71.

Now hence A.C. gathers, That though every thing defined to be a Divine Truth in *Generall Councils* is not absolutely necessary to be expressly knowne and actually believed (as some other Truths are) by all sorts: yet no man may (after knowledge that they are thus defined) doubt deliberately, much lesse obstinately deny the Truth of

any

anything so defined. Well, in this Collection of A. C. First we have this granted, That every thing defined in *Generall Councils* is not absolutely necessary to be expressly knowne, and actually believed by all sorts of men. And this no *Protestant*, that I know, denies. Secondly, it is affirmed, that after knowledge, that these *Truths* are thus defined, no man may doubt deliberately, much lesse obstinately deny any of them. Truly, *Obstinately* (as the word is now in common use) carries a fault along with it: And it ought to be farre from the temper of a Christian, to be *obstinate* against the Definitions of a *Generall Council*. But that he may not upon very probable grounds, in an humble and peaceable manner deliberately doubt, yea and upon Demonstrative grounds constantly deny even such Definitions, yet submitting himselfe and his grounds to the Church in that or another Council, is that which was never till now imposed upon *Believers*. For 'tis one thing for a man deliberately to doubt, and modestly to propose his Doubt for satisfaction, which was ever lawfull, and is many times necessary. And quite another thing for a man upon the pride of his owne Iudgement, * to refuse externall Obedience to the Council, * §.32. N.5. which to doe, was never Lawfull, nor can ever stand with any Government. For there is all the reason in the world, the Council should be heard for it selfe, as well as any such *Recusant* whatsoever, and that before a Judge as good as it selfe at least. And to what end did † S. Augustine say, That one *Generall Council* might be amended by another, the former by the Later, if men might neither denie, nor so much as deliberately doubt of any of these Truths defined in a *Generall Council*? And A. C. should have done well to have named but one ancient Father of the *Primitive Church*, that ever affirmed this. * For the Assistance which God gives

† S. Aug. L. 2. de Bapt. cont. Donat. c. 3. Ipsa quo plenaria, saepe priora à posterioribus emendari.

* §. 21. N. 5.

to the whole Church in generall, is but in things simply necessary to eternall Salvation; therefore more then this cannot be given to a Generall Councell, no nor so much. But then if a Generall Councell shall forget it selfe, and take upon it to define things not absolutely necessary to bee expresly knowne, or actually believed (which are the things which A. C. here speaks of) In these as neither Generall Councell, nor the whole Church have infallible Assistance: so have Christians liberty modestly and peaceably, and upon just grounds, both

^a I know the Greekes subscribed that Councell. *Sed in illo Concilio Græcæ Ecclesiæ diu restitit.* Pet. Mart. *Loc. com. classe tertiâ. c. 9. nu. 13. Et in ultimâ Sessione istius Concilii Græci dixerunt se sine Auctoritate totius Ecclesiæ Orientalis Questionem aliam tractare non posse. præter illam de processione Sp. Sancti. Postea verò, consentiente Imperatore, tractarunt de aliis, &c.* Florent. Concil. Sess. ult. *apud Nicolum. To. 4. p. 894. &c.* This favours of some art to bring in the Greekes. Howsoever this shewes enough against Bellarmine, That all the Greekes did not constantly teach Purgatory, as he affirms. *L. 1. de Purgat. c. 11. §. De tertio modo.* ^b *Con. Trid. Sess. 25. & in Bullâ Pii 4. super formâ Iuramenti professionis Fidei.*

deliberately to doubt, and constantly to deny such the Councils Definitions. For instance, the Council of Florence first defined Purgatory to be believed as a Divine Truth, and matter of Faith (^a if that Council had Consent enough so to define it.) This was afterwards deliberately doubted of by the Protestants; after this as constantly denied, then confirmed by the ^b Council of Trent, and an Anathema set upon the head of every man that denies it. And

yet scarce any Father within the first three hundred yeares ever thought of it.

NUM. 16.

^a *Omnes veteres Græci & Latini ab ipso tempore Apostolorum constanter docuerunt Purgatorium esse.* Bel. *L. 1. de Purgat. c. 11. §. De tertio modo.* ^b *Bel. Lib. 1 de Purgat. c. 6. §. 1.*

I know ^a Bellarmine affirms it boldly, That all the Fathers, both Greeke and Latine, did constantly teach Purgatory from the very Apostles times. And where he brings his Proofs out of the Fathers for this Point, he divides them into two Ranks. ^b In the first, he reckons them which affirme Prayer for the dead, as if that must necessarily inferre Purgatory. Whereas most certaine it is, that the Ancients had, and gave other Reasons of Prayer for the dead, then freeing them out of any Purgatory. And this is very Learnedly, and at large set downe,

downe, by the now Learned^a Primate of Armagh. But then in the second, he sayes, there are^b most manifest places in the Fathers, in which they affirme Purgatory. And hee names there no fewer then two and twenty of the Fathers. A great Iury certainly, did they give their Verdict with him. But first, within the three hundred yeares after Christ, he names none but Tertullian, Cyprian, and Origen. And^c Tertullian speakes expressely of Hell, not of Purgatory. S.^d Cyprian of a Purging to Amendment, which cannot be after this Life. As for^e Origen, he, I think, indeed was the first Founder of Purgatory; But of such an One, as I believe Bellarmine dares not affirme, For hee thought there was no Punishment after this life, but Purgatory; and that not only the most impious men, but even the Devils themselves should be saved, after they had suffered and beene Purged enough. Which is directly contrary to the Word of God expounded by his^f Church. In the fourth and fifth (the great and Learned Ages of the Church) he names more, as^g S. Ambrose. But S. Ambrose sayes. That some shall be saved, *quasi per ignem*, as it were by fire, leaving it as doubtfull, what was meant by that Fire, as the Place it selfe doth, whence it is taken.^h 1 Cor. 3. S.ⁱ Hierome indeed names a Purging by Fire; But 'tis not very plaine, that he meanes it after this life. And howsoever, this is most plaine, That S. Hierome is at *Credimus*, we believe eternall Punishment; but hee goes no farther then *Arbitramur*, we thinke there is a Purging. So with him it was Arbitrary; And therefore sure no Matter of Faith then. And againe^k he saith, That some Christians may be saved, *post poenas* punishments indured, but hee neit^ler saith when. S.^m Basil names indeed a purgatory fire; but he relates as uncertainly, to that in 1 Cor. 3. as S. Ambrose doth. As forⁿ Paulinus, he speakes for Prayer for the dead, but not a word of

^a Iaco. Vilher, Armachan. In his answer to the Jesuites Challenge

c. 7 p. 194.

^b *Sunt apertissima Loca in Patribus, ubi asserunt Purgatorium.* Bel. L. 1. de Purg. c. 6. S. Deinde sunt.

^c Tert. L. de Ani.

^d 17. Infernum.

^e Cypri. L. 4. Ep.

2. Emendari igne.

^f Orig. Lib. 1.

regi de xlv cap. 6

S. Hieron. in Io-

ne. 3. Bellar. L. 7.

de Purg. c. 2. S.

Perro non.

S. Aug. L. 21. civ.

Dei. c. 17.

^g S. Aug. L. 21.

civ. Dei. c. 17.

^h S. Amb. in Psal.

36. 14.

ⁱ 1 Cor. 3. 15.

^j S. Hieron. in 66.

Isai. sine.

^k S. Hieron. L. 4.

cont. Pelag. ultra

medium.

^l S. Basil. in I-

sai. 9.

^m Paulin. Ep. 1.

^a Greg. Naz. *O-*
rat. 39. fine.

^b Laët. *L. 7. c. 21*

^c S. Hilar. *in Pf.*
118. v. 20.

^d Boetius *L. 4.*
Prof. 4.

^e Theod. *in 1 Chr.*
8.

Purgatory. And the Place in *S. Gregory Nazianzen* is farre from a manifest Place For hee speaks there of *Baptisme by fire*; which is no usuall phrase to signifie *Purgatory*. But yet say that here he doth, ther's a *πυρ* a fortassis, a peradventure in the words, which *Bellarmino* cunningly leaves out. And if it be a *Peradventure* yee shall then be Baptised with fire: why then 'tis at a *Peradventure* too, that yee shall not. Now such Casuall stuffe as this; *peradventure* you shall, and *peradventure* you shall not, is no Expression for things, which are valued to be *de fide*, and to be believed as *Matters of Faith*. *Bellarmino* goes on with ^b*Laëtantius*, but with no better successe. For he sayes indeed, That some men *perstringentur igne*, shall be sharply touched by fire. But he speaks of such, *quorum peccata prævaluerunt*, whose sinnes have prevailed. And they in *Bellarmino's* Doctrine are for *Hell*, not *Purgatory*. As for *S. Hilary*, he will not come home neither. 'Tis true, he speaks of a *Fire* too, and one that must be indured, but he tells us, 'tis a Punishment *expiandæ a peccatis animæ*, to purge the soule from sinnes. Now this will not serve *Bellarmino's* turne. For they of *Rome* teach, That the sinnes are forgiven here, and that the Temporall Punishment only remaines to be satisfied in *Purgatory*. And what need is there then of purging of sinnes? Left there should not be Fathers enough, hee reckons in ^d*Boetius* too. But he, though not long before a *Convert*, yet was so well scene in this Point, that he goes no farther then *Puto*, I thinke that after death some soules are exercised *purgatoriâ clementiâ*, with a Purgative Clemency. But *Puto*, I think 'tis so, is no expression for *Matter of Faith*. The two Pregnant Authorities which seeme to come home, are those of *Gregory Nyssene*, and *Theodore*. But for ^e*Theodore* in *Scholiis Græcis* (which is the Place *Bellarmino* quotes) I can finde no such thing.

Thing : And manifest it is, *Bellar- mine*^a himselfe tooke it but upon trust. And for^b *S. Gregory Nyssen*, 'tis true, some places in him seeme plaine. But then they are made so doubtfull by other Places in him, that I dare not say simply and roundly, what his Iudgment was. For he sayes, Men must be purged from Perturbations, and either by Prayers, and Philosophy, or the study of Wisdome, or by the furnace of Purgatory-fire after this life. And againe, That a man cannot be partaker *θεόκτοτος* of the Divine nature, unless the Purging fire doth take away the staines that are in his Soule. And againe, That after this life a Purgatory fire takes away the blots and propensity to evill. And I deny not, diverse other like places are in him. But first, this is quite another thing from the *Romane Purgatory*. For *S. Gregory* tels us here, that the Purgatory he meanes, purges Perturbations, and staines, and blots, and propensity to evill. Whereas the Purgatory which Rome now teaches, purges not^c sinne, but is only satisfactory by way of punishment for sins already forgiven, but for which satisfaction was not made before their Death. Secondly, *S. Gregory Nyssen* himselfe seems not obscurely to relate to some other Fire^d. For he sayes expressely, That the soule is to be punished, till the Vitiosity of it be consumed, *Purgatorio igne*; So the Translation renders it, but in the Originall it is *τῷ ἀκοιμητῷ πυρὶ*, that is, in a fire that sleeps not, which, for ought appeares, may be understood of a Fire that is eternall; whereas the fire assigned to Purgatory shall cease. Besides *S. Gregory* sayes plainly: The Soule cannot suffer by fire but in the Body; and the Body cannot be with it, till the Resurrection. Therefore^e hee must needs speak of a fire after the Resurrection, which must

^a Bellarmin, *L. 1 de Purgato. c. 4.* Ex Græcis habemus.

^b *S. Greg. Nyss. Orat. de Mortuis. p. 1066. Edit. Paris 1615. Tom. 2. Διά ποσων ὡς τε καὶ φιλοσοφίας ἐκκαθαρίσῃς ἡμετέραν τὴν ψυχὴν τῶν ἐμμεμεσμένων τῇ ψυχῇ ἐν τῷ αἵματι τοῦ καυασίου πυρὸς ἀμβλύνειν &c. ibid. p. 1067. ἐν τῷ καυασίῳ πυρὶ ἀμβλύνειν &c. ibid. p. 1068.*

^c Item definimus: si verè penitentes in Deo charitate decesserint, antequam dignis penitentiae fructibus de commissis & Omissis satisfecerint, penis Purgatoris post mortem purgari. Concil. Floren. circa. prin. per Bin. Edit. Colon. 1618.

^d *S. Greg. Nyss. de Animâ & Resur. Tom. 2. p. 658.*

^e *S. Greg. Orat. 3. de Resurrect. Christi.*

must bee either the Fire of the *Generall Conflagration*; or *Hell*, *Purgatory* he cannot meane. VVhere, according to the *Romish Tenet*, the *Soule* suffers without the *Body*. The truth is: Divers of the *Ancient*, especially *Greekes*, which were a little too much acquainted with *Plato's Schoole*,[†] philosophized, and disputed upon this, and some other Points with much *Obscurity*; and as little *Certainty*. So upon the whole matter, in the *fourth* and *fift hundred* yeare, you see here's none that constantly and perspicuously affirme it And as

† Non expedit
philosophari alii-
us. &c. Orig. L.
6. cont. Celsum.

^a Constat Animas purgari post hanc vitam. S. Augustin. Lib. 21. Civ. Dei. c. 24. vide.

^b Iustorum flagella non incipiunt post mortem, sed desinunt. Et c. Anima mox in Paradisum &c. S. Aug. Contr. Felicianum. c. 15. Et duo tantum loca esse. &c. S. Aug. Ser. 19. de verb. Apost. c. 15. Et L. 21. de Civ. Dei. c. 16. sine Negat, nisi sit Ignis ille in Consummatione seculi.

^c Quæri potest &c. S. Aug. in Enchirid. c. 69. Forstæ verum est &c. S. Aug. L. 21. de Civ. Dei. c. 26. Quid S. Paulus senserit 1 Cor. 3. de Igne illo, magis intelligentes, & doctiores audire. S. Aug. L. de Fide & Oper. c. 16.

^d S. Greg. in Psal. 3. Penitentialem princ.

for S. *Augustine* he ^a said, and ^b unsaid it, and ^c at the last left it doubtful, which had it then been received as a Point of *Faith*, he durst not have done. Indeed then in S. *Gregory the Great's* time, in the beginning of the *sixt Age*, *Purgatory* was grown to some perfection. For S. ^d *Gregory* himself is at *Scio* ('twas but at *Puto* a little before) I know that some shall bee *Expiated* in *Purgatory flames*. And therefore I will easily give *Bellarmino* all that

follow. For after this time *Purgatory* was found too warme a businessse to be suffered to *Coole* again. And in the after *Ages*, more were frightened, then led by *proof* into the *Beliefe* of it.

NUM. 17.

Quod Univerſa tenet Eccleſia, nec Conciliis inſtitutum, ſed ſemper retentum eſt, non niſi Authoritate Apoſtolica traditum reſtiſſime creditur S. Aug. L. 4. de Bapt. cont. Donatiſt. c. 24. Nec ad Summos Pontifices reſerri poteſt. Addit Melch. Canus L. 3. de Locis c. 4. prin.

Now by this we ſee alſo, That it could not be a *Tradition*; For then we might have traced it by the ſmoke to the *Apoſtles* times. Indeed *Bellarmin.* would have it ſuch a *Tradition*. For hee tels us out of S. ^e *Augustine*, That that is rightly believed to be delivered by *Apoſtolicall Authority*, which the whole Church holds, and
hath

hath ever held, and yet is not Instituted by any Councell. And hee addes, That *Purgatory* is such a *Tradition*, so Constantly held in the whole Church, *Greeke*, and *Latine*. And [†] that wee doe not finde any beginning of this *Beliefe*. Where I shall take the boldnesse to Observe these three things. First, that the Doctrine of *Purgatory* was not held ever in the whole Catholike Church of *Christ*. And this appeares by the proofes of * *Bellarmino* himselfe produced, and I have [†] before examined. For there 'tis manifest, that scarce two *Fathers* directly affirme the *beliefe* of *Purgatory* for full six hundred yeares after *Christ*. Therefore *Purgatory* is no Matter of Faith, nor to be believed as descending from *Apostolicall Authority* by *S. Augustine's* Rule. Secondly, that we can finde a beginning of this Doctrine, and a Beginner too, namely *Origen*. And neither *Bellarmino*, nor any other is able to shew any one *Father* of the Church that said it before him. Therefore *Purgatory* is not to be believed as a Doctrine delivered by *Apostolicall Authority* by *Bellarmino's* owne rule; For it hath a Beginning. Thirdly, I observe too, that *Bellarmino* cannot well tell where to lay the foundation of *Purgatory*, that it may be safe. For first, hee labours to found it upon *Scripture*. To that end ^a hee brings no fewer then ten places out of the *Old Testament*, and nine out of the *New*, to proove it. And yet fearing lest these places be strained (as indeed they are) and so too weake to be laid under such a vast pile of Building, as *Purgatory* is, ^b hee flies to *unwritten Tradition*. And by this Word of God *unwritten*, hee sayes 'tis manifest, that the Doctrine of *Purgatory* was delivered by the *Apostles*. Sure if *Nineteene* places of *Scripture* cannot proove it, I would be loth to fly to *Tradition*. And if Recourse to *Tradition* bee necessary, then certainly those places of *Scripture* made not the prooffe they were brought for. And once

Z z

more

† Non inveni-
mus initium hu-
jus dogmatis, sed
omnes veteres
Græci & Latini.
c. c. Bellar. L. 1.
de Purg. c. 11. §.
De tertio modo.
* L. 1. de Purg.
c. 6.
† §. 33. N. 16.

^a Bellar. L. 1. de
Purgat. c. 3. & 4.

^b De tertio modo
perspicuum est.
c. c. Bellar. L. 1. de
Purgat. c. 11. §.
Tertio ex Verbo
c. c. & §. De
tertio modo, &c.

more how can Bellarmine say here, That wee finde not the *Beginning*, *hujus dogmatis*, of this Article; when hee had said before, that hee had found it in *Nineteene* places of Scripture. For if in these places hee could not finde the beginning of the Doctrine of Purgatory, hee is false while he sayes he did: And if hee did finde it there, then hee is false here in saying, we finde no beginning of it, And for all his Brags

^a*Omnes veteres Græci & Latini &c.* Bellarm. L. I. de Purgat. c. 11. §. De tertio modo.

^b*De Purgatorio in Antiquis Scripturis potissimum Græcis ferè nulla mentio est. Quà de causâ usque in hodiernum diem Purgatorium non est à Græcis creditum Alphon. a Castro. L. 8. advers. Heros. Verbo Indulgentia.*

of ^a*Omnes Veteres*, all the Ancient, Greeke and Latine doe constantly teach Purgatory. Yet ^b*Alphon. a Castro* deales honestly and plainly, and tels us, That the mention of Purgatory in Ancient Writers is ferè nulla, almost none at all, especially in the Greeks. And

he addes, That hereupon Purgatory is not believed by the Græcians to this very day. And what now, I pray, after all this, may I not so much as deliberately doubt of this, because 'tis now Defined? and but now in a

^c*Purgatorium nullum esse, est manifesta Hæresis, &c.* M. Anton. de Dominis sui *Reditus ex Angliâ consilium* exponit. Paris. 1623. p. 17. Merita, Indulgentiæ, & reliqua, quæ superius ut in Ecclesiâ definita, commemoravi, sunt omnes Articuli Fundamentales, quia non minus nituntur *Revelationi*, quàm priora de Trinitate, Ibid. p. 32. And so much A. C. himselfe sayes of all points in which in the Doctrine of the Faith Protestants differ from them. In his *Relation of the first Conference*, p. 28.

manner? and thus? No sure. So A. C. tels you, Doubt? No. For when you had fooled the Arch-Bishop of Spalato back to Rome, there you either made him say, or said it for him ^c(for in Print it is, and under his Name.) That since 'tis now defined by the Church, a man is as much bound to believe there is a Purgatory, as that there is a Trinity

of Persons in the Godhead. How farre comes this short of Blasphemy, to make the Trinity, and Purgatory things alike, and equally Credible?

N^{UM} 18.
A. C. p 71.

Yea, but A. C. will give you a Reason, why no man may deliberately doubt, much lesse deny any thing that is defined by a Generall Councell. And his Reason is,
Because

'Because every such doubt and denyall is a breach from the one saving faith. This is a very good reason, if it bee true. But how appeares it to be true? How? why it takes away (saith A.C.) Infallible credit from the Church, and so the Divine Revelation being not sufficiently applyed, it cannot according to the ordinary course of Gods providence breed Infallible Beliefe in us. VVhy but deliberately to doubt and constantly to deny upon the grounds and in the manner *aforesaid, doth not take away Infallible credit from the whole Church, but onely from the Definition of a Generall Councell some way or other misled, And that in things not absolutely Necessary to all mens salvation, For of such things † A. C. here speaks expressly. Now to take away Infallible credit from some Definitions of Generall Councils, in things not absolutely necessary to salvation, is no breach upon the one saving faith which is necessary, nor upon the Credit of the Catholike Church of Christ in things absolutely necessary, for which onely it had Infallible Assistance promised. So that no breach being made upon the faith, nor no credit which ever it had being taken from the Church, the Divine Revelation may bee, and is as sufficiently applyed as ever it was; and in the ordinary course of Gods providence may breed as Infallible beliefe in things necessary to salvation, as ever it did.

But A. C. will proove his Reason before given, and therefore hee askes us out of Saint Paul Rom. 10. *How shall men believe unlesse they beare? How shall they beare without a Preacher? And how shall they preach (to wit Infallibly) unlesse they bee sent, that is, from God, and infallibly assisted by his Spirit?* Here's that which I have twise at least spoken to already, namely, That A. C. by this will make every Priest in the Church of Rome that hath Learning enough to preach, and

A.C.p.71.

* §.38. N. 15.

† Though every Thing Defined to bee a Divine Truth in Generall Councils is not absolutely necessary to bee expressly known, and actually believed by all sorts. c. A. C. p.71.

NUM. 19.

A.C.p.71.

Rom. 10:14, 15

* *Alios (ab Authoribus Canonica Scriptura) ita lego, ut quantalibet sanctitate doctrinaque; prepolleant, non ideo verum putē, quod ipsi ita senserunt, vel scripserunt.* Tho. p. 1 q. 1. A. 8. ad. 2. Ex S. Aug. Ep. 19. *Mihi non credas, nisi Demonstrationem accipias ex sacris Literis.* S. Cyril. Hierosol. Car. 4.

* A. C. p. 70.

† *Verba hæc Apostoli non possunt intelligi de Fide infusa, illa enim immediate a Deo creata est, & non est ex auditu ut hæc.* Apertissime colligitur ex Biel. in 3. sent. D. 23. q. 2. A. 2. *Conclus. 1. Ergo Fides acquiritur necessaria est.* Ibid. *sed præter Acquisitam, Infusa etiam requiritur, & non solum propter Intentionem Actus, sed etiam propter Assensum & Certitudinem. Quia non potest esse firmus Assensus à Fide acquiritur. Quia per eam nullus credit alicui, nisi quem scit posse falli & fallere, licet credat eum non Velle fallere.* Scotus in 3. sent. D. 23. q. unica. Therefore in the judgement of your owne Schoole, your Preachers can both deceive and be deceived. And therefore certainly are not *Infallible*. And M. Canus very expressly makes this but an Introduction to *Infallible* faith. *Primum ergo id statuo juxta Communem Legem aliqua exteriora & humana incitamenta necessaria esse, quibus ad Evangelii fidem inducamur. Quomodo enim credent ei, quem non audierunt.* &c. Canus L. 2. de Locis. c. 8 §. *Primum ergo. Et iterum. Si Fides infusa ita Fidei acquiritur niteretur, tanquam suo Fundamento; ipsum Fundamentum Fides nostra non esset Divina sed Humana Veritas.* Ibid. §. Cui & tertium. Therefore surely A. C. abuses this place of the *Apostle* very boldly.

NUM. 20.

A. C. p. 71.

After this (for I see the good man is troubled, and forward and backward he goes) he fals immediately upon this Question; *If a whole generall Councell defining what is Divine Truth, be not believed to be sent and assisted by Gods Spirit, and consequently of Infallible Credit, what man in the World can bee said to bee of Infallible Credit?* Well, first A. C. hath very ill lucke in fitting his Conclusion

diffents not from that Church, an *Infallible Preacher*, which no Father of the *Primitive Church* did ever assume to himselfe, nor the Church give him. And yet the Fathers of the *Primitive Church* were sent, and from God, were assisted, and by God, and did sufficiently propose to men the *Divine Revelation*, and did by it beget and breed up Faith, saving Faith in the Soules of men: Though, * no one among them since the *Apostles*, was an *Infallible Preacher*. And A. C. should have done very well here to have made it manifest, That this Scripture, *How shall they preach* (to wit *Infallibly*) is so interpreted by *Union*, *Consent of Fathers*, and *Definitions of Councils*, as hee^a bragged before, that they use to interpret Scripture, For I doe not finde *How shall they Preach* (to wit † *Infallibly*) to bee the *Comment* of any one of the *Fathers*; or any other approved *Author*; And let him shew it, if he can.

Conclusion to his *Premises*, and his *Consequent* to his *Antecedent*; And so 'tis here with him. For a *Generall Councell* may be assisted by God's Spirit, and in a great measure too, and in a greater then any private man not inspired, and yet not consequently be of *Infallible Credit*; for all assistance of God's Spirit reaches not up to *Infallibility*. I hope the *Ancient Bishops* and *Fathers* of the *Primitive Church* were assisted by God's Spirit, and in a plentiful measure too, and yet *A. C.* himselve will not say they were *Infallible*. And secondly, for the *Question* it selfe, *If a Generall Councell be not, what man in the world can be said to be of Infallible Credit?* Truly I'll make you a ready Answer, *No man*; Not the *Pope* himselve? *No*: Let God and his word be true, and every man a lyer, *Rom. 3.* for so, more or lesse, every man will be found to be. And this is neither dammage to the Church, nor wrong to the person of any. *Rom. 3. 4.*

But then *A. C.* asks a shrewder *Question* then this. *NUM. 21. A. C. p. 71.*
If such a Councell lawfully called, continued and confirmed, may erre in defining any one Divine Truth, how can we be Infallibly certaine of any other Truth defined by it? For if S. 10. N. 15.
it may erre in one, why not in another, and another, and so in all? 'Tis most true, if such a Councell may erre in one, it may in another, and another, and so in all of like nature: I say in all of like nature. And A. C. may A. C. p. 71.
*remember he exprest himselve a little before, to speake of the Defining of such Divine Truths as are not absolutely necessary to be expresly knowne and actually believed of all sorts of men. Now there is, there can be no necessity of an Infallible certainty in the whole Catholike Church, and much lesse in a Generall Councell, of things not * absolutely necessary in themselves. For Christ did * S. 21. N. 5.*
not intend to leave an Infallible certainty in his Church to satisfie either Contentious, or Curious, or Presumptuous Spirits. And therefore in things not Fundamentall,

not *Necessary*, 'tis no matter if *Councils* erre in one, and another, and a third, the *whole Church* having power and meanes enough to see that no *Councell* erre in *Necessary* things, and this is certainty enough for the Church to have, or for *Christians* to expect; especially since the *Foundation* is so *strongly* and so *plainly* laid downe in *Scripture* and the *Creed*, that a modest man might justly wonder why any man should run to any later *Councell*, at least for any *Infallible* certainty.

NUM. 22.
A. C. p. 72.

Yet *A. C.* hath more *Questions* to aske; and his next is, *How we can (according to the ordinary Course) be Infallibly assured that it erres in one, and not in another, when it equally by one and the same Authority defines both to be Divine Truth?* *A. C.* taking here upon him to defend *M. Fisher* the *Jesuite* could not but see what I had formerly written concerning this difficult *Question* about *Generall Councils*. And to all that (being large) he replied little or nothing. Now when he thinks that may be forgotten, or as if it did not at all lie in his way, he here turnes *Questionist*, to disturbe that businesse, and indeed the Church, as much as he can. But to this *Question* also I answer againe, If any *Generall Councell* doe now erre, either it erres in things absolutely necessary to *Salvation*, or in things not necessary. If it erre in things *Necessary*, we can be infallibly assured by the *Scripture*, the *Creeds*, the *four first Councils*, and the *whole Church*, where it erres in one, and not in another. If it be in *non necessariis*, in things not necessary, 'tis not requisite that we should have for them an infallible assurance. As for that which followes, it is notoriously both *cunning*, and *false*. 'Tis false to suppose that a *Generall Councell* defining two things for *Divine Truths*, and erring in one, but not erring in another, doth define both equally *by one, and the same Authority*. And 'tis *cunning*, because these words

words (*by the same Authority*) are equivocall, and must be distinguished, that the Truth, which A. C. would hide, may appeare. Thus then, suppose a *Generall Council* erring in one point, and not in another, it doth define both, and equally by the same delegated Authority which that Council hath received from the Catholike Church. But it doth not define both, and much lesse equally, by the same Authority of the Scripture, (which must be the Councils Rule, as well as private mens) no nor by the same Authority of the whole Catholike Church (who did not intentionally give them equall power to define Truth, and error for Truth.) And I hope A. C. dares not say the Scripture (according to which all Councils, that will uphold Divine Truth, must Determine) doth equally give either ground or power to define Error and Truth.

To his former Questions A. C. adds, *That if we leave this to be examined by any private man, this examination not being Infallible, had need to be examined by another, and this by another without end, or ever comming to Infallible certainty necessarily required in that one faith which is necessary to salvation, and to that peace and unity which ought to be in the Church.* Will this inculcating the same thing never be left? I told the Iesuite ^a before, that I give no way to any private man to be Iudge of a *Generall Council*: And there also I shewed the way how an erring Council might be rectified, and the peace of the Church either preserved or restored, without lifting any private spirit above a Council, and without this processe in *Infinitem* (which A. C. so much urges, and which is so much declined in all ^b Sciences.) For as the understanding of a man must alwaies have somewhat to rest upon, so must his Faith. But a ^c private man, first for his owne satisfaction, and after for the Churches, if he have just cause, may consider

NUM. 23.
A. C. p. 72.

^a §. 32. N. 5. §.
33. Confid. 7.
Nu. 4.

^b Arist. 1. Post.
Tex. 6 & 4.
Metaph. T. 14.
^c §. 38. Nu. 15.

^a Hic non loquimur de Decisione, seu Determinatione Doctrinali, qua ad unumquemque virum peritum spectare dignoscitur; sed de Authoritativâ & Iudiciali, &c. 1a. Almain. L. de Auth. Eccl. c. 10. princ.

^b §. 38. Num. 1. *Salvation.* And of that (as I expressed ^b before) a most infallible certainty we have already in the Scripture, the Creeds, and the four first Generall Councils, to which for things Necessary and Fundamentall in the

^c Sunt qui nescio quâ ducti ratione sentiunt non esse opus Generali Concilio (De Constantienti loquitur) dicentes, omnia bene à Patribus nostris Ordinata ac Constituta, modo ab omnibus legitimè & fideliter servarentur. Fatemur equidem id ipsum esse verissimum. Tamen cum nihil ferè servetur, &c. Pet. de Aliaco. L. de reformat. Eccles. sine. So that after-Councils are rather to Decree for Observance, then to make any new Determinations of the Faith.

^d Non omnis Error in his quæ fidei sunt, est aut Infidelitas, aut Hæresis. Holkot. in 1. Sent. q. 1. ad 4. K.

^e Scimus quosdam quod semel imbiberint nolle deponere, nec propositum suum facile mutare, sed salvo inter Collegas pacis & concordia vinculo, quædam propria quæ apud se semel sint usurpata, retinere. Quæ in re nec nos vim cuiquam facimus, aut legem damus, &c. S. Cyp. L. 2. Epist. 1. Concordia quæ est Charitatis effectus, est unio Voluntatum, non Opinionum. Tho. 2. 2. q. 37. Ar. 1. c. Dissensio de Minimis, & de Opinionibus repugnat quidem paci perfectæ, in quâ plene veritas cognoscitur, & omnis appetitus complebitur. Non tamen repugnat paci imperfectæ, qualis habetur in via. Tho. 2. 2. q. 29. A. 3. ad 2. † 1. Cor. 1. 10. Phil 2. 2.

consider of, and examine by the ^a Judgement of discretion, though not of power, even the Definitions of a Generall Councell. But A. C. concludes well, That an Infallible certainty is necessary for that one Faith which is necessary to ^b salvation. And of that (as I expressed ^b before) a most infallible certainty we have already in the Scripture, the Creeds, and the four first Generall Councils, to which for things Necessary and Fundamentall in the Faith, we need no assistance from other Generall Councils. And some of your ^c owne, very honest and very Learned, were of the same Opinion with me. And for the peace and unity of the Church in things absolutely necessary, we have the same infallible direction that wee have for Faith. But in Things not necessary, (though they be Divine Truths also) if about them Christian men doe differ, 'tis no more then they have done, more or lesse in all Ages of the Church, and they may differ and yet preserve the ^d One necessary Faith, and ^e Charity too, entire, if they be so well minded. I confesse it were heartily to be wished, that in these things also men might be all of one mind, and one judgement, to which the Apostle exhorts, † 1. Cor. 1. But this cannot be hoped for till the Church be Triumphant over all humane frailties which here hang thick and close about her. The want both of Unity and

Peace

Peace proceeding too often, even where Religion is pretended, from Men and their Humours, rather then from Things and Errours to be found in them.

And so A.C. tells me, That it is not therefore (as I would persuade) the fault of Councils Definitions, but the pride of such as will preferre, and not submit their private Judgements, that lost, and continues the losse of peace and unity of the Church, and the want of certainty in that one afore-said soule-saving Faith. Once againe I am bold to tell A.C. that there is no want of certainty, most infallible certainty of That one soule-saving Faith. And if for other opinions which flutter about it, there be a difference, a dangerous difference, as at this day there is, yet necessary it is not, that therefore, or for prevention thereof, there should be such a Certainty, an Infallible Certainty in these things. For he understood himselfe well that said, *Oportet esse Hæreses*, 1. Cor. 11. There must, there will be *Hæreses*. And wheresoever that Necessity lies, 'tis out of doubt enough to prove, That Christ never left such an Infallible Assurance as is able to prevent them: Or such a Mastering Power in his Church, as is able to over-awe them; but they come with their *Oportet* about them; and they rise and spring in all Ages very strangely. But in particular for that which first caused, and now continues the losse of Unity in the Church of Christ, as I make no doubt but that the Pride of men is one Cause, so yet can I not think that Pride is the adequate and sole Cause thereof. But in part Pride caused it, and Pride on all sides; Pride in some that would not at first, nor will not since submit their private judgements, where, with good Conscience, they may, and ought. And Pride in others that would not first, nor will not yet mend manifest, great, and dangerous errours, which with all good Conscience they ought to do. But 'tis not Pride, nor to submit to known and grosse Errours: And the

NUM 24.
A.C. p. 72.

1. Cor. 11. 19.

Definitions of some Councils (perhaps the Lateran, Constance, and Trent) have beene greater and more urgent Causes of breach of Unity, then the Pride of men hath been, which yet I shall never excuse, where-
'ere it is.

NUM. 25.
A. C. p. 72.

^a S. 38. Num. 1.

^b S. 38. Num. 8.

How farre this one soule-saving Faith extends, A. C. tells me I have confessed it not a worke for my pen: But, he sayes, it is to be learned from that One, Holy, Catholike, Apostolike, alwayes Visible, and Infallible Roman Church, of which the Lady, once doubting, is now fully satisfied, &c. Indeed (though A. C. sets this down with some scorn, which I can easily passe over) 'tis true that thus I^a said: There is a Latitude in Faith, especially in reference to different mens salvation; But to set a Bound to this, and strictly to define it, Iust thus farre you must Believe in every particular, or incurre damnation, is no work for my pen. Thus I said, and thus I say still. For though the Foundation be one and the same in all, yet

^b Latitude there is, and a large one too, when you come to Consider not the Foundation common to all,

^c S. Luc. 12. 48. *Unicuique secundum proportionem suam, secundum differentiam Scientiae vel ignorantiae, &c. Et postea. Extenditur doctrina haec, non solum ad Donum Scientiae, &c. Cajetan. in S. Luc. 12. Ecce quomodo Scientia aggravat Culpam. Unde Gregorius, &c. Gorran. in S. Luc. 12. Therefore many things may be necessary for a Knowing mans Salvation, which are not so for a poore Ignorant soule. Si quis de Antecessoribus nostris vel ignorantèr, vel simpliciter non hoc observavit, & tenuit, quod nos Dominus facere exemplo & magisterio suo docuit, potest simplicitati ejus de Indulgentiâ Domini venia concedi. Nobis verò non poterit ignosci, qui nunc à Domino admoniti & instructi sumus. S. Cyprian. L. 2. Epist. 3.*

^d S. 38. Num. 1.

but things necessary to many particular mens Salvation. For to whomsoever God hath given more, of him shalt more be required, ^c S. Luc. 12. as well in Beliefe, as in Obedience and Performance. And the gifts of God, both ordinary and extraordinary, to particular men are so various, as that for my part I hold it impossible for the ablest pen that is to expresse it. And in this respect I^d said it with humility and Reason; That to set these bounds, was no worke for my pen. Nor will I ever take upon me to expresse that Tenet, or Opinion (the deniall

deniall of the *Foundation* onely excepted) which may shut any *Christian*, the meanest out of heaven. And *A. C.* I believe you know very well, to what a narrow scantling, some ^a *Learned* of

your owne side bring the very *Foundation* it selfe, rather then they will loose any that lay hold on *Christ*, the Sonne of God, and Redeemer of the world. And as *Christ* Epitomizes the whole *Law* of *Obedience* into these two great

Commandements: *The Love of God*, and our *Neighbour*, *S. Mat. 22.* So the *Apostle* epitomizes the whole

Law of Beliefe into these two great Assents: *That God*

is: And that *He is a Rewarder of them that seeke him*:

Heb. 11. That seeke him in *Christ*. And *S. Peter*

was full of the Holy Ghost, when he exprest it, That there is no salvation to them that seeke it in, or by another

Name, *Act. 4.*

^a *Articuli Fidei sunt sicut Principia per se nota. Et sicut quidam eorum in aliis implicitè continentur, ita omnes Articuli implicitè continentur in aliquibus primis Credibilibus, &c. secundum illud ad Heb. 11. Tho. 2 2a q. 1. c. 1. 10. c. In absoluto nobis & facili est eternitas: Iesum suscitatum à mortuis per Deum credere, & ipsum esse Dominum confiteri, &c. S. Hilar. La 10. de Trin. ad finem.*

S. Matth. 22. 37.

Heb. 11. 6.

Act. 4. 12.

But since this is no worke for my pen, it seemes

NUM. 26.

A. C. will not say 'tis a worke^b for his. But he tels us, * 'Tis to be learned of the *One, Holy, Catholike, Apostolike*,

alwaies Visible, and Infallible Romane Church. Titles enough given to the

Romane Church, and I wish she deserved them all, for then we should have peace. But 'tis farre otherwise.

One she is, as a particular Church, but not *The One.*

Holy she would be counted, but the world may see, if it will not blinde it self, of what value *Holinesse* is in that

Court and Countrey. *Catholike* she is not, in any sense

of the word, for she is not the

Universall, and so not *Catholike*

in extent. Nor is shee found in

Doctrine, and in things which

^b And yet before in this Conference. & apud *A. C.* pag. 42. the Jesuite whom he defends hath said it expressly, That all those points are *Fundamentall* which are necessary to salvation.

^{*} *A. C. p. 72.*

^c *Romana Ecclesia particularis. Bellar. L. 4. de Ro. Pont. c. 4. §. 1. Catholica autem est illa que diffusa est per universum Orbem. S. Cyril. Hierosol. Catech. 18.*

A a a 2

come

^a *Catholica enim dicitur Ecclesia illa quæ universaliter docet sine ullo defectu, vel differentiâ dogmatum.* S. Cyril. Hierolol. *Catech* 18. Unde *Augustinus* subscripsit se *Episcopum Catholicæ Ecclesiæ Hipponiregensis*. L. 1. de *Actis cum Felice Mani.* h. c. 20. Et l. 2. c. 1. Et *Catholica Alexandrinorum*. Soz. l. 1. Hist. c. 9. Et l. 2. c. 3. And so every particular Church is or may be called Catholike, and that truly, so long as it teaches Catholike Doctrine. In which sense the Particular Romane Church was called Catholike, so long as it taught all and onely those things to be *De Fide*, which the Catholike Church it selfe maintain'd. But now *Rome* doth not so.

^b *Suprà.* §. 35. Nu 9. Other Churches beside the Romane are called *Matres*, and *Originales Ecclesiæ*, as in *Tertul. de praescrip. advers. hæres.* c. 21. Et *Ecclesiæ Hierosolymitana quæ aliarum omnium Mater.* ins de *24. in Eds.* &c. *Theodoret.* L. 5. Hist. Eccl. c. 9. ex *Libello Synodico à Concil. Constantinop. 2. transmissio ad Concilium sub Damaso tum Romæ coactum.* Et *Constantinopolitana Ecclesiæ dicitur omnium aliarum Caput.* Cod. L. 1. Tit. 2. Leg. 24. That is, not simply of all Churches, but of all in that Patriarchate. And so *Rome* is the Head of all in the *Romane Patriarchate*.

NUM. 27.

Vt Ecclesiæ Catholica radicem & Matricem agnoscerent & tenerent. S. Cyp. L. 4. Epist. 8.

^a *Edit. Basiliens.*

1530. And *Simanca* also ap-

plies this speech

of *S. Cyprian* to

Rome. Tit. 24. S.

17. And so also

Pamelius upon

this place of

S. Cyprian. But

they wrong him.

And because many Romanists Object here (though A. C. doth it not) that *S. Cyprian* called the *Romane Church, the Root and Matrix of the Catholike Church of Christ*, I hope I shall have leave to expaine that difficult place also. First then *S. Cyprian* names not *Rome*. That stands onely in the Margin, and was placed there as his particular judgement led^d him that set out *S. Cyprian*. Secondly, the true story of that *Epistle*, and that which led *S. Cyprian* into this Expression, was this. *Cornelius* then chosen *Pope*, expostulates with *S. Cyprian*, That his Letters to *Rome* were directed onely to the Clergy there, and not to *Him*, and takes it ill, as if *S. Cyprian* had thereby seemed to disapprove his Election. *S. Cyprian* replies, That by reason of the Schisme moov'd then by *Novatian*, it was uncertaine in *Africk* which of the Two had the more *Canonicall right to the Sea of Rome*; and that therefore he nam'd him not. But yet that during this uncertainty, he exhorted all that sailed thither, *ut Ecclesiæ Catholicæ Radicem & Matricem agnoscerent & tenerent*: That in all their carriage they should acknowledge

come neare upon the Foundation too; so not *Catholike in Beliefe*. Nor is she the *Prime Mother Church* of Christianity; ^b *Ierusalem* was that, and so not *Catholike* as a *Fountain*, or *Originall*, or as the *Head*, or *Root* of the *Catholike*.

acknowledge, and so hold themselves unto the *Vnity* of the *Catholike Church*, which is the *Root and Matrix* of it, and the only way to avoid participation in the *Schisme*. And that this must be *S. Cyprian's* meaning I shall thus proove. *First*, because, This could not be his meaning or Intention, That the *Sea of Rome* was the *Root or Matrix* of the *Catholike Church*. For if hee had told them so, hee had left them in as great, or greater difficulty, then hee found them. For there was then an *Open* and an *Apparent Schisme* in the *Church of Rome*. *Two Bishops*, *Cornelius* and *Novatian*; *Two Congregations*, which respectively attended and observed them. So that a perplexed Question must needs have divided their thoughts, which of these *Two* had beene that *Root and Matrix* of the *Catholike Church*. Therefore had *S. Cyprian* meant to pronounce *Rome* the *Root and Matrix* of the *Catholike Church*, hee would never have done it at such a time, when *Rome* it selfe was in *Schisme*. Whereas in the other sense, the Counsell is good and plaine, Namely, That they should hold themselves to the *Vnity and Communion* of the *Catholike Church*, which is the *Roote* of it. And then necessarily they were to suspend their *Communion* there, till they saw how the *Catholike Church* did incline, to approve, or disapprove the Election of the *One*, or the *Other*. And thus *S. Cyprian* frees himselfe to *Cornelius* from the very least Touch of *Schisme*. *Secondly*, Because this sense comes home to **Baronius*. For hee affirms, That *S. Cyprian* and his Colleagues the *African Bishops* did *Communione suspendere*, suspend their *Communion*, untill they heard by *Caldonius* and *Fortunatus*, whose the undoubted right was. So it seems *S. Cyprian* gave that Counsell to these Travellers, which himselfe followed. For if *Rome*, during the *Schisme*; and in so

* *Baron. Annal.*
254. *Numb. 64.*
where hee cites
this Epistle.

great uncertainty had yet beene *Radix Ecclesie Catholice*, Root of the Catholike Church of Christ, I would faine know, how S. Cyprian so great and famous an Assertor of the Churches Unity, durst once so much as thinke of suspending Communion with her. Thirdly, Because this sense will be plaine also by other Passages out of other Epistles of S. Cyprian. For writing to Iubaianus an *Africane Bishop* against the *Novatians*, who then infested those parts, and durst Rebaptise Catholike Christians, he saith thus. † But we who hold the head and Root of One Church, doe know for certaine, and believe, that nothing of this is lawfull out of the Catholike Church; And that of Baptisme, which is but One, we are the Head, where he himselfe was at first Baptized, when hee held the Ground and Verity of Divine Unity. Now I conceive 'tis all one, or at least as Argumentative to all purposes to be *Caput* or *Radix Baptismatis*, Head or Root of Baptisme, as Head or Root of the Church. For there's but One Baptisme, as well as but One Church, and that is the entrance into this. And S. Cyprian affirms and includes himselfe, *Nos esse Caput*, that we are the Head of Baptisme. Where yet (I pray observe it) he cannot by *Nos*, We, meane his own Person (though if he did, he were the more Opposite to Rome) much lesse can he meane the *Romane Church*, as it is a Particular and stands separate from others. For then how could he say, *Nos esse Caput*, that we are the Head? Therefore he must needs meane the Unity and Society of the Church Catholike, which the *Novatians* had then left, and whereof he and his Church were still members. Besides most manifest it is, that he calls that Church *Caput Baptismatis* the Head of Baptisme, where *Novatian* was Baptized (they are his own words) and probable it is, that was Rome, Because that Schismatick was a *Romane Priest*. And yet for all this S. Cyprian sayes, *Nos esse Caput*
Bap-

† *Nos autem qui Ecclesia Unius Caput & Radicem tenemus, pro certo scimus, & credimus, nihil extra Ecclesiam licere, & Baptismatis quod est unum, Caput nos esse, ubi & ipso Baptizatus prius fuerat, quando Divina Unitatis, & Rationem & veritatem tenebat.* S. Cyprian. ad Iubaian. Epist. 73. Edit. Pamel.

Baptismatis, that we are the Head of Baptisme, though he were at Carthage. By which it is plain, That as *Caput* is paralell to *Radix*, and *Matrix*: So also that by *Caput*, the head of Baptisme, he includes together with Rome all the other members of the Church *Vniversall*. Again, S.*Cyprian writes to Cornelius and censures the schismaticall Cariage of the Novatians at Rome. And tels him farther, that he had sent Caldonius and Fortunatus to labour Peace in that Church, that so they might be reduced to, and composed in the Vnity of the Catholike Church. But because the Obstinate, and inflexible pertinacy of the other Party had not only refused *Radicis & Matris sinum*, the bosome of their Mother and embracings of their Root, but the Schisme increasing and growing raw to the worse, hath set up a Bishop to it selfe. &c. Where 'tis observable, and I think plaine, That S. Cyprian employed his Legats not to bring the Catholike Church to the communion of Rome, but Rome to the Catholike Church. Or to bring the Novatians not only to Communicate with Cornelius, but with the Church *Vniversall*, which was therefore Head and Root in S. Cyprian's judgement, even to Rome it self, as well as to all other, Great, Ancient, or even Apostolicall Churches. And this is yet more plaine by the sequell. For when those his Legats had laboured to bring those Schismaticks to the Vnity of the Catholike Church; yet he complains their Labour was lost. And why? Why, because *recusabant Radicis & Matris sinum*; they refused the Bosome of the Root, and the Mother. Therefore it must needs be, that in S. Cyprian's sense, these two *Vnitas Catholica Ecclesia*, the unity of the Catholike Church. And *Radicis*, or *Matris Sinus*, or *Complexus*, the Bosome, or Embracing of the Root, or the Mother, are all one. And then *Radix* and *Matrix*, are not words by which he Expresses the *Romane Sea*, in particular, but he denotes by them the Vnity of the

* *Elaborarent us ad Catholicæ Ecclesiæ unitatē scissis corporis membra componerent & Christiana Charitatis vinculū copularent. Sed quoniam diversa partis obstinata & inflexibilis pertinacia non tantum radicis & Matris sinum atque complexum recusavit, sed etiam gliscente & in pejus recrudescente discordia, Episcopum sibi constituit. &c. S. Cyprian. L. 2. Epist. 10.*

^a *Tot ac tanta Ecclesia Vna est illa ab Apostolis prima ex qua Omnes. Sic omnes primas, & omnes Apostolica, dum unam omnes probant Vnitatem: Tert. de prescript. Her. c. 20. Porro Vnam esse primam Apostolicam, ex qua reliqua. Hanc nulli loco affigit B. Rhenanus Annot. in Argumento. Tertul. de prescript. &c. Nulli loco. Therefore not at Rome. But these words [Hanc nulli loco affigit] delectantur, sayes the Spanish Inquisition upon Rhenanus, printed at Madrid An. 1584.*

the Church Catholike. Fourthly, Because ^{*} Tertullian seemes to mee to agree in the same sense. For saith he these so many and great Churches founded by the Apostles, taken all of them together, are that One Church from the Apostles out of which are All. So all are First, and all Apostolike, while they all allow and prove Vnam Vnitatem,

One Vnity. Nor can any possibly understand this of any Particular Church, but subordinately. As S. Gregory Nazian. sayes the Church of Casarea was ^a Mater, the Mother of almost all Churches: which must needs be understood of some Neighbouring Churches, not of the whole Catholike Church. And where ^b Pamelius speakes of Originall and Mother Churches, he names six, and others, and Rome in the last place. Therefore certainly no Particular Church can bee the Root or Matrix of the Catholike; But she is rooted in her own Vnity, downe from the Apostles, and no where els extra Deum. And this is farther manifest by the Irreligious act of the Emperor Adrian. For he intending to root out the faith of Christ, took this course. Hee Consecrated Simulacrum Iovis, the Image of Iupiter in the very place where Christ suffer'd, and prophaned Bethlehem with the Temple of Adonis. To this end, that the Root as it were, and the foundation of the Church might be taken away, if in those places Idols might bee worshiped, in which Christ himself was born, and suffered. &c. By which it is most evident, That either Ierusalem was the Root of the Catholike Church, if any Particular Church were so. Or rather that Adrian was deceived (as being an Heathen he well might) in that he thought the Vniuersall Church had any particular or Locall Root of its Being. Or that he could destroy it all by laying it wast in any one place whatsoever. And S. Augustine I think

^a *Gregory Naz. says the Church of Casaria was Mater prope omnia Ecclesiarum. Epist. 18.*
^b *Pamel. in Tertul. de prescript. advers. Hares. c. 21. Nu. 129.*

^c *Vt quasi Radix & Fundamentum Ecclesia tolleretur, si in iis locis Idola colerentur in quibus Christus natus est. &c. S. Paulinus Epist. 11. ad Severum.*

is full for this, That the Catholike Church must have a Catholike Root or Matrix too. For* heretels us, That all Heresies whatsoever went out de illâ, out of the Catholike Church. For de illâ there can be out of no other. For all Heresies did not goe out of any one Particular Church. Hee goes on. They were cut off de Vite, from this Catholike Wine still, as unprofitable Branches. Ipsa autem, but this Catholike Church remains in Radice suâ, in its owne Roote, in its owne Wine, in its owne Charity, which must needs bee as ample, and as Catholike as it selfe. Or else, were it any Particular, All Hereticall Branches could not bee cut off from one Root. And Saint Augustine sayes againe, † That the Donatists did not Consider that they were cut off from the Root of the Easterne Churches. Where you see againe, tis still but One Root of many Churches. And that if any man will have a Particular Root of the Catholike Church, hee must have it in the East, not in the West at Rome. And now lastly, besides this out of Saint Cyprian to proove his owne meaning (and sure hee is the best Interpreter of himselfe) and other assisting proofes, tis most evident, that in the prime and principall sense, the Catholike Church, and her Vnity is the Head, Root, or Matrix of Rome, and all other Particular Churches; and not Rome, or any other Particular, the Head, Root, or Matrix of it. For there is a double Root of the Church, as there is of all things else: That is, Radix Essentiae, the Root, Head, or Matrix of its Essence. And this is the prime sense. For Essence and Being is first in all things. And then there is Radix Existentie, the Root of its Existence, and formall Being, which alwayes presupposes Being; And is therefore a sense lesse Principall. Now to apply this, The Catholike or Vniverfall Church is, and

B b b must

* Hereses omnes de illa exierunt tanquam sarmētā vicia de Vite praeclisa. Ipsi autem manent in Radice suâ &c. S. Aug. deymb. ad Carechumen. L. 1. c. 6.

† Pars Donati non considerat se praeclisam esse à Radice Orientalium Ecclesiarum. &c. S. Aug. Ep. 170. prim.

must needs bee the *Root* of *Essence* and *Being* to *Rome*, and all other *Particulars*. And this is the *Principall Root*, *Head*, or *Matrix* that gives *Being*. And *Rome*, but with all other *Particular Churches*, and no more then other *Patriarchall Churches*, was and is *Radix Existentie*, the *Root* of *The Churches Existence*. And this agrees with that knowne and received *Rule in Art* : That *Vniversals* give *Essence* to their *Particulars*, and *Particulars* supply their *Vniversals* with *Existence*. For as *Socrates* and every *Particular man* borrow their *Essence* from the *Species* and *Definition* of a man, which is *Vniversall*, but this *Vniversall Nature* and *Being* of *Man* hath no *actuell Existence* but in *Socrates* and all other *particular men* : so, the *Church of Rome*, and every other *particular Church* in the world, receive their very *Essence* and *Being* of a *Church* from the *Definition* of the *Catholike Vniversall Church of Christ*; But this *Vniversall Nature* and *Being* of the *Church* hath no *actuell Existence* but in *Rome* and all other *Particular Churches*, and *equall Existence* in all her *particulars*. And should all the *Particular Churches* in the world fall away from *Christ*, save only *One* (which *God* forbid) yet the *Nature*, *Essence*, and *Being* of the *Vniversall Church* would both *Exist* and *Subsist* in that one *Particular*. Out of all which to me most cleare it is, That for the *Churches Being*, the *Catholike Church*, and that in *Vnity* (for *Ens* & *Vnum*, *Being*, and *Being one*, are *Convertible*) is *Radix*, the *Root*, *Head*, *Matrix*, *Fountaine*, or *Originall* (call it what you will) of *Rome*, and all other *Particular Churches*. But *Rome* no more then other *Churches*, the *Root*, or *Matrix* of the *Catholike Churches Existence* or *Place* of her *actuell Residence*. And this I say for her *Existence* only, not the *purity* or *form* of her *Existence*, which is not here considered. But if the *Catholike* she be not, nor the *root* of the *Catholike Church*, yet
Apostolike

Apostolike I hope she is. Indeed *Apostolike* She is, as being the Sea^a of One, and Hee a *Prime Apostile*. But then not *Apostolike*, as the Church is called in the *Creed* from all the *Apostles*, no nor the^b *Onely Apostolike*. *Visible* I may not deny God hath hitherto preserved Her, but for a better end doubtlesse then they turne it to. But *Infallible* She was never: Yet if that Lady did as the *Iesuite* in his clove avows, or others will rest satisfied with it, who can helpe it? Sure none but God. And by *A.C.* leave this (which I said, is no worke for my pen) cannot be learned, no not of the *One, Holy, Catholike, and Apostolike Church*, much lesse of the *Roman*. For though the *Foundation* be one and the same, & sufficiently knowne by *Scripture* and the *Creeds*; Yet for the building upon the *Foundation*, the adding to it; the *Detraeing* from it; the *Ioyning* other things with it; The *grating* upon it: And Each of these may bee

damnable to some, and not to others, according to the *Knowledge, Wisdome, meanes of Information* which some have, and others want: And according to the *ignorance, simplicity, and want of Information*, which some others have, and cannot helpe: And according to the *Negligence, Contempt, Wilfulnesse, and Malice*, with *Obstinacy*, which some have against the *Knowne Truth*; and all or some of these in different degrees in every

Bbb 2

particular

^a Not as *Bellarmine* would have it, with a *Hinc dicitur Apostolica, quia in ea Successio Episcoporum ab Apostolis deducta est usque ad nos*. *Bellar. L. 4. de nutis Eccl. c. 8. §. 1.* For by this Reason neither *Ierusalem*, nor *Antioch* were in their times *Apostolike Churches*; Because Succession of *Bishops* hath not succeeded in them to this day. *De Collegis agebatur qui possent &c. Iudicio Apostolicarum Ecclesiarum causam suam integram reservare. S. Aug. Epist. 162.* Io: de *Turrecrem*: enumerat sex Verbi huius significationes. *Quarum prima est. Apostolica dicitur quia in Apostolis &c. initiata est. Hos enim instituit quasi fundamentum Ecclesie, &c. Io: de Turrecr. L. 1. Summa, c. 18. Et quia Originem sumpsit ab Apostolis &c. ibid: Vbi dicit etiam S. Patres appasse esse hanc Vocem [Apostolicam] in Symbolo suo, supra symbolum Apostolorum, ibid.*

^b *Ecclesie Apostolice, ut Smyrnenorum, & relique ab Apostolis fundate. Tertul. de prescrip: advers. Heret: c. 32. Percurrere Ecclesias Apostolicas &c. Habes Corinthum, Philippos, Thessalonicenses Ephesum, Romanam, ibid. c. 32. Et Pamelius enumerat Hierosolymitanam, Antiochenam, Corinthiam, Philppen em, Ephesinam, Romanam. Pamel. ib. c. 1. Nu. 129.* And it may be observed, that so long agoe *Tertullian*, and so lately *Pamelius* should reckon *Rome* latt, *Quin & alia Ecclesie quae ab his Apostolicae etiam deputantur, ut soboles Ecclesiarum Apostolicarum &c. Tertul. ib. c. 20.*

particular man. And that in the whole *Latitude of mankind*, from the most wise and learned in the Schoole of Christ, to the simplest Idiot that hath beene so happy as to bee initiated into the Faith by *Baptisme*. Now the Church hath not this knowledge of all particulars, *Men, and Conditions*, nor can she apply the *Conditions* to the *Men*. And therefore cannot teach just how farre every man must believe, as it relates to the *possibility, or impossibility* of his salvation in every particular. And that which the Church cannot teach, men cannot learne of her. She can teach the *Foundation*, and men were happy if they would learne it; and the Church more happy would she teach nothing but that as necessary to *Salvation*; for certainly nothing but that is Necessary. Now then whereas after all this, the *Iesuite* tels us, that

F. *Upon this and the precedent Conferences, the Lady rested in judgement fully satisfied (as she told a confident Friend) of the Truth of the Romane Churches faith. Yet upon frailty and feare to offend the King, she yeelded to goe to Church; for which she was after very sorry, as some of her friends can testifie.*

S. 39.
NUM. I.

B. This is all personall. And how that *Honourable Lady* was then settled in Conscience, how in Judgement, I know not. This, I think, is made cleare enough, That that which you said in this and the precedent Conferences could settle neither, unlesse in some that were settled or settling before. As little do I know what she told any confident friend of her approving the *Roman cause*, No more whether it were frailty, or feare, or other Motive that made her yeeld to go to Church, nor how sorry shee was for it, nor who can testifie that

that sorrow. This I am sure of, if shee repent, and God forgive her other sinnes, she will more easily be able to Answer for her comming to Church, then for her leaving of the Church of England, and following the superstitions and errours which the *Romane Church* hath added in Point of Faith, and the Worship of God. For the *Lady* was then living, when I answered thus.

Now whereas I said, the *Lady* would farre more easily be able to answer for her comming to Church, then for her leaving the *Church of England*. To this *A. C.* excepts and sayes, *That I neither prove, nor can prove, that it is lawfull for one (perswaded especially as the Lady was) to goe to the Protestant Church.* There's a great deale of cunning, and as much malice in this passage; but I shall easily pluck the sting out of the Tayle of this *Waspe*. And first I have proved it already through this whole Discourse, and therefore can prove it, That the *Church of England* is an *Orthodoxe Church*. And therefore with the same labour it is proved, that men may lawfully goe unto it, and communicate with it, for so a man not onely may, but ought to doe with an *Orthodoxe Church*. And a *Romanist* may communicate with the *Church of England*, without any Offence in the *Nature of the thing* thereby incurred. But if his *Conscience*, through mis-information, checke at it, he should do well in that Case, rather to informe his *Conscience*, then forsake any *Orthodoxe Church* whatsoever. Secondly, *A. C.* tels me plainly, *That I cannot prove that a man so perswaded as the Lady was, may goe to the Protestant Church; that is, That a Romane Catholike may not goe to the Protestant Church.* Why, I never went about to proove that a *Romane Catholike* being and continuing such, might against his *Conscience*, goe to the *Protestant Church*. For these words (*A man perswaded as the Lady is*) are *A. C.*'s.

NUM. 2.
A. C. p. 73.

words, they are not *mine*. Mine are not simply that the *Lady* might, or that she might not: but Compative they are, *That she might more easily answer to God for comming to, then for going from the Church of England.* And that is every way most true. For in this doubtfull time of hers, when, upon my Reasons given, shee went againe to Church; when yet soone after (as you say at least) shee was sorrie for it. I say, at this time she was in heart and resolution a *Romane Catholike*, or she was not: If she were not, (as it seemes by her doubting shee was not then fully resolved) then my speech is most true, that she might more easily answer God for comming to Service in the *Church of England*, then for leaving it. For a *Protestant* shee had beene, and, for ought I knew, at the end of this Conference, so she was, and then 'twas no sin in it selfe to come to an *Orthodoxe Church*; nor no sinne against her Conscience, she continuing a *Protestant*, for ought which then appeared to mee. But if she then were a *Romane Catholike* (as the *Jesuite* and *A.C.* seeme confident she was) yet my speech is true too. For then she might more easily answer God for comming to the *Church of England*, which is *Orthodoxe*, and leaving the *Church of Rome*, which is *superstitious*, then, by leaving the *Church of England*, communicate with all the *superstitions of Rome*. Now the cunning and the malignity of *A.C.* lies in this, he would faine have the world think that I am so *Indifferent in Religion*, as that I did maintaine, the *Lady*, being conscientiously perswaded of the Truth of the *Romish Doctrine*, might yet, against both her conscience, and against open and avowed profession, come to the *Protestant Church*.

Num. 3.

Nevertheless, in hope his cunning malice would not be discovered, against this (his owne sense, that is, and not mine) he brings diverse Reasons. As *first*,
 'tis

is not lawfull for one affected as that *Lady* was, that is, for one that is resolved of the Truth of the *Romane Church*, to goe to the *Church of England*, there, and in that manner to serve and worship God; *Because* (saith *A.C.*) that were to halt on both sides, to serve two Masters, and to dissemble with God and the world. Truly, I say the same thing with him; And that therefore neither may a *Protestant*, that is resolved in Conscience, that the profession of the true Faith is in the *Church of England*, goe to the *Romish Church*, there, and in that manner to serve and worship God. Neither need I give other Answer, because *A.C.* urges this against his owne fiction, not my assertion. Yet since he will so doe, I shall give a particular Answer to each of them. And to this first Reason of his, I say thus, That to Believe Religion after one sort, and to practise it after another, and that in the maine points of worship, the Sacrament and Invocation, is to halt on both sides, to serve two Masters, and to dissemble with God and the world. And other then this I never taught, nor ever said that which might inferre the Contrary. But *A.C.* give me leave to tell you, your fellow *Iesuite* * *Azorius* affirms this in expresse termes; And what doe you think, can he prove it? Nay, not *Azorius* onely, but other Priests and *Iesuites* here in *England*, either teach some of their *Proselytes*, or els some of them learn it without teaching, That though they be perswaded as this *Lady* was, that is, though they be *Romane Catholikes*, yet either to gaine honour, or save their purse,

A.C. p. 73.

* Quinto queritur, An ubi Catholici una cum Hæreticis versantur, licitum sit Catholico adire Tempia ad qua Hæretici conveniunt, eorum interesse Conventibus, &c. Respondeo: Si rei Naturam spectemus, non est per se malum, sed suâ naturâ indifferens, &c. Et postea. Si Princeps hæresi laboret, & jubeat subditos Catholicos sub pœna Mortis, vel Confiscationis bonorum frequentare templa Hæreticorum, quid tum faciendum? Respondeo: si jubeat tantum, ut omnes Mandato suo obediant, licitum est Catholicis facere: Quia præstant solum Obedientiæ officium. Sin jubeat, ut eo Symbolo simul Religionem Hæreticam profiteantur, parere non debent. Quares iterum, An liceat Catholico obedire, modo publicè assereret se id efficere, solum ut Principi suo obediat, non ut scilicet hæreticam profiteatur? Respondeo: Quidam id licere arbitrantur, ne bona ejus publicentur, vel sua eripiantur. Quod sanè probabiliter dici videtur. *Azorius Instit. Moral. p. 1. l. 8. c. 27. p. 1299. Edit. Paris. 1616.*

they

they may goe to the *Protestant Church*, just as the Iesuite here sayes, *The Lady did out of frailty and feare to offend the King*. Therefore I pray A. C. if this be grosse dissimulation both with God and the world, I speake to your fellowes to leave perswading or practising of it, and leave men in the *profession of Religion* to bee as they seeme, or to seeme and appeare as they are; Let's have no Maske worne here. A. C.^s. *second Reason* why one so perswaded as that Lady was, might not goe to the *Protestant Church*, is, *Because that were outwardly to professe a Religion in Conscience knowne to bee false*. To this I answer, first, that if this Reason be true, it concernes all men, as well as those that be perswaded as the Lady was. For no man may outwardly professe a Religion in conscience knowne to bee false; *For with the heart man believeth to righteousness, and with the mouth hee confesseth to salvation, Rom. 10.* Now to his owne salvation no man can confesse a knowne false Religion. Secondly, if the Religion of the *Protestants* be in conscience a knowne false Religion, then the *Romanists Religion* is so too; for their Religion is the same; Nor do the *Church of Rome* and the *Protestants* set up a different Religion (for the *Christian Religion* is the same to both) but they differ in the same Religion: And the difference is in certaine grosse *corruptions*, to the very endangering of salvation, which each side sayes the other is guilty of. Thirdly, the Reason given is most untrue; for it may appeare by all the former Discourse to any *Indifferent Reader*, that Religion, as it is professed in the *Church of England*, is nearest of any Church now in being to the *Primitive Church*: And therefore not a Religion knowne to be false. And this I both doe and can prove, were not the *deafenesse of the Aspe* upon the eares of seduced Christians in all humane and divided parties whatsoever.

After

A. C. p. 73.

Rom. 10. 10.

Psal. 58. 4.

After these Reasons thus given by him, *A.C.* Num. 4. tells me, That I neither doe nor can prove any superstition or error to be in the *Romane* * Religion. What none at all? Now truly I would to God from my heart this were true, and that the Church of Rome were so happy, and the whole Catholike Church thereby blessed with Truth and Peace. For I am confident such Truth as that would soone either Command Peace, or † confound Peace-Breakers. But is there no Superstition in Adoration of Images? None in Invocation of Saints? None in Adoration of the Sacrament? Is there no error in breaking Christs own Institution of the Sacrament, by giving it but in one kinde? None about Purgatorie? About Common Prayer in an unknowne tongue none? These and many more are in the *Romane Religion*, (if you will needs call it so.) And 'tis no hard worke to prove every of these to be Error, or Superstition, or both. But if *A.C.* think so meanely of me, that though this be no hard worke in it selfe, yet that I (such is my weakenesse) cannot prove it, I shall leave him to enjoy that opinion of me, or what ever else he shall be pleased to entertaine, and am farre better content with this his opinion of my weakenesse, then with that which followes of my pride; for he adds, That I cannot prove any Error or Superstition to be in the *Romane Religion*, but by presuming, with intolerable pride, to make my selfe or some of my fellowes to be Iudge of Controversies, and by taking Authority to censure all to be Superstition and Error too, which sutes not with my fancy, although it be generally held, or practised by the Univerfall Church. Which (saith he) in *S. Augustine's* judgement is

A.C. p. 73

* I would *A.C.* would call it the *Romane Perswasion*, as some understanding *Romanists* do.

† For though I spare their Names, yet can I not agree in Iudgement with him that sayes in Print: God be praised for the disagreement in Religion. Nor in Devotion with him that prayed in the Pulpit: That God would teare the Rent of Religion Wider. But of *S. Greg. Naz.* Opinion I am. Οὐτε εἰς τὸ δοξάζειν, &c. Non studemus paci in detrimentum veræ Doctrinae — ut facilitatis, & Mansuetudinis famam colligamus. — Et rursum, Pacem colimus legitime pugnantes, &c. Orat. 32.

A.C. p. 73

Ccc

most

most insolent madnesse. What not prove any Superstition, any Errour at Rome, but by Pride, and that Intolerable? Truly I would to God A. C. saw my heart, and all the Pride that lodges therein. But wherein doth this Pride appeare, that he censures me so deeply? Why first in this, That I cannot prove any Errour or Superstition to be in the Romane Religion, unlesse I make my selfe or some of my fellowes Iudge of Controversies. Indeed if I tooke this upon me, I were guilty of great Pride. But A. C. knowes well, that before in this Conference, which he undertakes to Answer, I am so farre from making my selfe or any of my fellowes Iudge of Controversies, that ^a I absolutely make a lawfull and free Generall Councell Iudge of Controversies, by, and according to th^e Scriptures. And this I learned from ^b S. Augustine, with this, That ever the Scripture is to have the prerogative above the Councell. Nay, A. C. should remember here, that ^c he himselfe taxes me for giving too much power to a Generall Councell, and binding men to a strict Obedience to it, even in Case of Errour. And therefore sure most innocent I am of the intolerable pride, which he is pleased to charge upon me; and he, of all men, most unfit to charge it. Secondly, A. C. will have my pride appeare in this, that I take Authority to censure all for Errour and Superstition, which sures not with my own fancy. But how can this possibly be, since I submit my judgement in all humility to the Scripture interpreted by the Primitive Church, and upon new and necessary doubts, to the judgement of a lawfull and free Generall Councell? And this I do from my very heart, and do abhorre, in matters of Religion, that my own, or any private mans fancy should take any place, and least of all against things generally held or practised by the Univerfall Church, which, to oppose in such things, is certainly (as ^d S. Augustine calls it, *Insolentissima insania*, an Attempt of
most

^a S. 33.

S. 26. Nu. 1.

& 11.

^b Preponitur

Scriptura, &c.

S. Aug. L. 2. de

Bapt. cont. Do-

nat. c. 3.

^c S. 32 Nu. 5.

A. C. p. 63.

A. C. p. 73.

S. Aug. Epist.

18. c. 5.

most insolent madnesse. But those things which the Church of England charges upon the *Romane Party* to be superstitious and erroneous, are not held or practised, in, or by the *universall Church* generally, either for time or place. And now I would have *A. C.* consider how justly all this may be turned upon himselfe. For he hath nothing to pretend, that there are not grosse *Superstitions* and *Errors* in the *Romane Perswasion*, unlesse by intolerable pride he will make himselfe and his Party *Iudge of Controversies*, (as in effect he doth, for he will be judged by none but the *Pope*, and a *Councell* of his ordering) or unlesse he will take *Authority* to free from *Superstition* and *Error* whatsoever sures with his fancy, though it be even *Superstition* it selfe, and run crosse to what hath been generally held in the *Catholike Church of Christ*; Yea, though to do so, be, in *S. Augustine's* judgement, most insolent madnesse. And *A. C.* spake in this most properly, when he called it *taking of Authority*; For the *Bishop* and *Church of Rome* have in this particular of *judging Controversies*, indeed taken that *Authority* to themselves, which neither *Christ*, nor his *Church Catholike* did ever give them. Here the Conference ended with this Conclusion.

And as I hope God hath given that *Lady* mercy: so Num. 5:
I heartily pray, that he will be pleased to give all of you
a Light of his Truth, and a Love to it, that you may
no longer be made *Instruments* of the *Pope's* boundlesse
Ambition, and this most unchristian *braine-sick de- S. 33. Num. 6.
vice, That in all *Controversies of the Faith* he is *Infallible*,
and that by way of *Inspiration* and *Prophecie* in the *Conclusion* which he gives: To the due Consideration of
which, and *God's* mercy in *Christ*, I leave you.

To this Conclusion of the Conference between me Num. 6:
and the *Iesuite*, *A. C.* sayes not much: But that which
he doth say, is either the selfe same which he hath

A.C. p. 73.

said already, or els is quite mistaken in the businesse That which he hath said already, is this; That in matters of Faith we are to submit our judgements to such Docters and Pastors, as by Visible Continuall Succession, without change, brought the Faith downe from Christ and his Apostles, to these our dayes, and shall so carrie it to the end of the world. And that this Succession is not found in any other Church differing in Doctrine from the Romane Church. Now to this I have given a full Answer already, and therefore will not trouble the Reader with needlesse and troublesome repetition. Then he brings certaine places of Scripture to prove the Pope's Infallibility. But to all these places I have likewise answered before. And therefore A.C. needed not to repeat them againe, as if they had been unanswerable.

S. 57. Num. 3, 4.

S. 25. Num. 5.

Num. 7.

One Place of Scripture onely A.C. had not urged before, either for prooffe of this Continued Visible Succession, or for the Pope's Infallibility. Nor doth A.C. distinctly set down by which of the

A.C. p. 73.

c Ephes. 4. 11.

d Pontificatus Summus discretè positus est ab Apostolo in illis verbis Eph. 4. 11. & in illis clarioribus, 1. Cor. 12. 28. Ipse posuit in Ecclesia primum Apostolos, &c. Bellar. L. 1. de Ro. Pont. c. 1. §. Respondeo Pontificatum. And he gives an excellent reason for it. Siquidem summa potestas Ecclesiastica non solum data est Petro, sed etiam aliis Apostolis. Ibid. So belike by this Reason the Apostle doth clearly expresse the Popedom, because all the rest of the Apostles had as much Ecclesiasticall Power, as S. Peter had. But then Bellarmine would save it up with this, That this Power is given Petro, ut Ordinario Pastori, cui succederetur, aliis verò tanquam Delegatis, quibus non succederetur. Ibid. but this is naere Begging of the Question, and will never be granted unto him. And in the meane time, we have his absolute Confession for the other, That the Supreme Ecclesiasticall Power was not in S. Peter alone, but in all the Apostles.

two hee will prove it. The Place is c Ephes. 4. Christ ascending gave some to be Apostles, some Prophets, some Evangelists, some Pastors and Teachers, &c. for the edification of the Church. Now if he do mean to prove the Pope's Infallibility by this place, in his Pastorall Iudgement. Truly I doe not see how this can possibly be Collected thence. d Christ gave some to be Apostles for the Edification of his Church: Therefore S. Peter, and all his Successours are infallible in their Pastorall Iudgement. And if he meane to prove the Continued Visible Succession, which, he saith,

Faith, is to be found in no Church but the *Romane*, there's a little more shew, but to no more purpose. A little more shew : Because it is added † verse 13. That the Apostles, and Prophets &c. shall continue at their worke (and that must needs be by succession) till we all meet in Vnity and perfection of Christ. But to no more purpose. For tis not said that they, or their Successors should Continue at this their worke in a Personall, uninterrupted Succession in any one Particular Church, *Romane* or other. Nor ever will A. C. be able to proove that such a Succession is necessary in any one particular place. And if he could, yet his owne words tell us, the Personall Succession is nothing, if the Faith be not brought downe without change from Christ and his Apostles to this day, and so to the end of the world. Now here's a peece of cunning too, The Faith brought down unchanged. For if A. C. meane by the Faith, the Creed, and that in Letter, 'tis true, the Church of Rome hath received and brought downe the Faith unchanged from Christ and his Apostles to these our dayes. But then tis apparently false, That no Church differing from the *Romane* in Doctrine hath kept that Faith unchanged, and that by a visible and continued Succession. For the *Greek Church* differs from the *Romane* in Doctrine, and yet hath so kept that Faith unchanged. But if he meane by the Faith unchanged, and yet brought down in a continuall visible Succession, not only the Creed in Letter, but in Sense too : And not that only, but all the Doctrinall Points about the Faith, which have beene Determined in all such Councils as the present Church of Rome allowes : (* as most certainly he doth so meane, and 'tis the Controversie betweene us :) then 'tis most certaine, and most apparent to any understanding man that reads Antiquity with an impartiall eye, that a Visible Continuall Succession of Doctors and Pastors have not brought

† Eph. 4. 13.

A. C. p. 73.

* And so also
Bellarm. *Sexta*
nota est Conspi-
ratio in Doctri-
na cum Ecclesiâ
Antiquâ. L. 4. de
Notis Eccle. c. 9.
S. I.

downe the Faith in this sence from Christ, and his Apostles to these dayes of ours in the *Romane Church*. And that I may not bee thought to say, and not to prove, I give Instance. And with this, that if A.C. or any Iesuite can prove, That by a *Visible Continued Succession* from Christ and his Apostles to this day, either *Transubstantiation in the Eucharist*. Or the *Eucharist in one kinde*. Or *Purgatory*. Or *worship of Images*. Or the *Intention of the Priest of Necessity in Baptisme*. Or the *Power of the Pope over a Generall Councill*. Or his *Infallibility with, or without it*. Or his *power to Depose Princes*. Or the *Publike Prayers of the Church in an unknowne tongue*; with divers other Points have beene so taught, I, for my part, will give the Cause. Beside, for *Succession* in the generall I shall say this. 'Tis a great happinesse where it may be had *Visible and Continued*, and a great Conquest over the Mutability of this present world. But I do not finde any one of the *Ancient Fathers* that makes *Locall*, *Personall*, *Visible*, and *Continued Succession*, a *Necessary Signe or Mark* of the true Church in any one

place. And where *Vincentius* ^a*Lirinensis* calls for *Antiquity*, *Universality*, and *Consent*, as great Notes of Truth, hee hath not one word of *Succession*. And for that great Place in ^{*}*Irenæus*, where that *Ancient Father* reckons the *Succession* of the *Bishops of Rome* to *Eleutherius* (who sate in his time) and saith, That this is a most full and ample Proofoe, or *Ostension*, *Vivificatricem Fidem*, that the *Living and Life-giving Faith* is from the *Apostles* to this day *Conserved* and *delivered in Truth*; And of which Place [†]*Bellarmino* boasts so much;

Most manifest it is in the very same Place, that ^{*}*Irenæus*

^a Vin. Lir. cont. Her. c. 4.

^{*} Hæc Ordinatione & Successione ea quæ est ab Apostolis in Ecclesiâ Traditio, & veritatis præconatio pervenit usque ad nos. Et est plenissima hæc Ostensio, Vnam & eandem Vivificatricem fidem esse, quæ in Ecclesiâ ab Apostolis usque nunc sit conservata, & tradita in veritate. Iren. L. 3. Advers. Her. c. 3.

[†] Per hanc Successionem confundit omnes Hæreticos. Bellarmin. L. 4. de Notis Eccles. c. 8. §. 1. There's no such word found in *Irenæus*.

*Ireneus stood as much upon the Succession of the Churches then in Asia, and of Smyrna (though that no prime Apostolicall Church) where Polycarpus late Bishop, as of the Succession at Rome. By which it is most manifest, that it is not Personall Succession only, and that tyed to one Place, that the Fathers meant, but they taught, that the Faith was delivered

over by Succession in some places or other still to their present time; And so doubtlesse shall be, till Time be no more. I say, The Faith; But not every Opinion, true, or false, that in tract of time shall cleave to the Faith. And to the Faith it selfe, and all its Fundamentals, we can shew as good, and full a Succession as you; And we pretend no otherwise to it then you do, save that We take in the Greeks, which you do not. Only we reject your grosse superstitions, to which you can shew no Succession from the Apostles, either at Rome or elsewhere, much less any one uninterrupted. And therefore he might have held his peace that says, It is evident that the Roman Catholike Church only hath had a Constant and uninterrupted Succession of Pastors, and Doctors, and Tradition of Doctrine from Age to Age. For most evident it is, That the Tradition of Doctrine hath received both Addition and Alteration, since the first five hundred yeares in which † Bellarmine confesses, and B. Jewell maintains the Churches Doctrine was Apostolicall.

And once more, before I leave this Point. Most evident it is, That the Succession which the Fathers meant, is not tyed to Place or Person, but 'tis tyed to the Verity of Doctrine. For so ^a Tertullian expressly.

* Testimonium his perhibent quæ sunt in Asia Ecclesia Omnes, & qui usque adhuc Successerunt Polycarpo Iren. L. 3. advers. Here c. 3. Constat omnem Doctrinam quæ cum illis Ecclesiis & Apostolicis, Matrici i bus, Originalibus Fidei conspiret, Veritatem deputandam. Tertul. de præscript. advers. Hæret. c. 21. Ecclesia posteriores non minus Apostolica deputantur pro consanguinitate Doctrinae. Ibid. c. 32. Ecclesia non in Parietibus consistit &c. Ecclesia anticum illic erat, ubi fides vera erat, S. Hieron. in 1^a sal. 133.

† Antiqua Ecclesia primis quingentis Annis vera Ecclesia fuit, & proinde Apostolicam Doctrinam retinuit. Bel. L. 4. de Notis Eccles. c. 9 §. 1.

NUM. 8.

^a Adhanc formam provocabuntur ab illis Ecclesiis, quæ licet nullum ex Apostolis, vel Apostolicis Authorem suum proferunt, ut multo posteriores quæ denique quotidie instituantur, tamen in eadem fide conspirantes non minus Apostolicæ deputantur pro consanguinitate Doctrinæ. Tertul. de præscript. c. 32.

Beside

Beside the order of *Bishops running downe* (in Succession) from the beginning, there is required *Consanguinitas Doctrinæ*, that the *Doctrinæ* be allyed in blood to that of *Christ* and his *Apostles*. So that if the *Doctrinæ* bee no kinne to *Christ*, all the *Succession* become *strangers*, what nearnesse soever they pre. end. And

* *Illis Presbyteris obediendum est, qui cum Episcopatus Successione Charisma acceperunt Veritatis.* Iren. Lib. 4. cap. 43.

^a *Succesio nec Locorum tantum est, nec personarum, sed etiam veræ & sanæ Doctrinæ.* Stapl. Relect. Controver. 1. q. 4. A.
2. Notab. 1.

* *Irenæus* speaks plainer then he. We are to obey those *Presbyters*, which together with the *Succession* of their *Bishopricks* have received *Charisma Veritatis*, the gift of truth. Now *Stapleton* being prest hard with these two *Authorities* : first, ^a *Confesses* expressly,

That *Succession*, as it is a *Note* of the true Church, is neither a *Succession* in place only, nor of *Persons* only, but it must be of true and sound *Doctrinæ* also. And had hee stayed here, no man could have said better, But then he saw well he must quit his great *Note* of the Church-*Succession*; That he durst not doe. Therefore he begins to cast about, how hee may answer these *Fathers*, and yet maintaine *Succession*. Secondly, therefore he tels us, That that which these *Fathers* say, do nothing weaken *Succession*, but that it shall still be a maine *Note* of the true Church; and in that sense which he would have it. And his Reason is. ^b *Because sound Doctrinæ is indivisible from true and Lawfull Succession.* Where you shall see this great *Clarke* (for so hee was) not able to stand to himselfe, when he hath forsaken *Truth*. For 'tis not long after, that he tels us, That the *People* are led along, and judge the *Doctrinæ* by the *Pastors*; But when the Church comes to examine, she judges the *Pastors* by their *Doctrinæ*. And this ^c he sayes is necessary, *Because a Man may become of a Pastor, a Wolfe.* Now then let *Stapleton* take his choise. For either a *Pastor* in this *Succession* cannot become a *Wolfe*, and then this Proposition is false,

^b *Quia Doctrina Sana est ab ipsa verâ & legitimâ Successione indivulsa.* Stapl. Ibid.

^c *Nam è Pastore Lupus fieri potest.* Stapl. ibid. Notab. 4.

false; Or els if he can, then *sound Doctrine* is not inseparable from true and *Legitimate Succession*: And then the former Proposition's false, as indeed it is. For that a good *Pastour* may become a *Wolfe*, is no newes in the Ancient Story of the Church, in which are registered the Change of many ^a *Great men* into *Heretick*, I spare their *Names*; And since *Iudas* chang'd from an *Apostle* to a *Divell*, *S. Ioh. 6.* 'tis no wonder to see others change from *Shepheards* into *Wolves*. I doubt the Church is not empty of such *Changelings* at this day. Yea but *Stapleton* will helpe all this. For he adds, *That suppose the Pastors do forsake true Doctrine, yet Succession shall still be a true Note of the Church; Yet not every Succession, but that which is Legitimate and true.* Well: And what is that? Why, ^b *That Succession is lawfull which is of those Pastors, which hold entire the Unity and the Faith.* Where you may see this *Samson's haire* cut off againe. For at his word I'll take him. And if that onely be a *Legitimate Succession* which holds the *Unity* and the *Faith* entire, then the Succession of Pastors in the *Romane Church* is illegitimate; For they have had ^c more *Schismes* among them then any other Church: Therefore they have not kept the *unity* of the Church. And they have brought in grosse *Superstition*: Therefore they have not kept the *Faith* entire. Now if *A. C.* have any minde to it, he may do well to helpe *Stapleton* out of these bryars, upon which he hath torne his *Credit*, and I doubt his *Conscience* too, to uphold the *Corruptions* of the *Sea of Rome*.

^a Vincent. Lit. cont. Har. c. 23. 24.

^{S. Ioh. 6. 70.}

^b *Legitima autem est illorum Pastorum, qui Unitatem tenent & Fidem. Stap. ibid. Notab. 5.*

^c In their owne Chronologer O-nuphrus there are Thirty acknowledged.

As for that in which he is quite mistaken, it is his *Inference*, which is this. *That I should therefore consider carefully, Whether it be not more Christian, and lesse brainedicke, to think that the Pope, being S. Peter's Successour, with a Generall Councell should be Iudge of Controversies, &c. And that the Pastorall Iudgement of him should be accounted*

NUM. 9.

Ddd

Infallible,

Infallible, rather then to make every man that can read the Scripture, Interpreter of Scripture, Decider of Controversies, Controller of Generall Councils, and Judge of his Judges: Or to have no Judge at all of Controversies of Faith, but permit every man to believe as he list. As if there were no Infallible certainty of Faith to be expected on earth, which were, instead of one saving Faith, to induce a Babilonick Confusion of so many faiths, as fancies; Or no true Christian Faith at all. From which Evils, Sweet Jesus deliver us! I have Considered of this very carefully; But this Inference supposes that which I never granted, nor any Protestant that I yet know; Namely, That if I deny the Pope to be Judge of Controversies, I must by and by either leave this supreme Judicature in the hands and power of every private man that can but read the Scripture; or els allow no Judge at all, and so let in all manner of Confusion. No, God forbid I should grant either: For I have expressly * declared, That the Scripture interpreted by the Primitive Church, and a Lawfull and free Generall Council determining according to these, is Judge of Controversies: And that no private man whatsoever, is, or can be Judge of these. Therefore A. C. is quite mistaken (and I pray God it be not wilfully, to beguile poore Ladies, and other their weake adherents, with seeming to say somewhat) I say, quite mistaken, to inferre, that I am either for a private Judge, or for no Judge; for I utterly disclaime both, and that as much, if not more then he, or any Romanist, who ever he be. But these things in this passage I cannot swallow. First, That the Pope with a Generall Council should be Judge; for the Pope in ancient Councils never had more power then any the other Patriarchs: Precedency, perhaps for Orders sake, and other respects, he had. Nor had the Pope any Negative voice against the rest in point of difference. † No nor was he held superiour

* S. 26. Nu. 1.

† Parum & Avorum nostrorum tempore, pauci audebant dicere, Papam esse supra Concilium. Aeneas Sylvius, seu Pius 2. L. 1. de Gestis Concil. Basl. Et illud imprimis cupio notū, quia Romanum Papam, omnes qui aliquo numero sunt. Concilio subiciunt. Ibid. in fistic. rerum Expetend. fol. 5. Nunc autem, Papam esse non solum supra Concilium Generale, sed & Universam Ecclesiam, est propositio fere de Fide. Bellar. L. 2. de Concil. c. 17. S. 1.

superiour to the *Councell*. Therefore the *ancient Church* never accounted or admitted him a *Judge*; no, not with a *Councell*, much lesse without it. Secondly, it will not downe with me, that his *Pastorall Iudgement* should be *Infal-
lible*; especially since some of them have been as **Ignorant*, as many that can but read the *Scripture*. Thirdly, I cannot admit this neither (though hee doe most cunningly thereby abuse his *Readers*:) That any thing hath been said by me, out of which it can justly be inferred, *That there's no Infal-
lible certainty of Faith to bee expected on earth*. For there is most *Infal-
lible certainty* of it, that is, of the *Foundations* of it in *Scripture* and the *Creeds*. And 'tis so clearly delivered there, as that it needs no *Judge* at all to sit upon it, for the *Ar-
ticles* themselves. And so entire a *Body* is this *one Faith* in it selfe, as that the † *Whole Church* (much lesse the *Pope*) hath not power to adde one *Article* to it, nor leave to detract any one the least from it. But when *Controversies* arise about the mean-
ing of the *Articles*, or *Superstructures* upon them, which are *Doctrines* about the *Faith*, not the *Faith* it selfe (unlesse where they be immediate Consequences) then both in and of these a *Lawfull and free Generall Councell*, determining according to *Scripture*, is the best *Judge* on

* Quum hoc tempore nullus sit Romæ (ut fama est) qui sacras Literas didicerit, quâ fronte aliquis eorum docere audebit, quod non didicerit? Arnulph. in Concil. Rhe-
mensi. Nam cum constet plures eorum aded illiteratos esse, ut Grammaticam pe-
nitius ignorarent, qui sit ut Sacras Lite-
ras interpretari possint? Alphonf. à Ca-
sttro. L. 1. advers. Hæres. c. 4. versus medi-
um. Edit. Paris, 1534. (For both that at
Antwerpe, An. 1556. and that at Pa-
ris, An. 1571. have bene in Purgato-
rie.) And such an Ignorant as these was
Pope Iohn the seure and twentieth. Pla-
na in Vitaejus. Et § 33. Nu. 6.

† Resolutio Occham est, Quod nec tota
Ecclesia, nec Concilium Generale, nec
Summus Pontifex potest facere Artic-
ulum, quod non fuit Articulus. Sed Eccle-
sia bene determinat de Propositionibus Ca-
tholicis, de quibus erat dubium, &c. Ia.
Almain. in 3. Sent. D. 25. q. unica. Dub.
3. Sicut ad ea qua spectant ad Fidem
nostram, & nequaquam ex voluntate hu-
mana dependent, non potest Summus Pon-
tifex, nec Ecclesia de Assertionem non verâ,
veram: nec de non falsâ falsam facere:
itâ non potest de non Catholica Catholi-
cam facere, nec de non Hæreticâ Hæreti-
cam. Et ideo non potest novum Artic-
ulum facere, nec Articulum Fidei tollere.
Quoniam sicut Veritates Catholice abs-
que omni approbatione Ecclesie ex natu-
rei sunt immutabiles, & immutabiliter
verae, itâ sunt immutabiliter Catholice
reputandæ. Similiter sicut Hæreses abs-
que omni reprobatione, & damnatione sunt
falsæ, itâ absque omni reprobatione sunt
Hæreses reputandæ, &c. Et postea. Pe-
tes ergo quod nulla Veritas est Catholica
ex approbatione Ecclesie vel Papæ. Gab.
Biel. in 3. Sent. Dist. 25. q. unica. Art.
3. Dub. 2. versus finem.

² §. 26. Nu. 1.

D d d 2

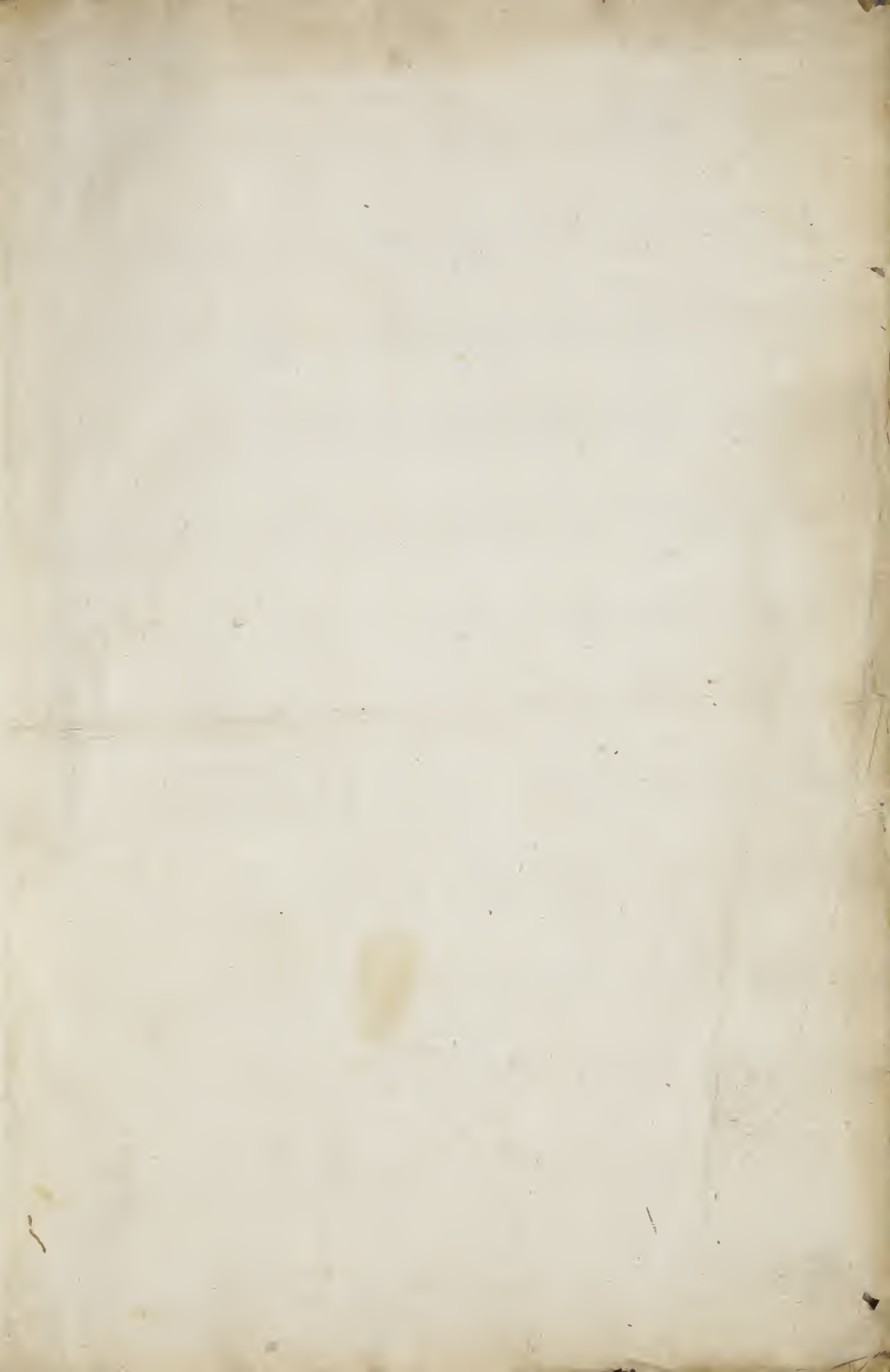
earth.

Psal. 90. 10.

Psal. 85. 10.

earth. But then suppose uncertainty in some of these *superstructures*, it can never be thence concluded, That there is no *Infallible certainty* of the *Faith* it selfe. But 'tis time to end, especially for me, that have so Many Things of Weight lying upon me, and disabling me from these *Polemick Discourses*; beside the *Burden* of sixty five yeares complete, which drawes on apace to the period set by the *Prophet David*, *Psal. 90.* and to the Time, that I must goe, and give *God*, and *Christ* an Account of the *Talent* committed to my Charge; In which *God*, for *Christ Iesus* sake, be mercifull to me, who knowes, that however in many Weaknesses, yet I have with a faithfull and single heart (bound to his free *Grace* for it) laboured the Meeting, the Blessed Meeting of *Truth* and *Peace* in his Church, and which *God*, in his own good time, will (I hope) effect. To *Him* be all Honour, and Praise for ever. *Amen.*

FINIS.



Alph 1340300

April 16. 1624. "an answer to the Fisk's
Relation by R. B. Richard Baylie) & ands (Chaplain
first read by Sand. (Conference held 1622. See Page. A. 3. v. 10)

1st Edition. Feby. 1639. - (of the amended form)

Feby. 10. 1639 appears in Bishop's Sands
Diary "My book against Fisk's the
result was printed, and this day -
being Sunday, I delivered a copy
to His Majesty."

Reprinted 1673 - 1686 - 1839.

"CC" are the initials under which
Fisk replied to Fisk's printed
account of the Conference.

Feb. 27. 1639. Chas. issued
^{first} declaration of war against
his northern subjects.

